000866

# ENGELS

# DIALECTICS
# OF NATURE

TATTVA PRACHAR CENTRE
BANGALORE

I
P.T & P.G
61
866

FOREIGN LANGUAGES PUBLISHING HOUSE
MOSCOW 1954

5-5 1=50

000866

TATTVA PRACHAR CENTRE
BANGALORE

GANDHI SMARAKA GRANTHALAYA
DATE....................
ACC. No....................
CALL No....................
BANGALORE-1.

WORKS OF GANDHIJI IN KANNADA
OFFICE LIBRARY
Acc. No. ........805/59........

Date Jan......1959 CHIEF EDITOR.

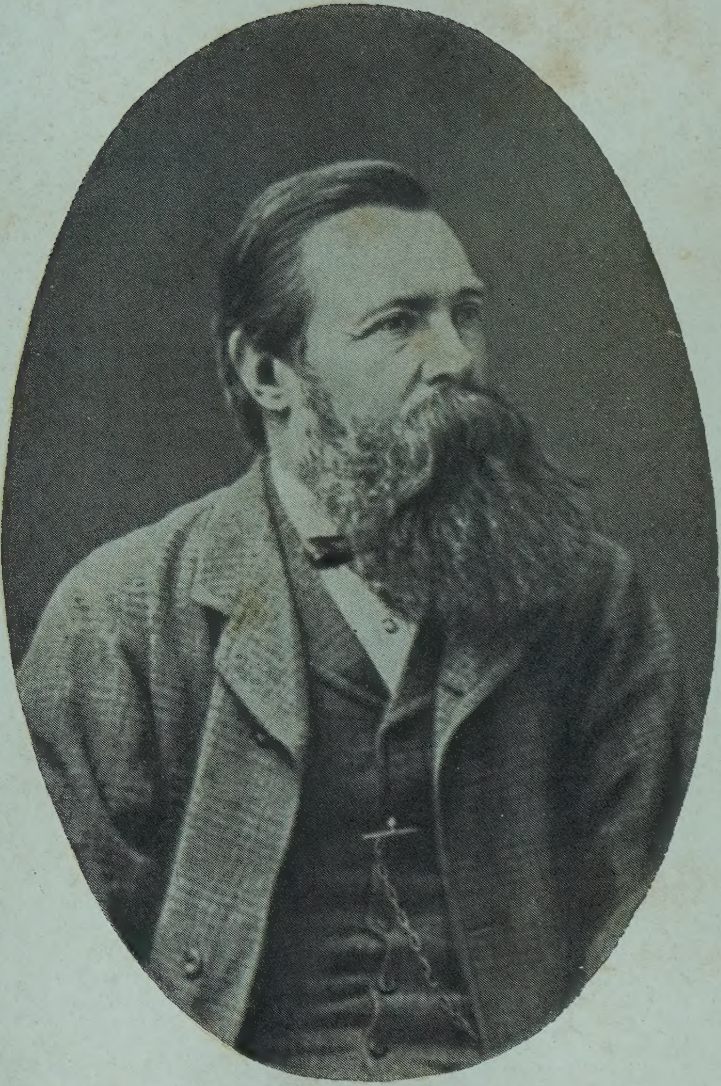
ಕರ್ನಾಟಕ ಗಾಂಧೀ ಸ್ಮಾರಕ ನಿಧಿ (ರಿ)
ಪರಿಗ್ರಹಣ ಸಂಖ್ಯೆ:
ACC. No.: 3489
ಗಾಂಧೀ ಗ್ರಂಥಾಲಯ, ಬೆಂಗಳೂರು-1

PT4PG 61

People's Book House

000866

GANDHI SMARAKA GRANTHALAYA
DATE....................
ACC. NO.............. ..........
CALL NO....................
BANGALORE-1.



F. Engels

WORKERS OF ALL COUNTRIES, UNITE!

000866

# FREDERICK ENGELS

# DIALECTICS OF NATURE

GANDHI SMARAKA GRANTHALAYA
DATE........................
ACC NO...............................
CALL NO.......................
ALCHE-1.

FOREIGN LANGUAGES PUBLISHING HOUSE
Moscow 1954

000866
A
N54

## PUBLISHER'S NOTE

The contents of the present book and their arrangement correspond to the latest Russian edition (1953) prepared by the Marx-Engels-Lenin-Stalin Institute of the Central Committee, C.P.S.U.

The translation was made by Clemens Dutt.

*Printed in the Union of Soviet Socialist Republics*

GANDHI SMARAKA GRAN
DATE........................
ACC. NO........................
CALL NO........................
BANGALORE-1.

# CONTENTS

Page

*Preface* . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 5

## F. ENGELS. DIALECTICS OF NATURE

### [PLAN OUTLINES]

[OUTLINE OF THE GENERAL PLAN] . . . . . . . . 27
[OUTLINE OF PART OF THE PLAN] . . . . . . . . 28

### [ARTICLES]

INTRODUCTION . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 29
OLD PREFACE TO [*ANTI*]-*DÜHRING* . . . . . . . 55
NATURAL SCIENCE IN THE SPIRIT WORLD . . . . 68
DIALECTICS . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 83
BASIC FORMS OF MOTION . . . . . . . . . . . 92
THE MEASURE OF MOTION.—WORK . . . . . . . . 116
TIDAL FRICTION. KANT AND THOMSON—TAIT. Rotation of the Earth and Lunar Attraction . . . . . 137
HEAT . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 145
ELECTRICITY . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 151
THE PART PLAYED BY LABOUR IN THE TRANSITION FROM APE TO MAN . . . . . . . . . . . . 228

## [NOTES AND FRAGMENTS]

Page

[FROM THE HISTORY OF SCIENCE] . . . . . . . . 247

[NATURAL SCIENCE AND PHILOSOPHY] . . . . . 270

[DIALECTICS] . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 280

- [a) General Questions of Dialectics. The Fundamental Laws of Dialectics] . . . . . . . . . . . . 280
- [b) Dialectical Logic and the Theory of Knowledge. On the "Limits of Knowledge"] . . . . . . . . . 294

[FORMS OF MOTION OF MATTER. CLASSIFICATION OF THE SCIENCES] . . . . . . . . . . . . 322

[MATHEMATICS] . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 340

[MECHANICS AND ASTRONOMY] . . . . . . . . . 361

[PHYSICS] . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 368

[CHEMISTRY] . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 385

[BIOLOGY] . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 387

## NOTES AND INDEXES

NOTES . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 411

CHRONOLOGICAL LIST OF FRAGMENTS AND ARTICLES . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 446

BIBLIOGRAPHY . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 451

NAME INDEX . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 460

SUBJECT INDEX . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 468

# PREFACE

Throughout their lives Marx and Engels paid close attention to the development of natural science, philosophically generalizing its achievements and throwing light on them from the standpoint of dialectical materialism. Questions of theoretical natural science occupy a very prominent place in one of the most important works in Marxist literature, Engels's *Anti-Dühring*, which contains a comprehensive account of the component parts of Marxist theory. Numerous remarks about problems of natural sciences are to be found in a number of other works of Marx and Engels, including Marx's chief work—*Capital*. In the correspondence of Marx and Engels, too, much attention is devoted to questions of natural science. But the most thorough exposition of questions concerning all the chief branches of natural science and mathematics is given in Engels's *Dialectics of Nature*, on which Engels worked in close association with Marx, and which although unfinished is remarkable for its wealth of ideas.

As is evident from the correspondence between Marx and Engels, as early as 1873 Engels made up his mind to write a large work on dialectics in nature. In a letter to Marx dated May 30, 1873, Engels sent him an outline of his ideas about natural science. In this letter he already formulated the three central ideas of his *Dialectics of Nature*: 1) the inseparability of matter and motion (motion as the mode of existence of matter); 2) the qualitatively different forms of motion and the different sciences that investigate them (mechanics—physics—chemistry—biology); 3) the dialectical transition from one form of motion to another and, therefore, from one science to another. The letter ends with the observation that the working out of these ideas "requires much time."

The contents of this letter almost wholly coincide with one of the fragments included in *Dialectics of Nature*, viz., with that headed "Dialectics of Natural Science" (see this volume, pp. 329-30). On the same sheet as this fragment, immediately above it, is the outline of a synopsis for Engels's projected work against Büchner and other representatives of vulgar materialism (see this volume, pp. 270-73). This synopsis, evidently written not long before the fragment "Dialectics of Natural Science," shows that Engels's original plan consisted in showing, in the form of a criticism of vulgar materialism and on the basis of the most recent results of natural science: 1) the contrast between the metaphysical and dialectical modes of thought and 2) the contrast between Hegel's mystical, idealistic dialectics and the "rational dialectics" of philosophical materialism. In doing this Engels particularly stressed in his synopsis that for the natural science of his day "dialectics divested of mysticism becomes an absolute necessity." Thus there is every reason to think that at the beginning of 1873 Engels was intending to write a kind of *Anti-Büchner*, which would analyze questions of the dialectics of natural science and criticize the shortcomings of Büchner's vulgar materialism and his "presumption of applying the theories about nature to society and of reforming socialism."

From the manuscripts left after Engels's death it is evident that he quickly gave up his idea of writing a work against Büchner, but that he continued actively to collect materials on dialectics in natural science and mathematics. He began writing preliminary outlines for his *Dialectics of Nature* and in 1875-76 he had completed an almost final version of the large "Introduction" to this work. Shortly afterwards, however, Engels switched over to another big task—the criticism of Dühring's writings, and for this he utilized also his materials on the dialectics of nature. The interests of the revolutionary proletarian party required the refutation of Dühringism, this new variety of petty-bourgeois utopianism in its most reactionary, specifically Prussian form, which threatened to spread the views of petty-bourgeois socialism within the ranks of German Social-Democracy. After finishing *Anti-Dühring* (June 1878), Engels once more returned to his work on *Dialectics of Nature*, outlined the general plan of this work (see below, p. 27) and wrote several more or less completed chapters and a large number of preliminary notes. On November 23, 1882, he wrote to Marx that he expected shortly to finish his *Dialectics of Nature*. Marx's death (March 14, 1883), however, compelled Engels to suspend this work and, as he mentions in the preface to the second edition of *Anti-Dühring*, to busy himself with "more urgent duties." He writes in this preface: "I am under the obligation to prepare for the press the manuscripts which Marx has left, and this is much more important than anything else." Moreover, after Marx's death all the work of guiding the international labour movement devolved on Engels and this also demanded a great deal of his time. As a result of all this, Engels's intended work on the dialectics of nature was never completed and the materials which he had managed to write on the subject were not even put into systematic order. In the preface to the second edition of *Anti-Dühring*, Engels wrote that he had not given up the idea of collecting and publishing at a suitable opportunity the results obtained by him, "perhaps in conjunction with the extremely important mathematical manuscripts left by Marx." But Engels did not succeed in accomplishing this.

After Engels's death (August 5, 1895), *Dialectics of Nature*, along with other manuscripts of Engels's, fell into the hands of the opportunist leaders of German Social-Democracy, who for a number of decades criminally kept this most valuable work hidden away, and have never published it. *Dialectics of Nature* was first published in the U.S.S.R. from photo-copies of the manuscripts. It was published in Moscow in 1925 in German with a parallel translation into Russian, and subsequently republished several times both in the original language and in Russian translation.

* * *

Despite the fact that *Dialectics of Nature* remained unfinished and some of its component parts have the character of preliminary outlines and fragmentary notes, the work forms a connected whole, united by its general basic ideas and its integral harmonious plan.

In *Dialectics of Nature* Engels gives a philosophical generalization of the conclusions of the natural science of his time. Approaching nature as a materialist and dialectician, Engels depicts it as a single, infinite whole, as the "general evolutionary connection," as the historical process of the development of matter. He shows that in nature everything takes place dialectically and that therefore the sole correct method of cognition of nature is that of materialist dialectics.

In the "Introduction" to his work, Engels gives a brilliant sketch of the development of natural science from the epoch of the Renaissance to Darwin, showing how the metaphysical outlook on nature characteristic of the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries was shattered from within by the very development of natural science itself and was compelled to give way to a new, dialectical understanding of nature. Tracing the historical development of the sciences, Engels particularly emphasizes the role of human practice, the role of production, which in the last resort determines both the origin and the course of development of science.

Engels shows that knowledge of the inter-connections of the processes taking place in nature advanced with giant strides especially owing to three great discoveries of natural science in the nineteenth century: the discovery of the animal and plant cell, the discovery of the law of the conservation and transformation of energy and Darwin's theory of the evolution of animal and plant organisms.

Basing himself on all the most important achievements of the natural science of his day, Engels expounds the natural-scientific foundations of the dialectical-materialist outlook on the world. The universe is infinite in space and time. It is in a process of incessant motion and change. The stupendous cycles in which matter moves embrace all the manifold wealth of the forms of motion of matter—from the simplest forms of motion of inorganic matter to the life and thought of conscious beings. Matter and motion are indestructible, not only quantitatively but also qualitatively. Not a single one of the attributes of matter can be lost, and therefore "with the same iron necessity that it will exterminate on the earth its highest creation, the thinking mind, it must somewhere else and at another time again produce it."

These remarkably profound and brilliantly expressed ideas of Engels's are a most sharp weapon in the struggle against the idealist and mystical teachings of the ideologists of dying capitalism, against the latest attempts to resuscitate mediæval obscurantism and disbelief in man's capacity for cognition of the world, against the endeavour to renovate obsolete religion by means of quasi-scientific arguments. In the circumstances of the ever-intensifying crisis of bourgeois natural science and the ever-deepening decay of bourgeois culture, the superiority of the world outlook of dialectical materialism is strikingly evident.

Running through the whole of *Dialectics of Nature* is Engels's teaching on the different forms of motion of matter (mechanical motion or simple displacement; the various forms of physical motion: heat, light, electricity; chemical processes, organic life), on their unity and mutual transformations into one another, and at the same time on the *qualitative* characteristics of each of these forms of motion and on the impossibility of mechanically "reducing" the higher forms of motion to the lower. On the basis of this teaching on the forms of motion of matter, Engels constructs a dialectical-materialist classification of the natural sciences, in which each of the sciences "analyzes a single form of motion, or a series of forms of motion that belong together and pass into one another."

In all branches of science, Engels supported progressive views and theories, putting them in the forefront and developing them further. In particular, he highly esteemed and emphasized the genius of the great Russian scientist D. I. Mendeleyev, the creator of the periodic system of the chemical elements.* At the same time, Engels waged a determined struggle against those conceptions which no longer accorded with the most recent achievements of science and impeded the further progress of research. He exposed the

---

* In his day Engels could not be aware of a number of other remarkable discoveries of great Russian thinkers and scientists. Hence the achievements of even such great scientists as M. V. Lomonosov and N. I. Lobachevsky could not have the place that is their due in *Dialectics of Nature*. Engels did not know, too, of many outstanding technical inventions which were first made in Russia, as, for instance, the invention of the noteworthy Russian thermal engineer I. I. Polzunov, who designed the first universal steam-engine for motive power in industry.—*Ed.*

"supporters of the old" and contrasted it with the new that was most progressive in the science of his day. He threw light on new facts and new natural-scientific theories from the standpoint of the most progressive, most revolutionary theory of dialectical materialism, deeply analyzing their significance and pointing out the further path for the development of science. This enabled him not only to interpret philosophically the contemporary state of natural science but also to see far ahead and anticipate some of the most recent achievements of science.

Thus, for example, in contrast to the majority of the scientists of his time, Engels supported the view of the complexity of the atoms of the chemical elements. "Atoms," he writes, "are in no wise regarded as simple, or in general as the smallest known particles of matter." Engels foresaw with his genius the existence of particles analogous to the mathematical infinitesimals of diminishing degrees. The modern theory of the structure of matter has confirmed Engels's views on the complexity of the atom and its inexhaustible character. Engels's ideas on the significance of radiation as a factor of repulsion and on the role of this radiation in the process of evolution of the universe were far in advance of the views prevailing during his day and have been confirmed by the latest discoveries of astronomy and physics. In such questions as those of the origin of life, of the essence of life, of Darwin's theory of evolution, Engels likewise put forward a number of propositions that anticipated the subsequent development of biological science. Engels highly appreciated Darwin's great achievement in the field of the theory of evolution, but at the same time he criticized Darwin for transferring to biology the pseudo-scientific theory of Malthus.

In disclosing the revolutionizing significance of the progressive theories of his time, Engels waged an implacable fight against pseudo-science. Side by side with progressive theories, the bourgeois natural science of the nineteenth century gave rise to other theories which were in no way progressive but were essentially pseudo-scientific. Among these was the fashionable theory of the so-called "heat death" of the universe. Engels subjected this theory to searching criticism and showed that it was in contradiction to the law of the conservation and transformation of energy, if this law were correctly interpreted. The subsequent development of science confirmed that Engels was right. Engels's theoretical propositions on the indestructibility of motion, not only in a quantitative but also in a qualitative sense, and on the consequent impossibility of a "heat death" of the universe, make it possible to expose the utter untenability also of those attempts to revive the theory of a "heat death" that are being undertaken by reactionary bourgeois scientists at the present time.

Engels examined various problems of mathematics, mechanics, physics, chemistry and biology and in every field he disclosed the dialectical character of the processes of nature and made profound notes of a methodological character. Engels's *method*, the method of dialectical materialism, is the most valuable and most outstanding feature of *Dialectics of Nature*. Some individual passages concerning such sciences as physics, chemistry and biology are, of course, out of date for our time, and cannot but be so since some seven decades of the further development of science have already passed since *Dialectics of Nature* was written. But the fact that some statements in regard to particular questions of individual branches of natural science have become obsolete does not in the slightest affect the essence of Engels's dialectical-materialist outlook or lessen the enormous significance of *Dialectics of Nature* for our time.

Besides the articles and fragments dealing with problems of the various natural sciences and mathematics, *Dialectics of Nature* contains a number of pages devoted to general questions of materialist dialectics. These include the unfinished article on "Dialectics" and 42 fragments grouped together in the present edition in the section "Dialectics." In the preface to the second edition of *Anti-Dühring*, Engels points out that the dialectical outlook on nature "can be arrived at more easily if one approaches the dialectical character of these facts equipped with an understanding of the laws of dialectical thought." Questions of dialectical logic and the theory of knowledge are examined by Engels on the basis of concrete natural-scientific material. If Engels had succeeded in finishing this section of his work, we would have had here a developed exposition of "dialectics as the science of inter-connections, in contrast to metaphysics." However, even in its unfinished form this section contains extremely rich material on the basic questions of dialectics.

Questions of the origin of man and of human society form the transition from the natural sciences to the social sciences. Engels examines these questions in the sketch on "The Part Played by Labour in the Transition from Ape to Man." Here Engels with unsurpassed mastery elucidates the cardinal and decisive role of labour, and of the invention and making of tools, in the development of the physical features of man and in the formation of human society, showing that as the result of a prolonged historical process there developed from the ape a being *qualitatively* distinct from it, viz., man. The theory of Marx and Engels on the origin of man and the emergence of human society radically refutes the reactionary inventions of bourgeois sociologists and the efforts of ideologists of imperialism to substantiate the right of "higher" races to exploit and rule over "lower" races.

Throughout *Dialectics of Nature* Engels indefatigably stresses the great role of advanced philosophical theory, showing that in the absence of an advanced philosophy bourgeois scientists stray from the scientific path and fall prey to clericalism. Engels criticizes here the idealists, agnostics and vulgar materialists, exposing the untenability of the metaphysical method and of crude grovelling empiricism. Engels mercilessly ridicules the gullibility of bourgeois scientists who abandon the ground of science and become victims of the most preposterous superstition and mysticism.

*Dialectics of Nature* was published after the death of V. I. Lenin. It is noteworthy, however, that Lenin expresses in his philosophical works ideas that are a further development of almost all the basic propositions of *Dialectics of Nature*, while some of Lenin's formulations coincide almost word for word with Engels's formulations in *Dialectics of Nature*.

In his brilliant work *Materialism and Empirio-Criticism*, published in 1909, Lenin gives "a materialist generalization of everything important and essential acquired by science, and especially the natural sciences, in the course of a whole historical period, the period from Engels's death to the appearance of Lenin's *Materialism and Empirio-Criticism*."*

Lenin's *Materialism and Empirio-Criticism* is a model of the creative development of Marxism. Quoting Engels's words that "with each epoch-making discovery even in the sphere of natural science" ["not to speak of the history of mankind"] "materialism has to change its form," Lenin writes: "Hence, a revision of the 'form' of Engels's materialism, a revision of his natural-philosophical propositions is not only not 'revisionism,' in the accepted meaning of the term, but, on the contrary, is demanded by Marxism."**

Scientific discoveries such as those of the electron, radio-activity, etc., posed afresh a series of fundamental problems of theoretical physics and constituted a new confirmation of the "sole true philosophy of natural science"—dialectical materialism. Basing himself on these achievements of natural science, Lenin developed further the philosophical teaching of Marxism. All the subsequent achievements of natural science—the theory of the motion of particles at velocities approaching that of light, the theory of the structure of the atom and the atomic nucleus, and of the transformation of one element into another—furnish ever more profound confirmation of the brilliant ideas of Engels and Lenin on motion as the mode of existence of matter, on the material unity of the world, on the uncreatability and indestructibility of matter and motion, on the transformation of one form of moving matter into another.

---

* *History of the C.P.S.U.(B.), Short Course*, Moscow 1952, pp. 163-64.

** V. I. Lenin, *Materialism and Empirio-Criticism*, Moscow 1952, p. 259.

In other works of his, Lenin returns again to questions of natural science. Thus, in his well-known article "On the Significance of Militant Materialism" (March 1922) Lenin emphatically stresses the importance of progressive philosophy for the natural sciences: "Unless it stands on a solid philosophical ground no natural science and no materialism can hold its own in the struggle against the onslaught of bourgeois ideas and the restoration of the bourgeois world outlook. In order to hold his own in this struggle and carry it to a victorious finish, the natural scientist must be a modern materialist, a conscious adherent of the materialism which is represented by Marx, i.e., he must be a dialectical materialist."* These observations of Lenin coincide almost word for word with Engels's statements in *Dialectics of Nature.*

It is noteworthy also that in his *Philosophical Notebooks* Lenin lays great stress on the need to elaborate dialectics as philosophical science and provides a tremendous wealth of ideas for doing so, as if in response to Engels's statements on this subject in *Dialectics of Nature.*

In the work *Dialectical and Historical Materialism,* which generalizes the experience of the struggle of the

---

* V. I. Lenin, *Marx-Engels-Marxism,* Moscow 1953, p. 612.

Communist Party for the theoretical principles of Marxism, J. V. Stalin enriched Marxist-Leninist philosophy with a number of new propositions. In this work J. V. Stalin several times turns to Engels's *Dialectics of Nature*, developing and concretizing Engels's propositions which characterize the principal features of the Marxist dialectical method and of Marxist philosophical materialism. In our day, too, *Dialectics of Nature* is a weapon in the struggle against all forms of idealism and mechanism and for the victory of dialectical materialism.

* * *

Shortly before his death Engels grouped all his material for *Dialectics of Nature* into four folders, to which he gave the following titles: 1) "Dialectics and Natural Science," 2) "The Investigation of Nature and Dialectics," 3) "Dialectics of Nature," and 4) "Mathematics and Natural Science. Miscellaneous." Of these four folders only two (the second and third) were provided by Engels with a list of headings of the material contained in the folder. Thanks to these headings we know exactly which materials Engels included in the second and third folders and the sequence in which they were arranged in the folders. As regards the first and fourth folders, we cannot be certain that the separate sheets they contain are arranged as Engels put them.

An acquaintance with the contents of the four folders shows that Engels included in them not only articles and preliminary sketches written especially for *Dialectics of Nature*, but also some manuscripts which were originally written by him for other works (such are: the "Old Preface to *Anti-Dühring*," two "Notes" to *Anti-Dühring*, "Omitted from Feuerbach," and "The Part Played by Labour in the Transition from Ape to Man").

The present edition of *Dialectics of Nature* includes everything contained in Engels's four folders, except for five pages with fragments of mathematical calculations not accompanied by any written text (from the fourth folder), and the following fragments, which are obviously unconnected with *Dialectics of Nature*: 1) the original outline of the "Introduction" to *Anti-Dühring* (on modern socialism), 2) a fragment about slavery, 3) extracts from Charles Fourier's book *The New World* (these three fragments connected with the preparatory work for *Anti-Dühring* were for some unknown reason put into the first folder of the manuscript for *Dialectics of Nature*), and 4) a small note with a short comment by Engels on Philip Pauli's opposition to the labour theory of value (from the fourth folder).

On this basis *Dialectics of Nature* consists of 10 articles, or chapters, 169 notes and fragments and two plan outlines—in all, 181 component parts.

These component parts are here arranged in conformity with the basic lines of Engels's plan, as indicated in the two plan outlines which are given at the very beginning of the book. One of them—the more detailed, embracing all sections of *Dialectics of Nature*—was written most probably in August 1878 (see Note 1 to p. 27 and Note 5 to p. 28); the other embraces only a part of the whole work and was written approximately in 1880. A demarcation indicated by Engels himself in his grouping of the materials was made between more or less completed articles, or chapters, on the one hand, and rough outlines, notes and fragments, on the other (a large part of the latter are merely preparatory material for further elaboration).

Thus the whole book is divided into two parts: 1) articles, or chapters, and 2) notes and fragments. In each of these two parts the material is arranged according to an identical guiding scheme conforming to Engels's plan.

Engels's plan indicates the following sequence of the parts: a) historical introduction, b) general questions of materialist dialectics, c) classification of the sciences, d) considerations concerning individual branches of natural science, e) transition to social sciences. In the detailed outline of the general plan, written in 1878, Engels noted a further series of points: On "the soul of the plastidule," on freedom of science and of the teaching of science, on Virchow's "cell-state," on the campaign of the German bourgeois Darwinists against socialism. These points of Engels's plan remained unelaborated by him. In general, the points of Engels's plan outline do not fully coincide with the existing material, on which Engels worked both prior to and after compiling the sketch of the general plan—taken as a whole it was a period of full thirteen years (1873-86). The basic lines of the plan and the basic contents of the available material, however, fully coincide. Hence, although a literal fulfilment of the scheme of the plan of 1878 was impossible in all details, the *general lines* of the arrangement of the parts can be fully retained on the basis of the outlines of 1878 and 1880.

Taking as a basis, therefore, the general lines of Engels's plan, we get the following order for the *articles, or chapters*, of *Dialectics of Nature* constituting the first part of the book:

1) Introduction (written in 1875-76);
2) Old Preface to *Anti-Dühring* (May-June, 1878);
3) Natural Science in the Spirit World (middle of 1878);
4) Dialectics (1879);
5) Basic Forms of Motion (1880-81);
6) The Measure of Motion.—Work (1880-81);
7) Tidal Friction (1880-81);
8) Heat (1881-82);
9) Electricity (1882);
10) The Part Played by Labour in the Transition from Ape to Man (1876).

In regard to all these articles, or chapters, the order by subjects almost coincides with the chronological order (except for the article on "The Part Played by Labour," which forms a transition from the natural sciences to the social sciences). The article "Natural Science in the Spirit World" is not mentioned in Engels's outlines of the plan. In all probability Engels originally intended to publish it separately, in some magazine and only subsequently included it in the *Dialectics of Nature.* We put it in the third place among the articles because, like the two preceding articles, it is of a general-methodological character and is fairly closely connected with the "Old Preface to *Anti-Dühring.*"

As regards the *rough drafts, notes and fragments* forming the second part of the book, a comparison of the available material with Engels's plan outlines leads to this material being arranged as follows:

1) From the history of science;
2) Natural science and philosophy;
3) Dialectics:
    a) General questions of dialectics. Basic laws of dialectics;
    b) Dialectical logic and the theory of knowledge. On "the limits of knowledge";
4) Forms of the motion of matter. Classification of the sciences;
5) Mathematics;
6) Mechanics and Astronomy;
7) Physics;
8) Chemistry;
9) Biology.

Comparing these sections of the fragments with the headings of the ten articles of *Dialectics of Nature* given above, it will be seen that the order of arrangement is alike in both cases. The first section of fragments corresponds to the first article of *Dialectics of Nature*. The second section of fragments corresponds to the second and third articles. The third section of fragments corresponds to the fourth article, both bearing the same title ("Dialectics"). The fourth section of fragments corresponds to the fifth article ("Basic Forms of Motion"). The sixth section of fragments corresponds to the sixth and seventh articles. The seventh section of fragments corresponds to the eighth and ninth articles. The tenth article ("The Part Played by Labour. . .") has no counterpart among the fragments. According to Engels's plan, the question of the "differentiation of man owing to labour" was to have been considered at the very end of the book, after consideration of the biological problems.

Within the sections and sub-sections, the fragments are again arranged according to subject. First come fragments analyzing more general questions, and afterwards fragments devoted to more particular questions. In the section "From the history of science," the fragments are arranged in historical sequence: from the birth of the sciences among the ancient peoples to Engels's contemporaries. As far as possible, each section of fragments ends with fragments that serve as a transition to the following section.

* * *

The present translation has been checked afresh from the German edition of 1935 (MEGA), while the text of this edition has been checked and corrected in conformity with the photo-copies of Engels's manuscript.

Since in the present edition the material is arranged not in chronological order but according to subjects, at the end of the book a chronological list is given of those component parts of *Dialectics of Nature* whose time of writing could be more or less accurately established.

*Marx-Engels-Lenin-Stalin Institute*
*of the C.C., C.P.S.U.*

FREDERICK ENGELS

# DIALECTICS
# *of*
# NATURE

# [PLAN OUTLINES]

## [OUTLINE OF THE GENERAL PLAN][1]

(1) Historical introduction: the metaphysical outlook has become impossible in natural science owing to the very development of the latter.

(2) Course of the theoretical development in Germany since Hegel (old preface).[2] The return to dialectics takes place unconsciously, hence contradictorily and slowly.

(3) Dialectics as the science of universal inter-connection. Main laws: transformation of quantity and quality—mutual penetration of polar opposites and transformation into each other when carried to extremes—development through contradiction or negation of the negation—spiral form of development.

(4) The inter-connection of the sciences. Mathematics, mechanics, physics, chemistry, biology. St. Simon (Comte), and Hegel.

(5) Aperçus [reflections, remarks] on the separate sciences and their dialectical content:

1. Mathematics: dialectical aids and expressions.—Mathematical infinite really occurring.
2. Celestial mechanics—now resolved into a *process*.—Mechanics: point of departure was inertia, which is only the negative expression of the indestructibility of motion.

GANDHI SMARAKA GRANTHALAYA
BANGALORE-1

3. Physics—transitions of molecular motions into one another. Clausius and Loschmidt.
4. Chemistry: theories, energy.
5. Biology. Darwinism. Necessity and chance.

(6) The limits of knowledge. Du-Bois-Reymond and Nägeli.—Helmholtz, Kant, Hume.

(7) The mechanical theory. Hæckel.

(8) The plastidule soul[3]—Hæckel and Nägeli.

(9) Science and teaching—Virchow.[4]

(10) The cell state—Virchow.

(11) Darwinian politics and theory of society—Hæckel and Schmidt.[5]—Differentiation of man through *labour*. —Application of economics to natural science. Helmholtz's "*work*" (*Populäre Vorträge*, II).[6]

## [OUTLINE OF PART OF THE PLAN][7]

(1) Motion in general.

(2) Attraction and repulsion. Transference of motion.

(3) [Law of the] conservation of energy applied to this. Repulsion+attraction.—Addition of repulsion=energy.

(4) Gravitation—heavenly bodies—terrestrial mechanics.

(5) Physics. Heat. Electricity.

(6) Chemistry.

(7) Summary.

- (*a*) Before 4: Mathematics. Infinite line. + and — are equal.
- (*b*) In astronomy: performance of work by the tides.

Double calculation in Helmholtz, II, p. 120.[8]
"Forces" in Helmholtz, II, p. 190.[9]

# [ARTICLES]

## INTRODUCTION[10]

Modern research into nature, which alone has achieved a scientific, systematic, all-round development, in contrast to the brilliant natural-philosophical intuitions of antiquity and the extremely important but sporadic discoveries of the Arabs, which for the most part vanished without results—this modern research into nature dates, like all more recent history, from that mighty epoch which we Germans term the Reformation, from the national misfortune that overtook us at that time, and which the French term the Renaissance and the Italians the *Cinquecento*, although it is not fully expressed by any of these names. It is the epoch which had its rise in the latter half of the fifteenth century. Royalty, with the support of the burghers of the towns, broke the power of the feudal nobility and established the great monarchies, based essentially on nationality, within which the modern European nations and modern bourgeois society came to development. And while the burghers and nobles were still fighting one another, the German Peasant War[11] pointed prophetically to future class struggles, by bringing on to the stage not only the peasants in revolt—that was no longer anything new—but behind them the beginnings of the modern proletariat, with the red flag in their hands and the demand for common ownership of goods on their lips. In the manuscripts saved from the fall of Byzantium, in the antique statues dug out of the ruins of Rome, a new world was revealed to the astonished West, that of ancient Greece: the ghosts of the Middle Ages vanished before its shining forms; Italy rose to an undreamt-of flowering of art, which seemed like a reflection of classical antiquity and was never attained again. In Italy, France, and Germany a new literature arose, the first modern literature; shortly afterwards came the classical epochs of English and Spanish literature. The bounds of the old *orbis terrarum* were pierced, only now for the first time was the world really discovered and the basis laid for subsequent world trade and the transition from handicraft to manufacture, which in its turn formed the starting-point for modern large-scale industry. The dictatorship of the Church over men's minds was shattered; it was directly cast off by the majority of the Germanic peoples, who adopted Protestantism, while among the Latins a cheerful spirit of free thought, taken over from the Arabs and nourished by the newly-discovered Greek philosophy, took root more and more and prepared the way for the materialism of the eighteenth century.

It was the greatest progressive revolution that mankind had so far experienced, a time which called for giants and produced giants—giants in power of thought, passion and character, in universality and learning. The men who founded the modern rule of the bourgeoisie had anything but bourgeois limitations. On the contrary, the adventurous character of the time inspired them to a greater or lesser degree. There was hardly any man of importance then living who had not travelled extensively, who did not speak four or five languages, who did not shine in a number of fields. Leonardo da Vinci was not only a great painter but also a great mathematician, mechanician, and engineer, to whom the most diverse branches of physics are indebted for important discoveries. Albrecht Dürer was painter, engraver, sculptor, and architect, and in addition invented a system of fortification embodying many of the ideas that much later were again taken up by Montalembert and the modern German science of fortification. Machiavelli was statesman, historian, poet, and at the same time the first notable military author of modern times. Luther not only cleaned the Augean stable of the Church but also that of the German language; he created modern German prose and composed the text and melody of that triumphal hymn which became the Marseillaise of the sixteenth century. The heroes of that time were not yet in thrall to the division of labour, the restricting effects of which, with its production of one-sidedness, we so often notice in their successors. But what is especially characteristic of them is that they almost all live and pursue their activities in the midst of the contemporary movements, in the practical struggle; they take sides and join in the fight, one by speaking and writing, another with the sword, many with both. Hence the fullness and force of character that makes them complete men. Men of the study are the exception —either persons of second or third rank or cautious philistines who do not want to burn their fingers.

At that time natural science also developed in the midst of the general revolution and was itself thoroughly revolutionary; it had indeed to win in struggle its right of existence. Side by side with the great Italians from whom modern philosophy dates, it provided its martyrs for the stake and the dungeons of the Inquisition. And it is characteristic that Protestants outdid Catholics in persecuting the free investigation of nature. Calvin had Servetus burnt at the stake when the latter was on the point of discovering the circulation of the blood, and indeed he kept him roasting alive during two hours; for the Inquisition at least it sufficed to have Giordano Bruno simply burnt alive.

The revolutionary act by which natural science declared its independence and, as it were, repeated Luther's burning of the Papal Bull was the publication of the immortal work by which Copernicus, though timidly and, so to speak, only from his death-bed, threw down the gauntlet to ecclesiastical authority in the affairs of nature. The emancipation of natural science from theology dates from this, although the fighting out of particular mutual claims has dragged on down to our day and in many minds is still far from completion. Thenceforward, however, the development of the sciences proceeded with giant strides, and, it might be said, gained in force in proportion to the square of the distance (in time) from its point of departure. It was as if the world were to be shown that henceforth, for the highest product of organic matter, the human mind, the law of motion that holds good is the reverse of that for inorganic matter.

The main work in the first period of natural science that now opened lay in mastering the material immediately at hand. In most fields a start had to be made from the very beginning. Antiquity had bequeathed Euclid and the Ptolemaic solar system; the Arabs had left behind the decimal notation, the beginnings of algebra, the modern numerals, and alchemy; the Christian Middle Ages nothing at all. Of necessity, in this situation the most fundamental natural science, the mechanics of terrestrial and heavenly bodies, occupied first place, and alongside of it, as handmaiden to it, the discovery and perfecting of mathematical methods. Great things were achieved here. At the end of the period characterized by Newton and Linnaeus we find these branches of science brought to a certain perfection. The basic features of the most essential mathematical methods were established; analytical geometry by Descartes especially, logarithms by Napier, and the differential and integral calculus by Leibniz and perhaps Newton. The same holds good of the mechanics of rigid bodies, the main laws of which were made clear once for all. Finally in the astronomy of the solar system Kepler discovered the laws of planetary movement and Newton formulated them from the point of view of the general laws of motion of matter. The other branches of natural science were far removed even from this preliminary perfection. Only towards the end of the period did the mechanics of fluid and gaseous bodies receive further treatment.* Physics proper had still not gone beyond its first beginnings, with the exception of optics, the exceptional progress of which was due to the practical needs of astronomy. By the phlogistic theory,[12] chemistry for the first time emancipated itself from alchemy. Geology had not yet gone beyond the embryonic stage of mineralogy; hence palæontology could not yet exist at all. Finally, in the field of biology the essential preoccupation was still with the collection and first sifting of the immense material, not only botanical and zoological but also anatomical and properly physiological. There could as yet be hardly any talk of the comparison of the various forms of life, of the investigation of their geographical distribution and their climatic, etc., conditions of existence. Here only botany and zoology arrived at an approximate completion owing to Linnaeus.

---

* In the margin of the manuscript Engels has noted in pencil: "Torricelli in connection with the control of alpine rivers." —*Ed.*

But what especially characterizes this period is the elaboration of a peculiar general outlook, the central point of which is the view *of the absolute immutability of nature.* In whatever way nature itself might have come into being, once present it remained as it was as long as it continued to exist. The planets and their satellites, once set in motion by the mysterious "first impulse," circled on and on in their predestined ellipses for all eternity, or at any rate until the end of all things. The stars remained for ever fixed and immovable in their places, keeping one another therein by "universal gravitation." The earth had remained the same without alteration from all eternity or, alternatively, from the first day of its creation. The "five continents" of the present day had always existed, and they had always had the same mountains, valleys, and rivers, the same climate, and the same flora and fauna, except in so far as change or transplantation had taken place at the hand of man. The species of plants and animals had been established once for all when they came into existence; like continually produced like, and it was already a good deal for Linnaeus to have conceded that possibly here and there new species could have arisen by crossing. In contrast to the history of mankind, which develops in time, there was ascribed to the history of nature only an unfolding in space. All change, all development in nature, was denied. Natural science, so revolutionary at the outset, suddenly found itself confronted by an out-and-out conservative nature, in which even today everything was as it had been from the beginning and in which—to the end of the world or for all eternity—everything would remain as it had been since the beginning.

High as the natural science of the first half of the eighteenth century stood above Greek antiquity in knowledge and even in the sifting of its material, it stood just as deeply below Greek antiquity in the theoretical mastery of this material, in the general outlook on nature. For the Greek philosophers the world was essentially something that had emerged from chaos, something that had developed, that had come into being. For the natural scientists of the period that we are dealing with it was something ossified, something immutable, and for most of them something that had been created at one stroke. Science was still deeply enmeshed in theology. Everywhere it sought and found the ultimate cause in an impulse from outside that was not to be explained from nature itself. Even if attraction, by Newton pompously baptized as "universal gravitation," was conceived as an essential property of matter, whence comes the unexplained tangential force which first gives rise to the orbits of the planets? How did the innumerable varieties of animals and plants arise? And how, above all, did man arise, since after all it was certain that he was not present from all eternity? To such questions natural science only too frequently answered by making the creator of all things responsible. Copernicus, at the beginning of the period, shows theology the door; Newton closes the period with the postulate of a divine first impulse. The highest general idea to which this natural science attained was that of the purposiveness of the arrangements of nature, the shallow teleology of Wolff, according to which cats were created to eat mice, mice to be eaten by cats, and the whole of nature to testify to the wisdom of the creator. It is to the highest credit of the philosophy of the time that it did not let itself be led astray by the restricted state of contemporary natural knowledge, and that—from Spinoza down to the great French materialists—it insisted on explaining the world from the world itself and left the justification in detail to the natural science of the future.

I include the materialists of the eighteenth century in this period because no natural-scientific material was available to them other than that above described. Kant's epoch-making work remained a secret to them, and Laplace came long after them. We should not forget that this obsolete outlook on nature, although riddled through and through by the progress of science, dominated the entire first half of the nineteenth century, and in substance is even now still taught in all schools.*

---

* How tenaciously even in 1861 this view could be held by a man whose scientific achievements had provided highly important material for abolishing it is shown by the following classic words:

The first breach in this petrified outlook on nature was made not by a natural scientist but by a philosopher. In 1755 appeared Kant's *Allgemeine Naturgeschichte und Theorie des Himmels.* The question of the first impulse was done away with; the earth and the whole solar system appeared as something that had *come into being* in the course of time. If the great majority of the natural scientists had had a little less of the repugnance to thinking that Newton expressed in the warning: Physics, beware of metaphysics!, they would have been compelled from this single brilliant discovery of Kant's to draw conclusions that would have spared them endless deviations and immeasurable amounts of time and labour wasted in false directions. For Kant's discovery contained the point of departure for all further progress. If

---

"All the arrangements of our solar system, so far as we are capable of comprehending them, aim at preservation of what exists and at unchanging continuance. Just as since the most ancient times no animal and no plant on the earth has become more perfect or in any way different, just as we find in all organisms only stages *alongside of* one another and not *following* one another, just as our own race has always remained the same in corporeal respects—so even the greatest diversity in the coexisting heavenly bodies does not justify us in assuming that these forms are merely different stages of development; it is rather that everything created is *equally* perfect in itself." (Mädler, *Populäre Astronomie,* Berlin 1861, 5th edition, p. 316.) [*Note by Engels.*]

In the margin of the manuscript is a note in pencil: "The rigidity of the old outlook on nature provided the basis for the general comprehension of all natural science as a single whole. The French encyclopædists, still purely mechanically—alongside of one another; and then simultaneously St. Simon and German philosophy of nature, perfected by Hegel."—*Ed.*

the earth was something that had come into being, then its present geological, geographical, and climatic state, and its plants and animals likewise, must be something that had come into being; it must have had a history not only of co-existence in space but also of succession in time. If at once further investigations had been resolutely pursued in this direction, natural science would now be considerably further advanced than it is. But what good could come of philosophy? Kant's work remained without immediate results, until many years later Laplace and Herschel expounded its contents and gave them a deeper foundation, thereby gradually bringing the "nebular hypothesis"[13] into favour. Further discoveries finally brought it victory; the most important of these were: the proper motion of the fixed stars, the demonstration of a resistant medium in universal space, the proof furnished by spectral analysis of the chemical identity of the matter of the universe and of the existence of such glowing nebular masses as Kant had postulated.*

It is, however, permissible to doubt whether the majority of natural scientists would so soon have become conscious of the contradiction of a changing earth that bore immutable organisms, had not the dawning conception that nature does not just *exist*, but *comes into being* and *passes away*, derived support from another quarter. Geology arose and pointed out not only the terrestrial strata formed one after another and deposited one upon another, but also the shells and skeletons of extinct animals and the trunks, leaves, and fruits of no longer existing plants contained in these strata. The decision had to be taken to acknowledge that not only the earth as a whole but also its present surface and the plants and animals living on it possessed a history in time. At first the acknowledgement occurred reluctantly enough. Cuvier's theory of the revolutions of the earth was revolutionary in phrase and reactionary in substance. In place of a *single* divine creation, he put a whole series of repeated acts of creation, making the miracle an essential natural agent. Lyell first brought sense into geology by substituting for the sudden revolutions due to the moods of the creator the gradual effects of a slow transformation of the earth.*

---

* In the margin of the manuscript has been added in pencil: "Retardation of rotation by the tides, also from Kant, only now understood."—*Ed.*

Lyell's theory was even more incompatible than any of its predecessors with the assumption of constant organic species. Gradual transformation of the earth's surface and of all conditions of life led directly to gradual transformation of the organisms and their adaptation to the changing environment, to the mutability of species. But tradition is a power not only in the Catholic Church but also in natural science. For years, Lyell himself did not see the contradiction, and his pupils still less. This can only be explained by the division of labour that had meanwhile become dominant in natural science, which more or less restricted each person to his special sphere, there being only a few whom it did not rob of a comprehensive view.

---

* The defect of Lyell's view—at least in its first form—lay in conceiving the forces at work on the earth as constant, both in quality and quantity. The cooling of the earth does not exist for him; the earth does not develop in a definite direction but merely changes in an inconsequent fortuitous manner. [*Note by Engels.*]

Meanwhile physics had made mighty advances, the results of which were summed up almost simultaneously by three different persons in the year 1842,[14] an epoch-making year for this branch of natural investigation. Mayer in Heilbronn and Joule in Manchester demonstrated the transformation of heat into mechanical force and of mechanical force into heat. The determination of the mechanical equivalent of heat put this result beyond question. Simultaneously, by simply working up the separate results of physics already arrived at, Grove[15]—not a natural scientist by profession, but an English lawyer—proved that all so-called physical forces, mechanical force, heat, light, electricity, magnetism, indeed even so-called chemical force, become transformed into one another under definite conditions without any loss of force occurring, and so proved additionally along physical lines Descartes' principle that the quantity of motion present in the world is constant. With that the special physical forces, the as it were immutable "species" of physics, were resolved into variously differentiated forms of the motion of matter, passing into one another according to definite laws. The fortuitousness of the existence of such and such a number of physical forces was abolished from science by the proof of their inter-connections and transitions. Physics, like astronomy before it, had arrived at a result that necessarily pointed to the eternal cycle of matter in motion as the ultimate conclusion.

The wonderfully rapid development of chemistry, since Lavoisier, and especially since Dalton, attacked the old ideas about nature from another aspect. The preparation by inorganic means of compounds that hitherto had been produced only in the living organism proved that the laws of chemistry have the same validity for organic as for inorganic bodies, and to a large extent bridged the gulf between inorganic and organic nature, a gulf that even Kant regarded as for ever impassable.

Finally, in the sphere of biological research also the scientific journeys and expeditions that had been systematically organized since the middle of the previous [i.e., 18th] century, the more thorough exploration of the European colonies in all parts of the world by specialists living there, and further the progress of palæontology, anatomy, and physiology in general, particularly since the systematic use of the microscope and the discovery of the cell, had accumulated so much material that the application of the comparative method became possible and at the same time indispensable.* On the one hand the conditions of life of the various floras and faunas were established by means of comparative physical geography; on the other hand the various organisms were compared with one another according to their homologous organs, and this not only in the adult condition but at all stages of their development. The more deeply and exactly this research was carried on, the more did the rigid system of an immutably fixed organic nature crumble away at its touch. Not only did the separate species of plants and animals become more and more inextricably intermingled, but animals turned up, such as *Amphioxus*[16] and *Lepidosiren*, that made a mockery of all previous classification,* and finally organisms were encountered of which it was not possible to say whether they belonged to the plant or animal kingdom. More and more the gaps in the palæontological record were filled up, compelling even the most reluctant to acknowledge the striking parallelism between the history of the development of the organic world as a whole and that of the individual organism, the Ariadne's thread that was to lead the way out of the labyrinth in which botany and zoology appeared to have become more and more deeply lost. It was characteristic that, almost simultaneously with Kant's attack on the eternity of the solar system, C.F. Wolff in 1759 launched the first attack on the fixity of species and proclaimed the theory of descent. But what in his case was still only a brilliant anticipation took firm shape in the hands of Oken, Lamarck, Baer, and was victoriously carried through by Darwin in 1859, exactly a hundred years later. Almost simultaneously it was established that protoplasm and the cell, which had already been shown to be the ultimate morphological constituents of all organisms, occurred independently existing as the lowest forms of organic life. This not only reduced the gulf between inorganic and organic nature to a minimum but removed one of the most essential difficulties that had previously stood in the way of the theory of descent of organisms. The new outlook on nature was complete in its main features: all rigidity was dissolved, all fixity dissipated, all particularity that had been regarded as eternal became transient, the whole of nature was shown as moving in eternal flux and cyclical course.

---

* In the margin of the manuscript is added in pencil: "Embryology."—*Ed.*

---

* In the margin of the manuscript is added in pencil: "*Ceratodus*.[17] Ditto *Archæopteryx*, etc."—*Ed.*

* * *

Thus we have once again returned to the mode of outlook of the great founders of Greek philosophy, the view that the whole of nature, from the smallest element to the greatest, from grains of sand to suns, from Protista to man, has its existence in eternal coming into being and passing away, in ceaseless flux, in unresting motion and change. Only with the essential difference that what in the case of the Greeks was a brilliant intuition, is in our case the result of strictly scientific research in accordance with experience, and hence also it emerges in a much more definite and clear form. It is true that the empirical proof of this cyclical course is not wholly free from gaps, but these are insignificant in comparison with what has already been firmly established, and with each year they become more and more filled up. And how could the proof in detail be other than one containing gaps when one bears in mind that the most important branches of science—trans-planetary astronomy, chemistry, geology—have a scientific existence of barely a century, and the comparative method in physiology one of barely fifty years, and that the basic form of almost all organic development, the cell, is a discovery not yet forty years old?[18]

* * *

The innumerable suns and solar systems of our island universe, bounded by the outermost stellar rings of the

Milky Way, developed by contraction and cooling from swirling, glowing masses of vapour, the laws of motion of which will perhaps be disclosed after the observations of some centuries have given us an insight into the proper motion of the stars. Obviously, this development did not proceed everywhere at the same rate. Astronomy is more and more being forced to recognize the existence of dark bodies, not merely planetary in nature, hence extinct suns in our stellar system (Mädler); on the other hand (according to Secchi) a part of the vaporous nebular patches belong to our stellar system as suns not yet fully formed, which does not exclude the possibility that other nebulæ are, as Mädler maintains, distant independent island universes, the relative stage of development of which must be determined by the spectroscope.

How a solar system develops from an individual nebular mass has been shown in detail by Laplace in a manner still unsurpassed; subsequent science has more and more confirmed him.

On the separate bodies so formed—suns as well as planets and satellites—the form of motion of matter at first prevailing is that which we call heat. There can be no question of chemical compounds of the elements even at a temperature like that still possessed by the sun; the extent to which heat is transformed into electricity or magnetism under such conditions, continued solar observations will show; it is already as good as proved that the mechanical motion taking place in the sun arises solely from the conflict of heat with gravity.

The smaller the individual bodies, the quicker they cool down, the satellites, asteroids, and meteors first of all, just as our moon has long been extinct. The planets cool more slowly, the central body slowest of all.

With progressive cooling the interplay of the physical forms of motion which become transformed into one another comes more and more to the forefront until finally a point is reached from when on chemical affinity begins to make itself felt, the previously chemically indifferent elements become differentiated chemically one after another, acquire chemical properties, and enter into combination with one another. These compounds change continually with the decreasing temperature, which affects differently not only each element but also each separate compound of the elements, changing also with the consequent passage of part of the gaseous matter first to the liquid and then the solid state, and with the new conditions thus created.

The time when the planet acquires a firm shell and accumulations of water on its surface coincides with that from when on its intrinsic heat diminishes more and more compared with the heat emitted to it from the central body. Its atmosphere becomes the arena of meteorological phenomena in the sense in which we now understand the term; its surface becomes the arena of geological changes in which the deposits resulting from atmospheric precipitation become of ever greater importance compared with the slowly decreasing external effects of the hot fluid interior.

If, finally, the temperature becomes so far equalized that over a considerable portion of the surface at least it no longer exceeds the limits within which protein is capable of life, then, if other chemical pre-conditions are favourable, living protoplasm is formed.

What these pre-conditions are, we do not yet know, which is not to be wondered at since so far not even the chemical formula of protein has been established—we do not even know how many chemically different protein bodies there are—and since it is only about ten years ago that the fact became known that completely structureless protein exercises all the essential functions of life: digestion, excretion, movement, contraction, reaction to stimuli, and reproduction.[19]

Thousands of years may have passed before the conditions arose in which the next advance could take place and this shapeless protein produce the first cell by formation of nucleus and cell membrane. But this first cell also provided the foundation for the morphological development of the whole organic world; the first to develop, as it is permissible to assume from the whole analogy of the palæontological record, were innumerable species of non-cellular and cellular Protista, of which *Eozoon canadense*[20] alone has come down to us, and of which some were gradually differentiated into the first plants and others into the first animals. And from the first animals were developed, essentially by further differentiation, the numerous classes, orders, families, genera, and species of animals; and finally mammals, the form in which the nervous system attains its fullest development; and among these again finally that mammal in which nature attains consciousness of itself—man.

Man, too, arises by differentiation. Not only individually—by development from a single egg-cell to the most complicated organism that nature produces—but also historically. When after thousands of years of struggle the differentiation of hand from foot, and erect gait, were finally established, man became distinct from the ape and the basis was laid for the development of articulate speech and the mighty development of the brain that has since made the gulf between man and the ape an unbridgeable one. The specialization of the hand—this implies the *tool*, and the tool implies specific human activity, the transforming reaction of man on nature, production. Animals in the narrower sense also have tools, but only as limbs of their bodies: the ant, the bee, the beaver; animals also produce, but their productive effect on surrounding nature in relation to the latter amounts to nothing at all. Man alone has succeeded in impressing his stamp on nature, not only by shifting plant and animal species from one place to another, but also by so altering the aspect and climate of his dwelling-place, and even the plants and animals themselves, that the consequences of his activity can disappear only with the general extinction of the terrestrial globe. And he has accomplished this primarily and essentially by means of *the hand*. Even the steam-engine, so far his most powerful tool for the transformation of nature, depends, because it is a tool, in the last resort on the hand. But step by step with the development of the hand went that of the brain; first of all came consciousness of the conditions for separate practically useful actions, and later, among the more favoured peoples and arising from that consciousness, insight into the natural laws governing them. And with the rapidly growing knowledge of the laws of nature the means for reacting on nature also grew; the hand alone would never have achieved the steam-engine if, along with and parallel to the hand, and partly owing to it, the brain of man had not correspondingly developed.

With man we enter *history*. Animals also have a history, that of their descent and gradual evolution to their present position. This history, however, is made for them, and in so far as they themselves take part in it, this occurs without their knowledge and desire. On the other hand, the more that human beings become removed from animals in the narrower sense of the word, the more they make their history themselves, consciously, the less becomes the influence of unforeseen effects and uncontrolled forces on this history, and the more accurately does the historical result correspond to the aim laid down in advance. If, however, we apply this measure to human history, to that of even the most developed peoples of the present day, we find that there still exists here a colossal disproportion between the proposed aims and the results arrived at, that unforeseen effects predominate, and that the uncontrolled forces are far more powerful than those set into motion according to plan. And this cannot be otherwise as long as the most essential historical activity of men, the one which has raised them from the animal to the human state and which forms the material foundation of all their other activities, namely the production of their requirements of life, i.e., in our day social production, is above all subject to the interplay of unintended effects from uncontrolled forces and achieves its desired end only by way of exception, but much more frequently the exact opposite. In the most advanced industrial countries we have subdued the forces of nature and pressed them into the service of mankind; we have thereby infinitely multiplied production, so that a child now produces more than a hundred adults previously did. And what is the result? Increasing overwork and increasing misery of the masses, and every ten years a great collapse. Darwin did not know what a bitter satire he wrote on mankind, and especially on his countrymen, when he showed that free competition, the struggle for existence, which the economists celebrate as the highest historical achievement, is the normal state of the *animal kingdom.* Only conscious organization of social production, in which production and distribution are carried on in a planned way, can lift mankind above the rest of the animal world as regards the social aspect, in the same way that production in general has done this for mankind in the specifically biological aspect. Historical evolution makes such an organization daily more indispensable, but also with every day more possible. From it will date a new epoch of history, in which mankind itself, and with mankind all branches of its activity, and particularly natural science, will experience an advance that will put everything preceding it in the deepest shade.

Nevertheless, "all that comes into being deserves to perish."[21] Millions of years may elapse, hundreds of thousands of generations be born and die, but inexorably the time will come when the declining warmth of the sun will no longer suffice to melt the ice thrusting itself forward from the poles; when the human race, crowding more and more about the equator, will finally no longer find even there enough heat for life; when gradually even the last trace of organic life will vanish; and the earth, an extinct frozen globe like the moon, will circle in deepest darkness and in an ever narrower orbit about the equally extinct sun, and at last fall into it. Other planets will have preceded it, others will follow it; instead of the bright, warm solar system with its harmonious arrangement of members, only a cold, dead sphere will still pursue its lonely path through universal space. And what will happen to our solar system will happen sooner or later to all the other systems of our island universe; it will happen to all the other innumerable island universes, even to those the light of which will never reach the earth while there is a living human eye to receive it.

And when such a solar system has completed its life history and succumbs to the fate of all that is finite, death, what then? Will the sun's corpse roll on for all eternity through infinite space, and all the once infinitely diversely differentiated natural forces pass for ever into one single form of motion, attraction? "Or"—as Secchi asks (p. 810)—"are there forces in nature which can reconvert the dead system into its original state of glowing nebula and re-awaken it to new life? We do not know."[22]

Of course, we do not know it in the sense that we know that 2×2=4, or that the attraction of matter increases and decreases according to the square of the distance. In theoretical natural science, however, which as far as possible builds up its outlook on nature into a harmonious whole, and without which nowadays even the most unthinking empiricist cannot get anywhere, we have very often to calculate with incompletely known magnitudes, and consistency of thought must at all times help to get over defective knowledge. Modern natural science has had to take over from philosophy the principle of the indestructibility of motion; it cannot any longer exist without this principle. But the motion of matter is not merely crude mechanical motion, mere change of place, it is heat and light, electric and magnetic tension, chemical combination and dissociation, life and, finally, consciousness. To say that matter during the whole unlimited time of its existence has only once, and for what is an infinitesimally short period in comparison to its eternity, found itself able to differentiate its motion and thereby to unfold the whole wealth of this motion, and that before and after this it remains restricted for eternity to mere change of place—this is equivalent to maintaining that matter is mortal and motion transient. The indestructibility of motion cannot be conceived merely quantitatively, it must also be conceived qualitatively; matter whose purely mechanical change of place includes indeed the possibility under favourable conditions of being transformed into heat, electricity, chemical action, life, but which is not capable of producing these conditions from out of itself, such matter has *forfeited motion*; motion which has lost the capacity of being transformed into the various forms appropriate to it may indeed still have *dynamis** but no longer *energeia***, and so has become partially destroyed. Both, however, are unthinkable.

This much is certain: there was a time when the matter of our island universe had transformed into heat such an amount of motion—of what kind we do not yet know—that there could be developed from it the solar systems appertaining to (according to Mädler) at least twenty million stars, the gradual extinction of which is

---

* Power.—*Ed.*

** Activity.—*Ed.*

000866

GANDHI SMARAKA GRANTHALAYA
BANGALORE-1.

A
N54

likewise certain. How did this transformation take place? We know just as little as Father Secchi knows whether the future *caput mortuum* of our solar system will once again be converted into the raw material of new solar systems. But here either we must have recourse to a creator, or we are forced to the conclusion that the incandescent raw material for the solar systems of our universe was produced in a natural way by transformations of motion which are *by nature inherent* in moving matter, and the conditions for which, therefore, must also be reproduced by matter, even if only after millions and millions of years and more or less by chance, but with the necessity that is also inherent in chance.

The possibility of such a transformation is more and more being conceded. The view is being arrived at that the heavenly bodies are ultimately destined to fall into one another, and calculations are even made of the amount of heat which must be developed on such collisions. The sudden flaring up of new stars, and the equally sudden increase in brightness of familiar ones, of which we are informed by astronomy, is most easily explained by such collisions. Moreover, not only does our group of planets move about the sun, and our sun within our island universe, but our whole island universe also moves in space in temporary, relative equilibrium with the other island universes, for even the relative equilibrium of freely floating bodies can only exist where the motion is reciprocally determined; and it is assumed by many that the temperature in space is not everywhere the same. Finally, we know that, with the exception of an infinitesimal portion, the heat of the innumerable suns of our island universe vanishes into space and fails to raise the temperature of space even by a millionth of a degree Centigrade. What becomes of all this enormous quantity of heat? Is it for ever dissipated in the attempt to heat universal space, has it ceased to exist practically, and does it only continue to exist theoretically, in the fact that universal space has become warmer by a decimal fraction of a degree beginning with ten or more noughts? Such an assumption denies the indestructibility of motion; it concedes the possibility that by the successive falling into one another of the heavenly bodies all existing mechanical motion will be converted into heat and the latter radiated into space, so that in spite of all "indestructibility of force" all motion in general would have ceased. (Incidentally, it is seen here how inaccurate is the term "indestructibility of force" instead of "indestructibility of motion.") Hence we arrive at the conclusion that in some way, which it will later be the task of scientific research to demonstrate, it must be possible for the heat radiated into space to be transformed into another form of motion, in which it can once more be stored up and become active. Thereby the chief difficulty in the way of the reconversion of extinct suns into incandescent vapour disappears.

For the rest, the eternally repeated succession of worlds in infinite time is only the logical complement to the co-existence of innumerable worlds in infinite space—a principle the necessity of which has forced itself even on the anti-theoretical Yankee brain of Draper.*

---

* "The multiplicity of worlds in infinite space leads to the conception of a succession of worlds in infinite time." (J. W. Draper, *History of the Intellectual Development of Europe*, Vol. 2, [p. 325].) [*Note by Engels*].

It is an eternal cycle in which matter moves, a cycle that certainly only completes its orbit in periods of time for which our terrestrial year is no adequate measure, a cycle in which the time of highest development, the time of organic life and still more that of the life of beings conscious of nature and of themselves, is just as narrowly restricted as the space in which life and self-consciousness come into operation; a cycle in which every finite mode of existence of matter, whether it be sun or nebular vapour, single animal or genus of animals, chemical combination or dissociation, is equally transient, and wherein nothing is eternal but eternally changing, eternally moving matter and the laws according to which it moves and changes. But however often, and however relentlessly, this cycle is completed in time and space; however many millions of suns and earths may arise and pass away, however long it may last before, in one solar system and only on *one* planet, the conditions for organic life develop; however innumerable the organic beings, too, that have to arise and to pass away before animals with a brain capable of thought are developed from their midst, and for a short span of time find conditions suitable for life, only to be exterminated later without mercy—we have the certainty that matter remains eternally the same in all its transformations, that none of its attributes can ever be lost, and therefore, also, that with the same iron necessity that it will exterminate on the earth its highest creation, the thinking mind, it must somewhere else and at another time again produce it.

# OLD PREFACE TO [*ANTI*]-*DÜHRING* ON DIALECTICS[23]

The following work does not by any means owe its origin to an "inner urge." On the contrary, my friend Liebknecht can testify to the great effort it cost him to persuade me to turn the light of criticism on Herr Dühring's newest socialist theory. Once I made up my mind to do so I had no choice but to investigate this theory, which claims to be the latest practical fruit of a new philosophical system, in its connection with this system, and thus to examine the system itself. I was therefore compelled to follow Herr Dühring into that vast domain in which he speaks of all possible things and of some others as well. That was the origin of a series of articles which appeared in the Leipzig *Vorwärts* from the beginning of 1877 onwards and are here presented as a connected whole.

When, because of the nature of the subject, the critique of a system, so extremely insignificant despite all self-praise, is presented in such great detail, two circumstances may be cited in excuse. On the one hand this criticism afforded me the opportunity of setting forth in positive form in various fields my outlook on controversial issues that today are of quite general scientific or practical interest. And while it does not occur to me in the least to present another system as an alternative to Herr Dühring's, it is to be hoped that, notwithstanding the variety of material examined by me, the reader will not fail to observe the inter-connection inherent also in the views which I have advanced.

On the other hand the "system-creating" Herr Dühring is by no means an isolated phenomenon in contemporary Germany. For some time now in that country philosophical, especially natural-philosophical systems, have been springing up by the dozen overnight, like mushrooms, not to mention the countless new systems of politics, economics, etc. Just as in the modern state it is presumed that every citizen is competent to pass judgement on all the issues on which he is called to vote; and just as in economics it is assumed that every buyer is a connoisseur of all the commodities which he has occasion to purchase for his maintenance—so similar assumptions are now to be made in science. Everybody can write about everything and "freedom of science" consists precisely in people deliberately writing about things they have not studied and putting this forward as the only strictly scientific method. Herr Dühring, however, is one of the most characteristic types of this bumptious pseudo-science which in Germany nowadays is forcing its way to the front everywhere and is drowning everything with its resounding—sublime nonsense. Sublime nonsense in poetry, in philosophy, in economics, in historiography; sublime nonsense in the lecture room and on the platform, sublime nonsense everywhere; sublime nonsense which lays claim to a superiority and depth of thought distinguishing it from the simple, commonplace nonsense of other nations; sublime nonsense, the most characteristic mass product of Germany's intellectual industry—cheap but bad—just like other German-made goods, only that unfortunately it was not exhibited along with them at Philadelphia. Even German socialism has lately, particularly since Herr Dühring's good example, gone in for a considerable amount of sublime nonsense; the fact that the practical Social-Democratic movement so little allows itself to be led astray by this sublime nonsense is one more proof of the remarkably healthy condition of our working class in a country where otherwise, with the exception of natural science, at the present moment almost everything goes ill.

When Nägeli, in his speech at the Munich meeting of natural scientists,[24] voiced the idea that human knowledge would never acquire the character of omniscience, he must obviously have been ignorant of Herr Dühring's achievements. These achievements have compelled me to follow him into a number of spheres in which I can move at best only in the capacity of a dilettante. This applies particularly to the various branches of natural science, where hitherto it was frequently considered more than presumptuous for a "layman" to want to have any say. I am encouraged somewhat, however, by a dictum uttered, likewise in Munich, by Herr Virchow and elsewhere discussed more in detail,[25] that outside of his own speciality every natural scientist is only a semi-initiate, *vulgo*: layman. Just as such a specialist may and must take the liberty of encroaching from time to time on neighbouring fields, and is granted indulgence there by the specialists concerned in respect of minor inexactitudes and clumsiness of expression, so I have taken the liberty of citing natural processes and laws of nature as examples in proof of my general theoretical views, and I hope that I can count on the same indulgence.[26] The results obtained by modern natural science force themselves upon everyone who is occupied with theoretical matters with the same irresistibility with which the natural scientist today is willy-nilly driven to general theoretical conclusions. And here a certain compensation occurs. If theoreticians are semi-initiates in the sphere of natural science, then natural scientists today are actually just as much so in the sphere of theory, in the sphere of what hitherto was called philosophy.

Empirical natural science has accumulated such a tremendous mass of positive material for knowledge that the necessity of classifying it in each separate field of investigation systematically and in accordance with its inner inter-connection has become absolutely imperative. It is becoming equally imperative to bring the individual spheres of knowledge into the correct connection with one another. In doing so, however, natural science enters the field of theory and here the methods of empiricism will not work, here only theoretical thinking can be of assistance. But theoretical thinking is an innate quality only as regards natural capacity. This natural capacity must be developed, improved, and for its improvement there is as yet no other means than the study of previous philosophy.

In every epoch, and therefore also in ours, theoretical thought is a historical product, which at different times assumes very different forms and, therewith, very different contents. The science of thought is therefore, like every other, a historical science, the science of the historical development of human thought. And this is of importance also for the practical application of thought in empirical fields. Because in the first place the theory of the laws of thought is by no means an "eternal truth" established once and for all, as philistine reasoning imagines to be the case with the word "logic." Formal logic itself has been the arena of violent controversy from the time of Aristotle to the present day. And dialectics has so far been fairly closely investigated by only two thinkers, Aristotle and Hegel. But it is precisely dialectics that constitutes the most important form of thinking for present-day natural science, for it alone offers the analogue for, and thereby the method of explaining, the evolutionary processes occurring in nature, inter-connections in general, and transitions from one field of investigation to another.

Secondly, an acquaintance with the historical course of evolution of human thought, with the views on the general inter-connections in the external world expressed at various times, is required by theoretical natural science for the additional reason that it furnishes a criterion of the theories propounded by this science itself. Here, however, lack of acquaintance with the history of philosophy is fairly frequently and glaringly displayed. Propositions which were advanced in philosophy centuries ago, which often enough have long been disposed of philosophically, are frequently put forward by theorizing natural scientists as brand-new wisdom and even become fashionable for a while. It is certainly a great achievement of the mechanical theory of heat that it strengthened the principle of the conservation of energy by means of fresh proofs and put it once more in the forefront; but could this principle have appeared on the scene as something so absolutely new if the worthy physicists had remembered that it had already been formulated by Descartes? Since physics and chemistry once more operate almost exclusively with molecules and atoms, the atomic philosophy of ancient Greece has of necessity come to the fore again. But how superficially it is treated by the best of them! Thus Kekulé tells us (*Ziele und Leistungen der Chemie*) that Democritus, instead of Leucippus, originated it, and he maintains that Dalton was the first to assume the existence of qualitatively different elementary atoms and was the first to ascribe to them different weights characteristic of the different elements. Yet anyone can read in Diogenes Laertius (X, § 43-44 and 61)[27] that already Epicurus had ascribed to atoms differences not only of magnitude and form but also of *weight*, that is, he was already acquainted in his own way with atomic weight and atomic volume.

The year 1848, which otherwise brought nothing to a conclusion in Germany, accomplished a complete revolution there only in the sphere of philosophy. By throwing itself into the field of the practical, here setting up the beginnings of modern industry and swindling, there initiating the mighty advance which natural science has since experienced in Germany and which was inaugurated by the caricature-like itinerant preachers Vogt, Büchner, etc., the nation resolutely turned its back on classical German philosophy that had lost itself in the sands of Berlin Old-Hegelianism. Berlin Old-Hegelianism had richly deserved that. But a nation that wants to climb the pinnacles of science cannot possibly manage without theoretical thought. Not only Hegelianism but dialectics too was thrown overboard—and that just at the moment when the dialectical character of natural processes irresistibly forced itself upon the mind, when therefore only dialectics could be of assistance to natural science in negotiating the mountain of theory—and so there was a helpless relapse into the old metaphysics. What prevailed among the public since then were on the one hand, the vapid reflections of Schopenhauer, which were fashioned to fit the philistines, and later even those of Hartmann; and, on the other hand, the vulgar itinerant-preacher materialism of a Vogt and a Büchner. At the universities the most diverse varieties of eclecticism competed with one another and had only one thing in common, namely, that they were concocted from nothing but remnants of old philosophies and were all equally metaphysical. All that was saved from the remnants of classical philosophy was a certain neo-Kantianism, whose last word was the eternally unknowable thing-in-itself, that is, the bit of Kant that least merited preservation. The final result was the incoherence and confusion of theoretical thought now prevalent.

One can scarcely pick up a theoretical book on natural science without getting the impression that natural scientists themselves feel how much they are dominated by this incoherence and confusion, and that the so-called philosophy now current offers them absolutely no way out. And here there really is no other way out, no possibility of achieving clarity, than by a return, in one form or another, from metaphysical to dialectical thinking.

This return can take place in various ways. It can come about spontaneously, by the sheer force of the natural-scientific discoveries themselves, which refuse any longer to allow themselves to be forced into the old Procrustean bed of metaphysics. But that is a protracted, laborious process during which a tremendous amount of unnecessary friction has to be overcome. To a large extent that process is already going on, particularly in biology. It could be greatly shortened if the theoreticians in the field of natural science were to acquaint themselves more closely with dialectical philosophy in its historically existing forms. Among these forms there are two which may prove especially fruitful for modern natural science.

The first of these is Greek philosophy. Here dialectical thought still appears in its pristine simplicity, still undisturbed by the enchanting obstacles which the metaphysics of the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries—Bacon and Locke in England, Wolff in Germany—put in its own way, and with which it blocked its own progress, from an understanding of the part to an understanding of the whole, to an insight into the general inter-connection of things. Among the Greeks—just because they were not yet advanced enough to dissect, analyze nature—nature is still viewed as a whole, in general. The universal connection of natural phenomena is not proved in regard to particulars; to the Greeks it is the result of direct contemplation. Herein lies the inadequacy of Greek philosophy, on account of which it had to yield later to other modes of outlook on the world. But herein also lies its superiority over all its subsequent metaphysical opponents. If in regard to the Greeks metaphysics was right in particulars, in regard to metaphysics the Greeks were right in general. That is the first reason why we are compelled in philosophy as in so many other spheres to return again and again to the achievements of that small people whose universal talents and activity assured it a place in the history of human development that no other people can ever claim. The other reason, however, is that the manifold forms of Greek philosophy contain in embryo, in the nascent state, almost all later modes of outlook on the world. Theoretical natural science is therefore likewise forced to go back to the Greeks if it desires to trace the history of the origin and development of the general principles it holds today. And this insight is forcing its way more and more to the fore. Instances are becoming increasingly rare of natural scientists who, while themselves operating with fragments of Greek philosophy, for example atomistics, as with eternal truths, look down upon the Greeks with Baconian superciliousness because the Greeks had no empirical natural science. It would be desirable only for this insight to advance to a real familiarity with Greek philosophy.

The second form of dialectics, which is the one that comes closest to the German naturalists, is classical German philosophy, from Kant to Hegel. Here a start has already been made in that it has again become fashionable to return to Kant, even apart from the neo-Kantianism mentioned above. Since the discovery that Kant was the author of two brilliant hypotheses, without which theoretical natural science today simply cannot make progress—the theory, formerly credited to Laplace, of the origin of the solar system and the theory of the retardation of the earth's rotation by the tides—Kant is again held in honour among natural scientists, as he deserves to be. But to study dialectics in the works of Kant would be a uselessly laborious and little-remunerative task, as there is now available, in *Hegel's* works, a comprehensive compendium of dialectics, developed though it be from an utterly erroneous point of departure.

After, on the one hand, the reaction against "natural philosophy" had run its course and had degenerated into mere abuse—a reaction that was largely justified by this erroneous point of departure and the helpless degeneration of Berlin Hegelianism; and after, on the other hand, natural science had been so conspicuously left in the lurch by current eclectic metaphysics in regard to its theoretical requirements, it will perhaps be possible to pronounce once more the name of Hegel in the presence of natural scientists without provoking that St. Vitus's dance which Herr Dühring so entertainingly performs.

First of all it must be established that here it is not at all a question of defending Hegel's point of departure: that spirit, mind, the idea, is primary and that the real world is only a copy of the idea. Already Feuerbach abandoned that. We all agree that in every field of science, in natural as in historical science, one must proceed from the given *facts*, in natural science therefore from the various material forms and the various forms of motion of matter;* that therefore in theoretical natural science too the inter-connections are not to be built into the facts but to be discovered in them, and when discovered to be verified as far as possible by experiment.

---

* The text as originally worded had a full stop here. Then followed this incomplete sentence, which Engels later deleted: "We socialist materialists go even considerably further in this respect than the natural scientists by also. . . ."—*Ed.*

Just as little can it be a question of maintaining the dogmatic content of the Hegelian system as it was preached by the Berlin Hegelians of the older and younger line. Hence, with the fall of the idealist point of departure, the system built upon it, in particular Hegelian natural philosophy, also falls. It must however be recalled that the natural scientists' polemic against Hegel, in so far as they at all correctly understood him, was directed solely against these two points: viz., the idealist point of departure and the arbitrary, fact-defying construction of the system.

After allowance has been made for all this, there still remains Hegelian dialectics. It is the merit of Marx that, in contrast to the "peevish, arrogant, mediocre Επίγονοι who now talk large in cultured Germany,"[28] he was the first to have brought to the fore again the forgotten dialectical method, its connection with Hegelian dialectics and its distinction from the latter, and at the same time to have applied this method in *Capital* to the facts of an empirical science, political economy. And he did it so successfully that even in Germany the newer economic school rises above the vulgar free-trade system only by copying from Marx (often enough incorrectly), on pretence of criticizing him.

In Hegel's dialectics there prevails the same inversion of all real inter-connection as in all other ramifications of his system. But, as Marx says: "The mystification which dialectics suffers in Hegel's hands, by no means prevents him from being the first to present its general form of working in a comprehensive and conscious manner. With him it is standing on its head. It must be turned right side up again, if you would discover the rational kernel within the mystical shell."[29]

In natural science itself, however, we often enough encounter theories in which the real relation is stood on its head, the reflection is taken for the original form and which consequently need to be turned right side up again. Such theories quite often dominate for a considerable time. When for almost two centuries heat was considered a special mysterious substance instead of a form of motion of ordinary matter, that was precisely such a case and the mechanical theory of heat carried out the inverting. Nevertheless physics dominated by the caloric theory discovered a series of highly important laws of heat and cleared the way, particularly through Fourier[30] and Sadi Carnot, for the correct conception, which now for its part had to put right side up the laws discovered by its predecessor, to translate them into its own language.* Similarly, in chemistry the phlogistic theory first supplied the material, by a hundred years of experimental work, with the aid of which Lavoisier was able to discover in the oxygen obtained by Priestley the real antipode of the fantastic phlogiston and thus could throw overboard the entire phlogistic theory. But this did not in the least do away with the experimental results of phlogistics. On the contrary. They persisted, only their formulation was inverted, was translated from the phlogistic into the now valid chemical language and thus they retained their validity.

---

* Carnot's function $C$ literally inverted: $\frac{1}{C}$ = absolute temperature. Without this inversion nothing can be done with it. [*Note by Engels.*]

The relation of Hegelian dialectics to rational dialectics is the same as that of the caloric theory to the mechanical theory of heat and that of the phlogistic theory to the theory of Lavoisier.

## NATURAL SCIENCE IN THE SPIRIT WORLD[31]

The dialectics that has found its way into popular consciousness is expressed in the old saying that extremes meet. In accordance with this we should hardly err in looking for the most extreme degree of fantasy, credulity, and superstition, not in that trend of natural science which, like the German philosophy of nature, tries to force the objective world into the framework of its subjective thought, but rather in the opposite trend, which, exalting mere experience, treats thought with sovereign disdain and really has gone to the furthest extreme in emptiness of thought. This school prevails in England. Its father, the much lauded Francis Bacon, already advanced the demand that his new empirical, inductive method should be pursued to attain, above all, by its means: longer life, rejuvenation—to a certain extent, alteration of stature and features, transformation of one body into another, the production of new species, power over the air and the production of storms. He complains that such investigations have been abandoned, and in his natural history he gives definite recipes for making gold and performing various miracles. Similarly Isaac Newton in his old age greatly busied himself with expounding the Revelation of St. John. So it is not to be wondered at if in recent years English empiricism in the person of some of its representatives—and not the worst of them—should seem to have fallen a hopeless victim to the spirit-rapping and spirit-seeing imported from America.

The first natural scientist belonging here is the very eminent zoologist and botanist, Alfred Russel Wallace, the man who simultaneously with Darwin put forward the theory of the alteration of species by natural selection. In his little work, *On Miracles and Modern Spiritualism*, London, Burns, 1875, he relates that his first experiences in this branch of natural knowledge date from 1844, when he attended the lectures of Mr. Spencer Hall on mesmerism and as a result carried out similar experiments on his pupils. "I was intensely interested in the subject and pursued it with ardour." [P. 119.] He not only produced magnetic sleep together with the phenomena of articular rigidity and local loss of sensation, he also confirmed the correctness of Gall's map of the skull, because on touching any one of Gall's organs the corresponding activity was aroused in the magnetized patient and exhibited by appropriate and lively gestures. Further, he established that his patient, merely by being touched, partook of all the sensations of the operator; he made him drunk with a glass of water as soon as he told him that it was brandy. He could make one of the young men so stupid, even in the waking condition, that he no longer knew his own name, a feat, however, that other schoolmasters are capable of accomplishing without any mesmerism. And so on.

Now it happens that I also saw this Mr. Spencer Hall in the winter of 1843-44 in Manchester. He was a very mediocre charlatan, who travelled the country under the patronage of some parsons and undertook magnetico-phrenological performances with a young woman in order to prove thereby the existence of God, the immortality of the soul, and the incorrectness of the materialism that was being preached at that time by the Owenites in all big towns. The lady was sent into a magnetic sleep and then, as soon as the operator touched any part of the skull corresponding to one of Gall's organs, she gave a bountiful display of theatrical, demonstrative gestures and poses representing the activity of the organ concerned; for instance, for the organ of philoprogenitiveness she fondled and kissed an imaginary baby, etc. Moreover, the good Mr. Hall had enriched Gall's geography of the skull with a new island of Barataria[32]: right at the top of the skull he had discovered an organ of veneration, on touching which his hypnotic miss sank on to her knees, folded her hands in prayer, and depicted to the astonished, philistine audience an angel wrapt in veneration. That was the climax and conclusion of the exhibition. The existence of God had been proved.

The effect on me and one of my acquaintances was similar to that on Mr. Wallace: the phenomena interested us and we tried to find out how far we could reproduce them. A wide-awake young boy of 12 years old offered himself as subject. Gently gazing into his eyes, or stroking, sent him without difficulty into the hypnotic condition. But since we were rather less credulous than Mr. Wallace and set to work with rather less fervour, we arrived at quite different results. Apart from muscular rigidity and loss of sensation, which were easy to produce, we found also a state of complete passivity of the will bound up with a peculiar hypersensitivity of sensation. The patient, when aroused from his lethargy by any external stimulus, exhibited very much greater liveliness than in the waking condition. There was no trace of any mysterious relation to the operator: anyone else could just as easily set the sleeper into activity. To put Gall's cranial organs into operation was a mere trifle for us; we went much further, we could not only exchange them for one another, or make their seat anywhere in the whole body, but we also fabricated any amount of other organs, organs of singing, whistling, piping, dancing, boxing, sewing, cobbling, tobacco-smoking, etc., and we could make their seat wherever we wanted. Wallace made his patients drunk on water, but we discovered in the great toe an organ of drunkenness which only had to be touched in order to cause the finest drunken comedy to be enacted. But it must be well understood, no organ showed a trace of action until the patient was given to understand what was expected of him; the boy soon perfected himself by practice to such an extent that the merest indication sufficed. The organs produced in this way then retained their validity for later occasions of putting to sleep, as long as they were not altered in the same way. The patient had indeed a double memory, one for the waking state and a second quite separate one for the hypnotic condition. As regards the passivity of the will and its absolute subjection to the will of a third person, this loses all its miraculous appearance when we bear in mind that the whole condition began with the subjection of the will of the patient to that of the operator, and cannot be produced without it. The most powerful magician of a magnetizer in the world will come to the end of his resources as soon as his patient laughs him in the face, While we with our frivolous scepticism thus found that the basis of magnetico-phrenological charlatanry lay in a series of phenomena which for the most part differ only in degree from those of the waking state and require no mystical interpretation, Mr. Wallace's "ardour" led him into a series of self-deceptions, in virtue of which he confirmed Gall's map of the skull in all its details and noted a mysterious relation between operator and patient.* Everywhere in Mr. Wallace's account, the sincerity of which reaches the degree of *naïveté*, it becomes apparent that he was much less concerned in investigating the factual background of charlatanry than in reproducing all the phenomena at all costs. Only this frame of mind is needed for one who was originally a scientist to be quickly converted into an adept by means of simple and facile self-deception. Mr. Wallace ended up with faith in magnetico-phrenological miracles and so already stood with one foot in the world of spirits.

He drew the other foot after him in 1865. On returning from his twelve years of travel in the tropics, experiments in table-turning introduced him to the society of various "mediums." How rapid his progress was, and how complete his mastery of the subject, is testified to by the above-mentioned booklet. He expects us to take for good coin not only all the alleged miracles of Home, the brothers Davenport, and other "mediums" who all more or less exhibit themselves for money and who have for the most part been frequently exposed as impostors, but also a whole series of allegedly authentic spirit histories from early times. The pythonesses of the Greek oracle, the witches of the Middle Ages, were all "mediums," and Iamblichus in his *De divinatione* already described quite accurately "the most startling phenomena of modern spiritualism." [P. 229.]

---

* As already said, the patients perfect themselves by practice. It is therefore quite possible that when the subjection of the will has become habitual the relation between the participants becomes more intimate, individual phenomena are intensified and are reflected weakly even in the waking state. [*Note by Engels.*]

Just one example to show how lightly Mr. Wallace deals with the scientific establishment and authentication of these miracles. It is certainly a strong assumption that we should believe that the above-mentioned spirits would allow themselves to be photographed, and we have surely the right to demand that such spirit photographs should be authenticated in the most indubitable manner before we accept them as genuine. Now Mr. Wallace recounts on p. 187 that in March, 1872, a leading medium, Mrs. Guppy, *née* Nicholls, had herself photographed together with her husband and small boy at Mr. Hudson's in Notting Hill, and on two different photographs a tall female figure, finely draped in white gauzy robes, with somewhat Eastern features, was to be seen behind her in a pose as if giving a benediction. "Here, then, one of two things *are* absolutely certain.* Either there was a living, intelligent, but invisible being present, or Mr. and Mrs. Guppy, the photographer, and some fourth person, planned a wicked imposture, and have maintained it ever since. Knowing Mr. and Mrs. Guppy so well as I do, I feel an *absolute conviction* that they are as incapable of an imposture of this kind as any earnest inquirer after truth in the department of natural science." [P. 188.]

---

* The spirit world is superior to grammar. A joker once caused the spirit of the grammarian Lindley Murray to testify. To the question whether he was there, he answered: "I are." The medium was from America. [*Note by Engels.*]

Consequently, either deception or spirit photography. Quite so. And, if deception, either the spirit was already on the photographic plates, or four persons must have been concerned, or three if we leave out as weak-minded or duped old Mr. Guppy who died in January, 1875, at the age of 84 (it only needed that he should be sent behind the Spanish screen of the background). That a photographer could obtain a "model" for the spirit without difficulty does not need to be argued. But the photographer Hudson, shortly afterwards, was publicly prosecuted for habitual falsification of spirit photographs, so Mr. Wallace remarks in mitigation: "One thing is clear; that if there has been imposture, it was at once detected by spiritualists themselves." [P. 189.] Hence there is not much reliance to be placed on the photographer. Remains Mrs. Guppy, and for her there is only the "absolute conviction" of our friend Wallace and nothing more.—Nothing more? Not at all. The absolute trustworthiness of Mrs. Guppy is evidenced by her assertion that one evening, early in June, 1871, she was carried through the air in a state of unconsciousness from her house in Highbury Hill Park to 69, Lamb's Conduit Street—three English miles as the crow flies—and deposited in the said house of No. 69 on the table in the midst of a spiritualistic *séance*. The doors of the room were closed, and although Mrs. Guppy was one of the stoutest women in London, which is certainly saying a good deal, nevertheless her sudden incursion did not leave behind the slightest hole either in the doors or in the ceiling. (Reported in the London *Echo*, June 8, 1871.) And if anyone still does not believe in the genuineness of spirit photography, there's no helping him.

The second eminent adept among English natural scientists is Mr. William Crookes, the discoverer of the chemical element thallium and of the radiometer[33] (in Germany also called "Lichtmühle"). Mr. Crookes began to investigate spiritualistic manifestations about 1871, and employed for this purpose a number of physical and mechanical appliances, spring balances, electric batteries, etc. Whether he brought to his task the main apparatus required, a sceptically critical mind, or whether he kept it to the end in a fit state for working, we shall see. At any rate, within a not very long period, Mr. Crookes was just as completely captivated as Mr. Wallace. "For some years," he relates, "a young lady, Miss Florence Cook, has exhibited remarkable mediumship, which latterly culminated in the production of an entire female form purporting to be of spiritual origin, and which appeared barefooted and in white flowing robes while she lay entranced, in dark clothing and securely bound in a cabinet or adjoining room."[34] This spirit, which called itself Katie, and which looked remarkably like Miss Cook, was one evening suddenly seized round the waist by Mr. Volckman—the present husband of Mrs. Guppy—and held fast in order to see whether it was not indeed Miss Cook in another edition. The spirit proved to be a quite sturdy damsel, it defended itself vigorously, the onlookers intervened, the gas was turned out, and when, after some scuffling, peace was re-established and the room re-lit, the spirit had vanished and Miss Cook lay bound and unconscious in her corner. Nevertheless, Mr. Volckman is said to maintain up to the present day that he had seized hold of Miss Cook and nobody else. In order to establish this scientifically, Mr. Varley, a well-known electrician, on the occasion of a new experiment, arranged for the current from a battery to flow through the medium, Miss Cook, in such a way that she could not play the part of the spirit without interrupting the current. Nevertheless, the spirit made its appearance. It was, therefore, indeed a being different from Miss Cook. To establish this further was the task of Mr. Crookes. His first step was to win the *confidence* of the spiritualistic lady. This confidence, so he says himself in the *Spiritualist*, June 5, 1874, "increased gradually to such an extent that she refused to give a *séance* unless *I made the arrangements.** She said that she always wanted *me* to be near her and in the neighbourhood of the cabinet; I found that—when this confidence had been established and she was sure that *I would not break any promise made to her**—the phenomena increased considerably in strength and there was freely forthcoming evidence that would have been unobtainable in any other way. She frequently *consulted me** in regard to the persons present at the *séances* and the places to be given them, for she had recently become very nervous as a result of certain ill-advised suggestions that, besides other more scientific methods of investigation, *force** also should be applied."[35]

---

* Italics by Engels.—*Ed.*

The spirit lady rewarded this confidence, which was as kind as it was scientific, in the highest measure. She even made her appearance—which can no longer surprise us—in Mr. Crookes' house, played with his children and told them "anecdotes from her adventures in India," treated Mr. Crookes to an account of "some of the bitter experiences of her past life," allowed him to take her by the arm so that he could convince himself of her evident materiality, allowed him to take her pulse and count the number of her respirations per minute, and finally allowed herself to be photographed next to Mr. Crookes. "This figure," says Mr. Wallace, "after being seen, felt, conversed with, and photographed, *absolutely disappeared* from a small room from which there was no other exit than an adjoining room filled with spectators" [p. 183]—which was not such a great feat, provided that the spectators were polite enough to show as much faith in Mr. Crookes, in whose house this happened, as Mr. Crookes did in the spirit.

Unfortunately these "fully authenticated phenomena" are not immediately credible even for spiritualists. We saw above how the very spiritualistic Mr. Volckman permitted himself to make a very material grab. And now a clergyman, a member of the committee of the "British National Association of Spiritualists," has also been present at a *séance* with Miss Cook, and he established the fact without difficulty that the room through the door of which the spirit came and disappeared communicated with the outer world by a *second door*. The behaviour of Mr. Crookes, who was also present, gave "the final death-blow to my belief that there might be 'something in' the face manifestations." (*Mystic*

*London*, by the Rev. C. Maurice Davies, London, Tinsley Brothers [319].) And, over and above that, it came to light in America how "Katies" were "materialized." A married couple named Holmes held *séances* in Philadelphia in which likewise a "Katie" appeared and received bountiful presents from the believers. However, one sceptic refused to rest until he got on the track of the said Katie, who, anyway, had already gone on strike once because of lack of pay; he discovered her in a boarding-house as a young lady of unquestionable flesh and bone, and in possession of all the presents that had been given to the spirit.

Meanwhile the Continent also had its scientific spirit-seers. A scientific association at St. Petersburg—I do not know exactly whether the University or even the Academy itself—charged the Councillor of State, Aksakov, and the chemist, Butlerov, to examine the basis of the spiritualistic phenomena, but it does not seem that very much came of this.[36] On the other hand—if the noisy announcements of the spiritualists are to be believed—Germany has now also put forward its man in the person of Professor Zöllner in Leipzig.

For years, as is well known, Herr Zöllner has been hard at work on the "fourth dimension" of space, and has discovered that many things that are impossible in a space of three dimensions, are a simple matter of course in a space of four dimensions. Thus, in the latter kind of space, a closed metal sphere can be turned inside out like a glove, without making a hole in it; similarly a knot can be tied in an endless string or one which has both ends fastened, and two separate closed rings can be interlinked without opening either of them, and many more such feats. Now, according to recent triumphant reports from the spirit world, Professor Zöllner has addressed himself to one or more mediums in order with their aid to determine more details of the locality of the fourth dimension. The success is said to have been surprising. After the session the arm of the chair, on which he rested his arm while his hand never left the table, was found to have become interlocked with his arm, a string that had both ends sealed to the table was found tied into four knots, and so on. In short, all the miracles of the fourth dimension are said to have been performed by the spirits with the utmost ease. It must be borne in mind: *relata refero*, I do not vouch for the correctness of the spirit bulletin, and if it should contain any inaccuracy, Herr Zöllner ought to be thankful that I am giving him the opportunity to make a correction. If, however, it reproduces the experiences of Herr Zöllner without falsification, then it obviously signifies a new era both in the science of spiritualism and that of mathematics. The spirits prove the existence of the fourth dimension, just as the fourth dimension vouches for the existence of spirits. And this once established, an entirely new, immeasurable field is opened to science. All previous mathematics and natural science will be only a preparatory school for the mathematics of the fourth and still higher dimensions, and for the mechanics, physics, chemistry, and physiology of the spirits dwelling in these higher dimensions. Has not Mr. Crookes scientifically determined how much weight is lost by tables and other articles of furniture on their passage into the fourth dimension—as we may now well be permitted to call it—and does not Mr. Wallace declare it proven that fire there does no harm to the human body? And now we have even the physiology of the spirit bodies! They breathe, they have a pulse, therefore lungs, heart, and a circulatory apparatus, and in consequence are at least as admirably equipped as our own in regard to the other bodily organs. For breathing requires carbo-hydrates which undergo combustion in the lungs, and these carbo-hydrates can only be supplied from without; hence, stomach, intestines, and their accessories—and if we have once established so much, the rest follows without difficulty. The existence of such organs, however, implies the possibility of their falling a prey to disease, hence it may still come to pass that Herr Virchow will have to compile a cellular pathology of the spirit world. And since most of these spirits are very handsome young ladies, who are not to be distinguished in any respect whatsoever from terrestrial damsels, other than by their supramundane beauty, it could not be very long before they come into contact with "men who feel the passion of love"[37]; and since, as established by Mr. Crookes from the beat of the pulse, "the female heart is not absent," natural selection also has opened before it the prospect of a fourth dimension, one in which it has no longer any need to fear of being confused with wicked Social-Democracy.[38]

Enough. Here it becomes palpably evident which is the most certain path from natural science to mysticism. It is not the extravagant theorizing of the philosophy of nature, but the shallowest empiricism that spurns all theory and distrusts all thought. It is not *a priori* necessity that proves the existence of spirits, but the empirical observations of Messrs. Wallace, Crookes, and Co. If we trust the spectrum-analysis observations of Crookes, which led to the discovery of the metal thallium, or the rich zoological discoveries of Wallace in the Malay Archipelago, we are asked to place the same trust in the spiritualistic experiences and discoveries of these two scientists. And if we express the opinion that, after all, there is a little difference between the two, namely, that we can verify the one but not the other, then the spirit-seers retort that this is not the case, and that they are ready to give us the opportunity of verifying also the spirit phenomena.

Indeed, dialectics cannot be despised with impunity. However great one's contempt for all theoretical thought, nevertheless one cannot bring two natural facts into relation with each other, or understand the connection existing between them, without theoretical thought. The only question is whether one's thinking is correct or not, and contempt of theory is evidently the most certain way to think naturalistically, and therefore incorrectly. But, according to an old and well-known dialectical law, incorrect thinking, carried to its logical conclusion, inevitably arrives at the opposite of its point of departure. Hence, the empirical contempt for dialectics is punished by some of the most sober empiricists being led into the most barren of all superstitions, into modern spiritualism.

It is the same with mathematics. The ordinary, metaphysical mathematicians boast with enormous pride of the absolute irrefutability of the results of their science. But these results include also imaginary magnitudes, which thereby acquire a certain reality. When one has once become accustomed to ascribe some kind of reality outside of our minds to $\sqrt{-1}$, or to the fourth dimension, then it is not a matter of much importance if one goes a step further and also accepts the spirit world of the mediums. It is as Ketteler said about Döllinger: "The man has defended so much nonsense in his life, he really could have accepted infallibility into the bargain!"[39]

In fact, mere empiricism is incapable of refuting the spiritualists. In the first place, the "higher" phenomena always show themselves only when the "investigator" concerned is already so far in the toils that he now only sees what he is meant to see or wants to see—as Crookes himself describes with such inimitable *naïveté*. In the second place, the spiritualists care nothing that hundreds of alleged facts are exposed as imposture and dozens of alleged mediums as ordinary tricksters. As long as *every* single alleged miracle has not been explained away, they have still room enough to carry on, as indeed Wallace says clearly enough in connection with the falsified spirit photographs. The existence of falsifications proves the genuineness of the genuine ones.

And so empiricism finds itself compelled to refute the importunate spirit-seers not by means of empirical experiments, but by theoretical considerations, and to say, with Huxley: "The only good that I can see in the demonstration of the truth of 'spiritualism' is to furnish an additional argument against suicide. Better live a crossing-sweeper than die and be made to talk twaddle by a 'medium' hired at a guinea a *séance*!"[40]

# DIALECTICS[41]

(The general nature of dialectics to be developed as the science of inter-connections, in contrast to metaphysics.)

---

It is, therefore, from the history of nature and human society that the laws of dialectics are abstracted. For they are nothing but the most general laws of these two aspects of historical development, as well as of thought itself. And indeed they can be reduced in the main to three:

The law of the transformation of quantity into quality and *vice versa*;

The law of the interpenetration of opposites;

The law of the negation of the negation.

All three are developed by Hegel in his idealist fashion as mere laws of *thought*: the first, in the first part of his *Logic*, in the Doctrine of Being; the second fills the whole of the second and by far the most important part of his *Logic*, the Doctrine of Essence; finally the third figures as the fundamental law for the construction of the whole system. The mistake lies in the fact that these laws are foisted on nature and history as laws of thought, and not deduced from them. This is the source of the whole forced and often outrageous treatment; the universe, willy-nilly, has to conform to a system of thought which itself is only the product of a definite stage of evolution of human thought. If we turn the thing round, then everything becomes simple, and the dialectical laws that look so extremely mysterious in idealist philosophy at once become simple and clear as noonday.

Moreover, anyone who is even only slightly acquainted with Hegel will be aware that in hundreds of passages Hegel is capable of giving the most striking individual illustrations of the dialectical laws from nature and history.

We are not concerned here with writing a handbook of dialectics, but only with showing that the dialectical laws are real laws of development of nature, and therefore are valid also for theoretical natural science. Hence we cannot go into the inner inter-connection of these laws with one another.

1. The law of the transformation of quantity into quality and *vice versa*. For our purpose, we can express this by saying that in nature, in a manner exactly fixed for each individual case, qualitative changes can only occur by the quantitative addition or quantitative subtraction of matter or motion (so-called energy).

All qualitative differences in nature rest on differences of chemical composition or on different quantities or forms of motion (energy) or, as is almost always the case, on both. Hence it is impossible to alter the quality of a body without addition or subtraction of matter or motion, i.e., without quantitative alteration of the body concerned. In this form, therefore, Hegel's mysterious principle appears not only quite rational but even rather obvious.

It is surely hardly necessary to point out that the various allotropic and aggregational states of bodies, because they depend on various groupings of the molecules, depend on greater or lesser amounts (Mengen) of motion communicated to the bodies.

But what about change of form of motion, or so-called energy? If we change heat into mechanical motion or *vice versa*, is not the quality altered while the quantity remains the same? Quite correct. But it is with change of form of motion as with Heine's vices; anyone can be virtuous by himself, for vices two are always necessary.[42] Change of form of motion is always a process that takes place between at least two bodies, of which one loses a definite amount of motion of one quality (e.g., heat), while the other gains a corresponding quantity of motion of another quality (mechanical motion, electricity, chemical decomposition). Here, therefore, quantity and quality mutually correspond to each other. So far it has not been found possible to convert motion from one form to another inside a single isolated body.

We are concerned here in the first place with non-living bodies; the same law holds for living bodies, but it operates under very complex conditions and at present quantitative measurement is still often impossible for us.

If we imagine any non-living body cut up into smaller and smaller portions, at first no qualitative change occurs. But this has a limit: if we succeed, as by evaporation, in obtaining the separate molecules in the free state, then it is true that we can usually divide these still further, yet only with a complete change of quality. The molecule is decomposed into its separate atoms, which have quite different properties from those of the molecule. In the case of molecules composed of different chemical elements, atoms or molecules of these elements themselves make their appearance in the place of the compound molecule; in the case of molecules of elements, the free atoms appear, which exert quite distinct qualitative effects: the free atoms of nascent oxygen are easily able to effect what the atoms of atmospheric oxygen, bound together in the molecule, can never achieve.

But the molecule is also qualitatively different from the mass of the body to which it belongs. It can carry out movements independently of this mass and while the latter remains apparently at rest, e.g., heat vibrations; by means of a change of position and of connection with neighbouring molecules it can change the body into an allotrope or a different state of aggregation.

Thus we see that the purely quantitative operation of division has a limit at which it becomes transformed into a qualitative difference: the mass consists solely of molecules, but it is something essentially different from the molecule, just as the latter is different from the atom. It is this difference that is the basis for the separation of mechanics, as the science of heavenly and terrestrial masses, from physics, as the mechanics of molecules, and from chemistry, as the physics of atoms.

In mechanics, no qualities occur; at most, states such as equilibrium, motion, potential energy, which all depend on measurable transference of motion and are themselves capable of quantitative expression. Hence, in so far as qualitative change takes place here, it is determined by a corresponding quantitative change.

In physics, bodies are treated as chemically unalterable or indifferent; we have to do with changes of their molecular states and with the change of form of motion, which in all cases, at least on one of the two sides, brings the molecule into action. Here every change is a transformation of quantity into quality, a consequence of the quantitative change of the amount of motion of one form or another that is inherent in the body or communicated to it. "Thus the temperature of water is, in the first place, a point of no consequence in respect to its liquidity; still with the increase or diminution of the temperature of liquid water, there comes a point where this state of cohesion alters and the water is converted into steam or ice." (Hegel, *Enzyklopädie, Gesamtausgabe*, Bd. VI, S. 217.) Similarly, a definite minimum current strength is required to cause the platinum wire of an electric incandescent lamp to glow; and every metal has its temperature of incandescence and fusion, every liquid its definite freezing and boiling point at a given pressure—in so far as our means allow us to produce the temperature required; finally also every gas has its critical point at which it can be liquefied by pressure and cooling. In short, the so-called physical constants are for the most part nothing but designations of the nodal points at which quantitative <change>[43] addition or subtraction of motion produces qualitative change in the state of the body concerned, at which, therefore, quantity is transformed into quality.

The sphere, however, in which the law of nature discovered by Hegel celebrates its most important triumphs is that of chemistry. Chemistry can be termed the science of the qualitative changes of bodies as a result of changed quantitative composition. That was already known to Hegel himself. (*Logik*, *Gesamtausgabe*, III, S. 433.) As in the case of oxygen: if three atoms unite into a molecule, instead of the usual two, we get ozone, a body which is very considerably different from ordinary oxygen in its odour and reactions. And indeed the various proportions in which oxygen combines with nitrogen or sulphur, each of which produces a substance qualitatively different from any of the others! How different is laughing gas (nitrogen monoxide $N_2O$) from nitric anhydride (nitrogen pentoxide, $N_2O_5$)! The first is a gas, the second at ordinary temperatures a solid crystalline substance. And yet the whole difference in composition is that the second contains five times as much oxygen as the first, and between the two of them are three more oxides of nitrogen ($NO$, $N_2O_3$, $NO_2$), each of which is qualitatively different from the first two and from one another.

This is seen still more strikingly in the homologous series of carbon compounds, especially of the simpler hydrocarbons. Of the normal paraffins, the lowest is methane, $CH_4$; here the four linkages of the carbon atom are saturated by four atoms of hydrogen. The second, ethane, $C_2H_6$, has two atoms of carbon joined together and the six free linkages are saturated by six atoms of hydrogen. And so it goes on, with $C_3H_8$, $C_4H_{10}$, etc., according to the algebraic formula $C_nH_{2n+2}$, so that by each addition of $CH_2$ a body is formed that is qualitatively distinct from the preceding one. The three lowest members of the series are gases, the highest known, hexadecane, $C_{16}H_{34}$, is a solid body with a boiling point of 270° C. Exactly the same holds good for the series of primary alcohols with the formula $C_nH_{2n+2}O$, derived (theoretically) from the paraffins, and the series of monobasic fatty acids (formula $C_nH_{2n}O_2$). What qualitative difference can be caused by the quantitative addition of $C_3H_6$ is taught by experience if we consume ethyl alcohol, $C_2H_6O$, in any drinkable form without addition of other alcohols, and on another occasion take the same ethyl alcohol but with a slight addition of amyl alcohol, $C_5H_{12}O$, which forms the main constituent of the abominable fusel oil. One's head will certainly be aware of it the next morning, much to its detriment; so that one could even say that the intoxication, and subsequent "morning after" feeling, is also quantity transformed into quality, on the one hand of ethyl alcohol and on the other hand of this added $C_3H_6$.

In these series we encounter the Hegelian law in yet another form. The lower members permit only of a single mutual arrangement of the atoms. If, however, the number of atoms united into a molecule attains a size definitely fixed for each series, the grouping of the atoms in the molecule can take place in more than one way; so that two or more isomeric substances can be formed, having equal numbers of C, H, and O atoms in the molecule but nevertheless qualitatively distinct from one another. We can even calculate how many such isomers are possible for each member of the series. Thus, in the paraffin series, for $C_4H_{10}$ there are two, for $C_5H_{12}$ there are three; among the higher members the number of possible isomers mounts very rapidly. Hence once again it is the quantitative number of atoms in the molecule that determines the possibility and, in so far as it has been proved, also the actual existence of such qualitatively distinct isomers.

Still more. From the analogy of the substances with which we are acquainted in each of these series, we can draw conclusions as to the physical properties of the still unknown members of the series and, at least for the members immediately following the known ones, predict their properties, boiling point, etc., with fair certainty.

Finally, the Hegelian law is valid not only for compound substances but also for the chemical elements themselves. We now know that "the chemical properties of the elements are a periodic function of their atomic weights" (Roscoe-Schorlemmer, *Ausführliches Lehrbuch der Chemie*, II, S. 823), and that, therefore, their quality is determined by the quantity of their atomic weight. And the test of this has been brilliantly carried out. Mendeleyev proved that various gaps occur in the series of related elements arranged according to atomic weights indicating that here new elements remain to be discovered. He described in advance the general chemical properties of one of these unknown elements, which he termed eka-aluminium,[44] because it follows after aluminium in the series beginning with the latter, and he predicted its approximate specific and atomic weight as well as its atomic volume. A few years later, Lecoq de Boisbaudran actually discovered this element, and Mendeleyev's predictions fitted with only very slight discrepancies. Eka-aluminium was realized in gallium (*ibid.*, p. 828). By means of the—unconscious—application of Hegel's law of the transformation of quantity into quality, Mendeleyev achieved a scientific feat which it is not too bold to put on a par with that of

Leverrier in calculating the orbit of the until then unknown planet Neptune.

In biology, as in the history of human society, the same law holds good at every step, but we prefer to dwell here on examples from the exact sciences, since here the quantities are accurately measurable and traceable.

Probably the same gentlemen who up to now have decried the transformation of quantity into quality as mysticism and incomprehensible transcendentalism will now declare that it is indeed something quite self-evident, trivial, and commonplace, which they have long employed, and so they have been taught nothing new. But to have formulated for the first time in its universally valid form a general law of development of nature, society, and thought, will always remain an act of historic importance. And if these gentlemen have for years caused quantity and quality to be transformed into each other, without knowing what they did, then they will have to console themselves with Molière's Monsieur Jourdain who had spoken prose all his life without having the slightest inkling of it.[45]

# BASIC FORMS OF MOTION[46]

Motion in the most general sense, conceived as the mode of existence, the inherent attribute, of matter, comprehends all changes and processes occurring in the universe, from mere change of place right up to thinking. The investigation of the nature of motion had as a matter of course to start from the lowest, simplest forms of this motion and to learn to grasp these before it could achieve anything in the way of explanation of the higher and more complicated forms. Hence, in the historical evolution of the natural sciences we see how first of all the theory of simplest change of place, the mechanics of heavenly bodies and terrestrial masses, was developed; it was followed by the theory of molecular motion, physics, and immediately afterwards, almost alongside of it and in some places in advance of it, the science of the motion of atoms, chemistry. Only after these different branches of the knowledge of the forms of motion governing non-living nature had attained a high degree of development could the explanation of the processes of motion representing the life process be successfully tackled. This advanced in proportion with the progress of mechanics, physics, and chemistry. Consequently, while mechanics has for a fairly long time already been able adequately to refer the effects in the animal body of the bony levers set into motion by muscular contraction to the laws that are valid also in non-living nature, the physico-chemical substantiation of the other phenomena of life is still pretty much at the beginning of its course. Hence, in investigating here the nature of motion, we are compelled to leave the organic forms of motion out of account. We are compelled to restrict ourselves—in accordance with the state of science—to the forms of motion of non-living nature.

All motion is bound up with some change of place, whether it be change of place of heavenly bodies, terrestrial masses, molecules, atoms, or ether particles. The higher the form of motion, the smaller this change of place. It in no way exhausts the nature of the motion concerned, but it is inseparable from the motion. It, therefore, has to be investigated before anything else.

The whole of nature accessible to us forms a system, an interconnected totality of bodies, and by bodies we understand here all material existences extending from stars to atoms, indeed right to ether particles, in so far as one grants the existence of the last named. In the fact that these bodies are interconnected is already included that they react on one another, and it is precisely this mutual reaction that constitutes motion. It already becomes evident here that matter is unthinkable without motion. And if, in addition, matter confronts us as something given, equally uncreatable as indestructible, it follows that motion also is as uncreatable as indestructible. It became impossible to reject this conclusion as soon as it was recognized that the universe is a system, an inter-connection of bodies. And since this recognition had been reached by philosophy long before it gained effective currency in natural science, one can understand why philosophy, fully two hundred years before natural science, drew the conclusion of the uncreatability and indestructibility of motion. Even the form in which it did so is still superior to the present-day formulation of natural science. Descartes' principle, that the amount (die Menge) of motion present in the universe is always the same, has only the formal defect of applying a finite expression to an infinite magnitude. On the other hand, two expressions of the same law are at present current in natural science: Helmholtz's law of the conservation of *force*, and the newer, more precise, one of the conservation of *energy*. Of these, the one, as we shall see, says the exact opposite of the other, and moreover each of them expresses only one side of the relation.

When two bodies act on each other so that a change of place of one or both of them results, this change of place can consist only in an approximation or a separation. They either attract each other or they repel each other. Or, as mechanics expresses it, the forces operating between them are central, acting along the line joining their centres. That this happens, that it is the case throughout the universe without exception, however complicated many movements may appear to be, is nowadays accepted as a matter of course. It would seem nonsensical to us to assume, when two bodies act on each other and their mutual interaction is not opposed by any obstacle or the influence of a third body, that this action should be effected otherwise than along the shortest and most direct path, i.e., along the straight line joining their centres.* It is well known, moreover, that Helmholtz (*Erhaltung der Kraft*, Berlin 1847, Sections I and II) has provided the mathematical proof that central action and unalterability of the amount of motion (Bewegungsmenge)[48] are reciprocally conditioned and that the assumption of other than central actions leads to results in which motion could be either created or destroyed. Hence the basic form of all motion is approximation and separation, contraction and expansion—in short, the old polar opposites of *attraction* and *repulsion.*

It is expressly to be noted that attraction and repulsion are not regarded here as so-called "*forces*" but as *simple forms of motion*, just as Kant had already conceived matter as the unity of attraction and repulsion. What is to be understood by "forces" will be shown in due course.

All motion consists in the interplay of attraction and repulsion. Motion, however, is only possible when each individual attraction is compensated by a corresponding repulsion somewhere else. Otherwise in time one side would get the preponderance over the other and then motion would finally cease. Hence all attractions and all repulsions in the universe must mutually balance one another. Thus the law of the indestructibility and uncreatability of motion is expressed in the form that each movement of attraction in the universe must have as its complement an equivalent movement of repulsion and *vice versa*; or, as ancient philosophy—long before the natural-scientific formulation of the law of conservation of force or energy—expressed it: the sum of all attractions in the universe is equal to the sum of all repulsions.

---

* In the margin of the manuscript is the following note written in pencil: "Kant [says], p. 22, that the three dimensions of space depend on the fact that this attraction or repulsion takes place in inverse proportion to the square of the distance."[47]—*Ed.*

However, it appears that there are here still two possibilities for all motion to cease at some time or other, either by repulsion and attraction finally cancelling each other out in actual fact, or by the total repulsion finally taking possession of one part of matter and the total attraction of the other part. For the dialectical conception, these possibilities are excluded from the outset. Dialectics has proved from the results of our experience of nature so far that all polar opposites in general are determined by the mutual action of the two opposite poles on each other, that the separation and opposition of these poles exist only within their mutual connection and union, and, conversely, that their union exists only in their separation and their mutual connection only in their opposition. This once established, there can be no question of a final cancelling out of repulsion and attraction, or of a final partition between the one form of motion in one half of matter and the other form in the other half, consequently there can be no question of mutual penetration[49] or of absolute separation of the two poles. It would be equivalent to demanding in the first case that the north and south poles of a magnet should mutually cancel themselves out or, in the second case, that dividing a magnet in the middle between the two poles should produce on one side a north half without a south pole, and on the other side a south half without a north pole. Although, however, the impermissibility of such assumptions follows at once from the dialectical nature of polar opposites, nevertheless, thanks to the prevailing metaphysical mode of thought of natural scientists, the second assumption at least plays a certain part in physical theory. This will be dealt with in its place.

How does motion present itself in the interaction of attraction and repulsion? We can best investigate this in the separate forms of motion itself. At the end, the general aspect of the matter will show itself.

Let us take the motion of a planet about its central body. Ordinary school astronomy follows Newton in explaining the ellipse described as the result of the joint action of two forces, the attraction of the central body and a tangential force driving the planet along the normal to the direction of this attraction. Thus it assumes, besides the form of motion directed centrally, also another direction of motion, or so-called "force," perpendicular to the line joining the centres. Thereby it contradicts the above-mentioned basic law according to which all motion in our universe can only take place along the line joining the centres of the bodies acting on one another, or, as one says, is caused only by centrally acting "forces." Thereby also it introduces into the theory an element of motion which, as we have likewise seen, necessarily leads to the creation and destruction of motion, and therefore presupposes a creator. What had to be done, therefore, was to reduce this mysterious tangential force to a form of motion acting centrally, and this the Kant-Laplace theory of cosmogony accomplished. As is well known, according to this conception the whole solar system arose from a rotating, extremely tenuous, gaseous mass by gradual contraction. The rotational motion is obviously strongest at the equator of this gaseous sphere, and individual gaseous rings separate themselves from the mass and clump themselves together into planets, planetoids, etc., which revolve round the central body in the direction of the original rotation. This rotation itself is usually explained from the motion of the individual gaseous particles themselves. This motion takes place in all directions, but finally an excess in one particular direction makes itself evident and so causes the rotating motion, which is bound to become stronger and stronger with the progressive contraction of the gaseous sphere. But whatever hypothesis is assumed of the origin of the rotation, they all abolish the tangential force, dissolving it in a special form of the manifestation of centrally acting motion. If the one element of planetary motion, the directly central one, is represented by gravitation, the attraction between the planet and the central body, then the other, tangential, element appears as a relic, in a derivative or altered form, of the original repulsion of the individual particles of the gaseous sphere. Thus the life process of a solar system presents itself as an interplay of attraction and repulsion, in which attraction gradually more and more gets the upper hand owing to repulsion being radiated into space in the form of heat and thus more and more becoming lost to the system.

One sees at a glance that the form of motion here conceived as repulsion is the same as that which modern physics terms "*energy.*" By the contraction of the system and the resulting detachment of the individual bodies of which it consists today, the system has lost "energy," and indeed this loss, according to Helmholtz's well-known calculation, already amounts to 453/454 of the total amount of motion (Bewegungsmenge) originally present in the form of repulsion.

Let us take now a mass in the shape of a body on our earth itself. It is connected with the earth by gravitation, as the earth in turn is with the sun; but unlike the earth it is incapable of a free planetary motion. It can be set in motion only by an impulse from outside, and even then, as soon as the impulse ceases, its movement speedily comes to a standstill, whether by the effect of gravity alone or by the latter in combination with the resistance of the medium in which it moves. This resistance also is in the last resort an effect of gravity, in the absence of which the earth would not have on its surface any resistant medium, any atmosphere. Hence in pure mechanical motion on the earth's surface we are concerned with a situation in which gravitation, attraction, decisively predominates, where therefore the production of the motion shows both phases: first counteracting gravity and then allowing gravity to act—in a word, rising and falling.

Thus we have again mutual action between attraction on the one hand and a form of motion taking place in the opposite direction to it, hence a repelling form of motion, on the other hand. But within the sphere of terrestrial *pure* mechanics (which deals with masses of *given* states of aggregation and cohesion taken by it as unalterable) this repelling form of motion does not occur in nature. The physical and chemical conditions under which a lump of rock becomes separated from a mountain top, or a fall of water becomes possible,

GANDHI SMARAKA GRANTHALAYA
BANGALORE-1.

lie outside its sphere of action. Therefore, in terrestrial pure mechanics, the repelling, raising motion must be produced artificially: by human force, animal force, water or steam power, etc. And this circumstance, this necessity to combat the natural attraction artificially, causes the mechanicians to adopt the view that attraction, gravitation, or, as they say, the *force* of gravity, is the most important, indeed the basic, form of motion in nature.

When, for instance, a weight is raised and communicates motion to other bodies by falling directly or indirectly, then according to the usual view of mechanics it is not the *raising* of the weight which communicates this motion but the *force of gravity*. Thus Helmholtz, for instance, makes "the force which is the simplest and the one with which we are best acquainted, viz., gravity, act as the driving force . . . for instance in clocks that are actuated by a weight. The weight . . . cannot comply with the pull of gravity without setting the whole clockwork in motion." But it cannot set the clockwork in motion without itself sinking and it goes on sinking until the string from which it hangs is completely unwound: "Then the clock comes to a stop, for the operative capacity of the weight is exhausted for the time being. Its weight is not lost or diminished, it remains attracted to the same extent by the earth, but the capacity of this weight to produce movements has been lost. . . . We can, however, wind up the clock by the power of the human arm, whereby the weight is once more raised up. As soon as this has happened, it regains its previous operative capacity and can again keep the clock in motion." (Helmholtz, *Populäre Vorträge*, II, S. 144-45.)

According to Helmholtz, therefore, it is not the active communication of motion, the raising of the weight, that sets the clock into motion, but the passive heaviness of the weight, although this same heaviness is only withdrawn from its passivity by the raising, and once again returns to passivity after the string of the weight has unwound. If then according to the modern conception, as we saw above, *energy* is only another expression for *repulsion*, here in the older Helmholtz conception *force* appears as another expression for the opposite of repulsion, for *attraction*. For the time being we shall simply put this on record.

When, however, the process of terrestrial mechanics has reached its end, when the heavy mass has first of all been raised and then again has fallen through the same height, what becomes of the motion that constituted this process? For pure mechanics, it has disappeared. But we know now that it has by no means been destroyed. To a lesser extent it has been converted into the air vibrations of sound waves, to a much greater extent into heat—which has been communicated in part to the resisting atmosphere, in part to the falling body itself, and finally in part to the floor on which the weight comes to rest. The clock weight has also gradually given up its motion in the form of frictional heat to the separate driving wheels of the clockwork. But, although usually expressed in this way, it is not the *falling* motion, i.e., the attraction, that has passed into heat, and therefore into a form of repulsion. On the contrary, as Helmholtz correctly remarks, the attraction, the heaviness, remains what it previously was and, accurately speaking, becomes even greater. Rather it is the repulsion communicated to the raised body by raising that is *mechanically* destroyed by falling and reappears as heat. The repulsion of masses is transformed into molecular repulsion.

Heat, as already stated, is a form of repulsion. It sets the molecules of solid bodies into oscillation, thereby loosening the connections of the separate molecules until finally the transition to the liquid state takes place. In the liquid state also, on continued addition of heat, it increases the motion of the molecules until a degree is reached at which these split off altogether from the mass and, at a definite velocity determined for each molecule by its chemical constitution, they move away individually in the free state. With a still further addition of heat, this velocity is further increased, and so the molecules are more and more repelled from one another.

But heat is a form of so-called "energy"; here once again the latter proves to be identical with repulsion.

In the phenomena of static electricity and magnetism, we have a polar distribution of attraction and repulsion. Whatever hypothesis may be adopted of the *modus operandi* of these two forms of motion, in view of the facts no one has any doubt that attraction and repulsion, in so far as they are produced by static electricity or magnetism and are able to develop unhindered, completely compensate each other, as in fact necessarily follows from the very nature of the polar distribution. Two poles whose activities did not completely compensate each other would indeed not be poles, and also have so far not been met with in nature. For the time being we will leave galvanism out of account, because in its case the process is determined by chemical reactions, which makes it more complicated. Therefore, let us investigate rather the chemical processes of motion themselves.

When two parts by weight of hydrogen combine with 15.96 parts by weight of oxygen to form water vapour, an amount of heat of 68,924 heat-units is developed during the process. Conversely, if 17.96 parts by weight of water vapour are to be decomposed into two parts by weight of hydrogen and 15.96 parts by weight of oxygen, this is only possible on condition that the water vapour has communicated to it an amount of motion equivalent to 68,924 heat-units—whether in the form of heat itself or of electrical motion. The same thing holds for all other chemical processes. In the overwhelming majority of cases, motion is given off on combination and must be supplied on decomposition. Here, too, as a rule, repulsion is the active side of the process more endowed with motion or requiring the addition of motion, while attraction is the passive side producing a surplus of motion and giving off motion. On this account, the modern theory also declares that, on the whole, energy is set free on the combination of elements and is bound up on decomposition. Here, therefore, energy again stands for repulsion. And again Helmholtz declares: "This force (chemical affinity) can be conceived as a force of *attraction*. . . . This force of attraction between the atoms of carbon and oxygen performs work quite as much as that exerted on a raised weight by the earth in the form of gravitation. . . . When carbon and oxygen atoms rush at one another and combine to form carbonic acid, the newly-formed particles of carbonic acid must be in very violent molecular motion, i.e., in heat motion. . . . When later they have given up their heat to the environment, we still have in the carbonic acid all the carbon, all the oxygen, and in addition the affinity of both continuing to exist just as powerfully as before. But this affinity now expresses itself solely in the fact that the atoms of carbon and oxygen stick fast to one another, and do not allow of their being separated." (Helmholtz, *ibid.*, p. 169.) It is just as before: Helmholtz insists that in chemistry as in mechanics force consists only in *attraction*, and therefore is the exact opposite of what other physicists call energy and which is identical with *repulsion.*

Hence we have now no longer the two simple basic forms of attraction and repulsion, but a whole series of sub-forms in which the winding up and running down process of universal motion goes on within the opposition of attraction and repulsion. It is, however, by no means merely in our mind that these manifold forms of appearance are comprehended under the *single* expression of motion. On the contrary, they themselves prove in action that they are forms of one and the same motion by passing into one another under given conditions. Mechanical motion of masses passes into heat, into electricity, into magnetism; heat and electricity pass into chemical decomposition; chemical combination in turn again develops heat and electricity and, by means of the latter, magnetism; and finally, heat and electricity produce once more mechanical movement of masses. Moreover, these changes take place in such a way that a given amount of motion of one form always has corresponding to it an exactly fixed amount of another form. Further, it is a matter of indifference which form of motion provides the unit by which the amount of motion is measured, whether it serves for measuring mass motion, heat, so-called electromotive force, or the motion undergoing transformation in chemical processes.

We base ourselves here on the theory of the "conservation of energy" established by J. R. Mayer* in 1842 and afterwards worked out internationally with such brilliant success, and we have now to investigate the fundamental concepts nowadays made use of by this theory. These are the concepts of "force" or "energy," and "work."

---

* Helmholtz, in his *Pop. Vorles.*,[50] II, p. 113, appears to ascribe a certain share in the natural-scientific proof of Descartes' principle of the quantitative immutability of motion to himself as well as to Mayer, Joule, and Colding. "I myself, without knowing anything of Mayer and Colding, and only becoming acquainted with Joule's experiments at the end of my work, *proceeded along the same path*; I occupied myself especially with searching out all the relations between the various processes of nature that could be deduced from the given mode of consideration, and I *published my investigations* in 1847 in a little work entitled *Über die Erhaltung der Kraft*."—But in this work there is to be found nothing new for the position in 1847 beyond the above-mentioned, mathematically very valuable, development that "conservation of force" and central action of the forces active between the various bodies of a system are only two different expressions for the same thing, and further a more accurate formulation of the law that the sum of the live and tensional forces in a given *mechanical* system is constant. In every other respect it was already superseded since Mayer's second paper of 1845. Already in 1842 Mayer maintained the "indestructibility of force," and from his new standpoint in 1845 he had much more brilliant things to say about the "relations between the various processes of nature" than Helmholtz had in 1847. [*Note by Engels.*]

It has been shown above that according to the modern view, now fairly generally accepted, energy is the term used for repulsion, while Helmholtz mostly uses the word force to express attraction. One could regard this as an unimportant formal difference, inasmuch as attraction and repulsion compensate each other in the universe, and accordingly it would appear a matter of indifference which side of the relation is taken as positive and which as negative, just as it is of no importance in itself whether the positive abscissæ are counted to the right or the left of a point in a given line. Nevertheless, this is not absolutely so.

For we are concerned here, first of all, not with the universe, but with phenomena occurring on the earth and conditioned by the exactly fixed position of the earth in the solar system, and of the solar system in the universe. At every moment, however, our solar system gives out enormous quantities of motion into space, and motion of a very definite quality, viz., the sun's heat, i.e., repulsion. But our earth itself allows of the existence of life on it only owing to the sun's heat, and the earth in turn finally radiates into space the sun's heat received, after it has converted a portion of this heat into other forms of motion. Consequently, in the solar system and above all on the earth, attraction already considerably preponderates over repulsion. Without the repulsive motion radiated to us from the sun, all motion on the earth would cease. If tomorrow the sun were to become cold, the attraction on the earth would still, other circumstances remaining the same, be what it is today. As before, a stone of 100 kilograms, wherever situated, would weigh 100 kilograms. But the motion, both of masses and of molecules and atoms, would come to what we would regard as an absolute standstill. Therefore it is clear that for processes occurring on the *earth* today it is by no means a matter of indifference whether attraction or repulsion is conceived as the active side of motion, hence as "force" or "energy." On the contrary, on the earth today attraction has already become *altogether passive* owing to its decisive preponderance over repulsion; we owe all active motion to the supply of repulsion from the sun. Therefore, the modern school—even if it remains unclear about the nature of the relation of motion—nevertheless, in point of fact and for *terrestrial* processes, indeed for the whole solar system, is absolutely right in conceiving energy as repulsion.

The term "energy" by no means correctly expresses the entire relation of motion, for it comprehends only one aspect, the action but not the reaction. It still makes it appear as if "energy" was something external to matter, something implanted in it. But in all circumstances it is to be preferred to the expression "force."

As is generally conceded (from Hegel to Helmholtz), the notion of force is derived from the activity of the human organism within its environment. We speak of muscular force, of the lifting force of the arms, of the leaping power of the legs, of the digestive force of the stomach and intestinal tract, of the sensory force of the nerves, of the secretory force of the glands, etc. In other words, in order to save having to give the real cause of a change brought about by a function of our organism, we substitute a fictitious cause, a so-called force corresponding to the change. Then we carry this convenient method over to the external world also, and so invent as many forces as there are diverse phenomena.

In *Hegel's* time natural science (with the exception perhaps of celestial and terrestrial mechanics) was still in this naïve state, and Hegel quite correctly attacks the prevailing way of denoting forces (passage to be quoted).[51] Similarly in another passage: "It is better (to say) that a magnet has a *soul*" (as Thales expresses it) "than that it has an attracting force; force is a kind of property that, *separable from matter*, is put forward as a predicate—while soul, on the other hand, *is this movement itself, identical with the nature of matter*."* (*Geschichte der Philosophie*, I, S. 208.)

Today we no longer make it so easy for ourselves in regard to forces. Let us listen to Helmholtz: "If we are fully acquainted with a natural law, we must also demand that it should operate without exception. . . . Thus the law confronts us as an objective power, and accordingly we term it a *force*. For instance, we objectivize the law of the refraction of light as a refractive power of transparent substances, the law of chemical affinities as a force of affinity of the various substances for one another. Thus we speak of the electrical force of contact of metals, of the force of adhesion, capillary force, and so on. These names objectivize laws which in the first place embrace only a limited series of natural processes, *the conditions for which are still rather complicated**. . . . Force is only the objectivized law of action. . . . The abstract idea of force introduced by us only makes the addition that we have not arbitrarily invented this law but that it is a compulsory law of phenomena. Hence our demand to *understand* the phenomena of nature, i.e., to find out their *laws*, takes on another form of expression, viz., that we have to seek out the *forces* which are the causes of the phenomena." (*Loc. cit.*, pp. 189-91. Innsbruck lecture of 1869.)

---

* Italics by Engels.—*Ed.*

Firstly, it is certainly a peculiar manner of "objectivizing" if the *purely subjective* notion of *force* is introduced into a natural law that has already been established as independent of our subjectivity and therefore completely *objective*. At most an Old-Hegelian of the strictest type might permit himself such a thing, but not a Neo-Kantian like Helmholtz. Neither the law, when once established, nor its objectivity or the objectivity of its action, acquires the slightest new objectivity by our interpolating a force into it; what is added is our *subjective assertion* that it acts in virtue of some so far entirely unknown force. The secret meaning, however, of this interpolating is seen as soon as Helmholtz gives us examples: refraction of light, chemical affinity, contact electricity, adhesion, capillarity, and raises the laws that govern these phenomena to the "objective" rank of nobility as *forces*. "These names objectivize laws which in the first place embrace only a limited series of natural processes, the conditions for which *are still rather complicated.*" And it is just here that the "objectivizing," which is rather subjectivizing, gets its meaning; not because we have become fully acquainted with the law, but just because this is *not* the case. Just because we are *not* yet clear about the "rather complicated conditions" of these phenomena, we often take refuge here in the word force. We express thereby not our knowledge, but our *lack* of knowledge of the nature of the law and its mode of action. In this sense, as a short expression for a casual connection that has not yet been explained, as a makeshift expression, it may pass in current usage. Whatsoever is more than that cometh of evil. With just as much right as Helmholtz explains physical phenomena from so-called refractive force, electrical force of contact, etc., the mediæval scholastics explained temperature changes by means of a *vis calorifica* and a *vis frigifaciens* and thus saved themselves all further investigation of heat phenomena.

And even in this sense it is unfortunate, for it expresses everything in a one-sided manner. All natural processes are two-sided, they are based on the relation of at least two operative parts, action and reaction. The notion of force, however, owing to its origin from the action of the human organism on the external world, and further from terrestrial mechanics, implies that only one part is active, operative, the other part being passive, receptive; hence it lays down a not yet demonstrable extension of the difference between the sexes to non-living objects. The reaction of the second part, on which the force works, appears at most as a passive reaction, as a *resistance.* Now this mode of conception is permissible in a number of fields even outside pure mechanics, namely, where it is a matter of the simple transference of motion and its quantitative calculation. But already in the more complicated physical processes it is no longer adequate, as Helmholtz's own examples prove. The refractive force lies just as much in the light itself as in the transparent bodies. In the case of adhesion and capillarity, it is certain that the "force" is just as much situated in the surface of the solid as in the liquid. In contact electricity, at any rate, this much is certain, viz., that *both* metals contribute to it, and "chemical affinity" also is situated, if anywhere, in *both* the parts entering into combination. But a force which consists of two separated forces, an action which does not evoke its reaction, but which includes and bears this in itself, is no force in the sense of terrestrial mechanics, the only science in which one really knows what is meant by a force. For the basic conditions of terrestrial mechanics are, firstly, refusal to investigate the causes of the impulse, i.e., the nature of the particular force, and, secondly, the view of the one-sidedness of the force, it being everywhere opposed by an identical gravitational force, such that in comparison with any terrestrial distance of fall the earth's radius $= \infty$.

But let us see further how Helmholtz "objectivizes" his "forces" into natural laws.

In a lecture of 1854 (*loc. cit.*, p. 119)[52] he examines the "store of working force" originally contained in the spherical nebula from which our solar system was formed. "In point of fact it received an enormously large legacy in this respect, if only in the form of the general force of attraction of all its parts for one another." This is indubitable. But it is equally indubitable that the whole of this legacy of gravity or gravitation is present undiminished in the solar system today, apart perhaps from the minute quantity that was lost together with the matter which possibly was flung out irrevocably into space. Further: "Chemical forces too must have been already present and ready to act; but as these forces could become effective only on intimate contact of the various kinds of masses, condensation had to take place before they came into play." [P. 120.] If, as Helmholtz does above, we regard these chemical forces as forces of affinity, hence as *attraction*, then again we are bound to say that the sum-total of these chemical forces of attraction still exists undiminished within the solar system.

But on the same page Helmholtz gives us as the result of his calculations "that perhaps only the 454th part of the original mechanical force exists as such"—that is to say, in the solar system. How is one to make sense of that? The force of attraction, general as well as chemical, is still present unimpaired in the solar system. Helmholtz does not mention any other certain source of force. In any case, according to Helmholtz, these forces have performed tremendous work. But they have neither increased nor diminished on that account. As it is with the clock weight mentioned above, so it is with every molecule in the solar system and the whole solar system itself. "Its weight is neither lost nor diminished." What happens to carbon and oxygen as previously mentioned holds good for all chemical elements: the total given quantity of each one remains, and "the total force of affinity continues to exist just as powerfully as before." What have we lost then? And what "force" has performed the tremendous work which is 453 times as great as that which, according to his calculation, the solar system is still able to perform? Up to this point Helmholtz has given no answer. But further on he says:

"Whether [in the original spherical nebula] a further *reserve of force in the shape of heat** was present, we do not know."

But, if we may be allowed to mention it, heat is a repulsive "force," it acts therefore *against* the direction of both gravitation and chemical attraction, being minus if these are put as plus. Hence if, according to Helmholtz, the original reserve of force is composed of general and chemical *attraction*, an extra reserve of heat would have to be, not added to that reserve of force, but subtracted from it. Otherwise the sun's heat would have to *strengthen* the force of attraction of the earth when it causes water to evaporate in direct *opposition* to this attraction, and the water vapour to rise; or the heat of an incandescent iron tube through which steam is passed would *strengthen* the chemical attraction of oxygen and hydrogen, whereas it puts it out of action. Or, to make the same thing clear in another form: let us assume that the spherical nebula with radius $r$, and therefore with volume $\frac{4}{3}\pi r^3$, has a temperature $t$. Let us further assume a second spherical nebula of equal mass having at the higher temperature $T$ the larger radius $R$ and volume $\frac{4}{3}\pi R^3$. Now it is obvious that in the second nebula the attraction, mechanical as well as physical and chemical, can act with the same force as in the first only when it has shrunk from radius $R$ to radius $r$, i.e., when it has radiated into space heat corresponding to the temperature difference $T-t$. A hotter nebula will therefore condense later than a colder one; consequently the heat, considered from Helmholtz's standpoint as an obstacle to condensation, is no plus but a minus of the "reserve of force." Helmholtz, by presupposing the possibility of an amount of *repulsive* motion in the form of heat becoming added to the *attractive* forms of motion and increasing the total of these latter, commits a definite error of calculation.

---

* Italics by Engels.—*Ed.*

Let us now bring the whole of this "reserve of force," possible as well as demonstrable, under the same mathematical sign so that an addition is possible. Since for the time being we cannot reverse the heat and replace its repulsion by the equivalent attraction, we shall have to perform this reversal with the two forms of attraction. Then, instead of the general force of attraction, instead of the chemical affinity, and instead of the heat, which moreover possibly already existed as such at the outset, we have simply to put the sum of the repulsive motion or so-called energy present in the gaseous sphere at the moment when it becomes independent. And by so doing Helmholtz's calculation will also hold, in which he wants to calculate "the heating that must arise from the assumed initial condensation of the heavenly bodies of our system from nebulously scattered matter." By thus reducing the whole "reserve of force" to heat, repulsion, he also makes it possible to add on the assumed "reserve of force of heat." The calculation then asserts that 453/454 of all the energy, i.e., repulsion, originally present in the gaseous sphere has been radiated into space in the form of heat, or, to put it accurately, that the sum of all attraction in the present solar system is to the sum of all repulsion, still present in the same, as 454:1. But then it directly contradicts the text of the lecture to which it is added as proof.

If then the notion of force, even in the case of a physicist like Helmholtz, gives rise to such confusion of ideas, this is the best proof that it is altogether insusceptible of scientific use in all branches of investigation which go beyond mathematical mechanics. In mechanics the causes of motion are taken as given and their origin is disregarded, only their effects being taken into account. Hence if a cause of motion is termed a force, this does no damage to mechanics as such; but it becomes the custom to transfer this term also to physics, chemistry, and biology, and then confusion is inevitable. We have already seen this and shall frequently see it again.

For the concept of work, see the next chapter.

GANDHI SMARAKA GRANTH
BANGALORE-1.

# THE MEASURE OF MOTION.—WORK[53]

"On the other hand, I have always found hitherto that the basic concepts in this field" (i.e., "the basic physical concepts of work and its unalterability") "seem very difficult to grasp for persons who have not gone through the school of mathematical mechanics, in spite of all zeal, all intelligence, and even a fairly high degree of natural-scientific knowledge. Moreover, it cannot be denied that they are abstractions of a quite peculiar kind. It was not without difficulty that even such an intellect as that of I. Kant succeeded in understanding them, as is proved by his polemic against Leibniz on this subject." So says Helmholtz. (*Pop. wiss. Vortr.*, II, Preface.)

According to this, we are venturing now into a very dangerous field, the more so since we cannot very well take the liberty of guiding the reader "through the school of mathematical mechanics." Perhaps, however, it will turn out that, where it is a question of concepts, dialectical thinking will carry us at least as far as mathematical calculation.

Galileo discovered, on the one hand, the law of falling, according to which the distances traversed by falling bodies are proportional to the squares of the times taken in falling. On the other hand, as we shall see, he put forward the not quite compatible proposition that the quantity of motion of a body (its *impeto* or *momento*) is determined by the mass and the velocity in such a way that for constant mass it is proportional to the velocity. Descartes adopted this latter proposition and made the product of the mass and the velocity of a moving body quite generally into the measure of its motion.

Huyghens had already found that, on elastic impact, the sum of the products of the masses and the squares of their velocities remains the same before and after impact, and that an analogous law holds good in various other cases of motion of bodies united into a system.

Leibniz was the first to realize that the Cartesian measure of motion was in contradiction to the law of falling. On the other hand, it could not be denied that in many cases the Cartesian measure was correct. Accordingly, Leibniz divided moving forces into dead forces and live ones. The dead were the "pushes" or "pulls" of bodies at rest, and their measure the product of the mass and the velocity with which the body would move if it were to pass from a state of rest to one of motion. On the other hand, he put forward as the measure of *vis viva*, of the real motion of a body, the product of the mass and the square of the velocity. This new measure of motion he derived directly from the law of falling. "The same force is required," so Leibniz concluded, "to raise a body of four pounds in weight one foot as to raise a body of one pound in weight four feet; but the distances are proportional to the square of the velocity, for when a body has fallen four feet, it attains twice the velocity reached on falling only one foot.

However, bodies on falling acquire the force for rising to the same height as that from which they fell; hence the forces are proportional to the square of the velocity." (Suter, *Geschichte der mathematischen Wissenschaften*, II, S. 367.)

But he showed further that the measure of motion *mv* is in contradiction to the Cartesian law of the constancy of the quantity of motion, for if it was really valid the force (i.e., the amount of motion) in nature would continually increase or diminish. He even suggested an apparatus (1690, *Acta Eruditorum*[54]) which, if the measure *mv* were correct, would be bound to act as a *perpetuum mobile* with continual gain of force, which, however, would be absurd. Recently, Helmholtz has again frequently employed this kind of argument.

The Cartesians protested with might and main and there developed a famous controversy lasting many years, in which Kant also participated in his very first work (*Gedanken von der wahren Schätzung der lebendigen Kräfte*, 1746), without, however, seeing clearly into the matter. Mathematicians today look down with a certain amount of scorn on this "barren" controversy which "dragged out for more than forty years and divided the mathematicians of Europe into two hostile camps, until at last d'Alembert by his *Traité de dynamique* (1743), as it were by a royal edict, put an end to the *useless verbal dispute*,* for it was nothing else." (Suter, *loc. cit.*, p. 366.)

It would, however, seem that a controversy could not rest entirely on a useless verbal dispute when it had been initiated by a Leibniz against a Descartes, and had occupied a man like Kant to such an extent that he devoted to it his first work, a fairly large volume. And in point of fact, how is it to be understood that motion has two contradictory measures, that on one occasion it is proportional to the velocity, and on another to the square of the velocity? Suter makes it very easy for himself; he says both sides were right and both were wrong; "nevertheless, the expression '*vis viva*' has endured up to the present day; *only it no longer serves as the measure of force*,* but is merely a term that was once adopted for the product of the mass and half the square of the velocity, a product so full of significance in mechanics." [P. 368.] Hence, $mv$ remains the measure of motion, and *vis viva* is only another expression for $\frac{mv^2}{2}$, concerning which formula we learn indeed that it is of great significance for mechanics, but now most certainly do not know what significance it has.

---

* Italics by Engels.—*Ed.*

Let us, however, take up the salvation-bringing *Traité de dynamique* and look more closely at d'Alembert's "royal edict"; it is to be found in the Preface. In the text, it says, the whole question does not occur, on account of *l'inutilité parfaite dont elle est pour la mécanique.*** This is quite correct for *purely mathematical* mechanics, in which, as in the case of Suter above, words used as designations are only other expressions, or names for algebraic formulæ, names in connection with which it is best not to think at all.—Nevertheless, since such important people have concerned themselves with the matter, he desires to examine it briefly in the Preface. Clearness of thought demands that by the force of moving bodies one should understand only their property of overcoming obstacles or resisting them. Hence, force is to be measured neither by $mv$ nor by $mv^2$, but solely by the obstacles and the resistance they offer.

---

* Italics by Engels.—*Ed.*

** Its absolute uselessness for mechanics.—*Ed.*

Now, there are, he says, three kinds of obstacles: (1) insuperable obstacles which totally destroy the motion, and for that very reason cannot be taken into account here; (2) obstacles whose resistance suffices to arrest the motion and to do so instantaneously: the case of equilibrium; (3) obstacles which only gradually arrest the motion: the case of retarded motion. "Everyone will agree that two bodies are in equilibrium when the products of their masses and virtual velocities, that is to say the velocities with which they tend to move, are equal on each side. Hence, in equilibrium the product of the mass and the velocity, or, what is the same thing, the quantity of motion, can represent the force. Everyone will agree also that in retarded motion the number of obstacles overcome is as the square of the velocity, so that, for instance, a body which has compressed a spring, with a certain velocity, could, with twice the velocity, compress simultaneously or successively not two, but four springs similar to the first, or nine with triple the velocity, and so on. Whence the partisans of *vis viva*" (the Leibnizians) "conclude that the force of bodies actually in motion is in general proportional to the product of the mass and the square of the velocity. Basically, what inconvenience could there be in forces being measured differently in equilibrium and in retarded motion since, if one wants to use only clear views in reasoning, one should understand by the word *force* only the effect produced in surmounting the obstacle or resisting it?" (Preface, pp. XIX-XX, of the original edition.)

D'Alembert, however, is far too much of a philosopher not to realize that the contradiction of a twofold measure of one and the same force is not to be got over so easily. Therefore, after repeating what is basically only the same thing as Leibniz had already said—for his *équilibre* is precisely the same thing as the "dead pushes" of Leibniz—he suddenly goes over to the side of the Cartesians and finds the following way out: the product *mv* can serve as a measure of force, even in the case of retarded motion, "if in this last case the force is measured, not by the absolute magnitude of the obstacles, but by the sum of the resistances of these same obstacles. For it could not be doubted that this sum of the resistances would be proportional to the quantity of motion (*mv*)*, since, by general agreement, the quantity of motion lost by the body at each instant is proportional to the product of the resistance and the infinitely small duration of the instant, and the sum of these products evidently makes up the total resistance." This latter mode of calculation seems to him the more natural one, "for an obstacle is only such in as much as it offers resistance, and, properly speaking, it is the sum of the resistances that constitutes the obstacle overcome; moreover, in estimating the force in this way, one has the advantage of having a common measure for the equilibrium and for the retarded motion." [P. XXI.] Still, everyone can take that as he likes. And so, believing he has solved the question, by what, as Suter himself acknowledges, is a mathematical blunder, he concludes with unkind remarks on the confusion reigning among his predecessors, and asserts that after the above remarks there is possible only a very futile metaphysical discussion or a still more discreditable purely verbal dispute.

---

* Added by Engels.—*Ed.*

D'Alembert's proposal for reaching a reconciliation amounts to the following calculation:

A mass 1, with velocity 1, compresses 1 spring in unit time.

A mass 1, with velocity 2, compresses 4 springs, but requires two units of time; i.e., only 2 springs per unit of time.

A mass 1, with velocity 3, compresses 9 springs in three units of time, i.e., only 3 springs per unit of time.

Hence if we divide the effect by the time required for it, we again come from $mv^2$ to $mv$.

This is the same argument that Catelan[55] in particular had already employed against Leibniz; it is true that a body with velocity 2 rises against gravity four times as high as one with velocity 1, but it requires double the time for it; consequently the amount of motion (die Bewegungsmenge) must be divided by the time, and =2, not 4. Curiously enough, this is also Suter's view, who indeed deprived the expression "*vis viva*" of all logical meaning and left it only a mathematical one. But this is natural. For Suter it is a question of saving the formula $mv$ in its significance as sole measure of the amount of motion; hence logically $mv^2$ is sacrificed in order to arise again transfigured in the heaven of mathematics.

However, this much is correct: Catelan's argument provides one of the bridges connecting $mv$ with $mv^2$, and so is of importance.

The mechanicians subsequent to d'Alembert by no means accepted his "royal edict," for his final verdict was indeed in favour of $mv$ as the measure of motion. They adhered to his expression of the distinction which Leibniz had already made between dead and live forces: $mv$ is valid for equilibrium, i.e., for statics; $mv^2$ is valid for motion against resistance, i.e., for dynamics. Although on the whole correct, the distinction in this form has, however, logically no more meaning than the famous decision of the N.C.O.: on duty always "to me," off duty always "me."[56] It is accepted tacitly, it just exists. We cannot alter it, and if a contradiction lurks in this double measure, what can we do about it?

Thus, for instance, Thomson and Tait say (*A Treatise on Natural Philosophy*, Oxford, 1867, p. 162): "The *quantity of motion*, or the *momentum*, of a rigid body moving without rotation is proportional to its mass and velocity conjointly. Thus a double mass, or a double velocity, would correspond to double quantity of motion." And immediately below that they say: "The *vis viva* or *kinetic energy* of a moving body is proportional to the mass and the square of the velocity conjointly."

The two contradictory measures of motion are put side by side in this very glaring form. Not so much as the slightest attempt is made to explain the contradiction, or even to disguise it. In the book by these two Scotsmen, thinking is forbidden, only calculation is permitted. No wonder that at least one of them, Tait, is accounted one of the most pious Christians of pious Scotland.

In Kirchhoff's *Vorlesungen über mathematische Mechanik*, the formulæ $mv$ and $mv^2$ do not occur at all *in this form.*

Perhaps Helmholtz will aid us. In his *Erhaltung der Kraft*[57] he proposes to express *vis viva* by $\frac{mv^2}{2}$ = a point, to which we shall return later. Then, on page 20 *et seq.*, he enumerates briefly the cases in which so far the principle of the conservation of *vis viva* (hence of $\frac{mv^2}{2}$) has been used already and is recognized. Included therein under No. 2 is "the transference of motions by incompressible solid and fluid bodies, in so far as friction or impact of inelastic materials does not occur. For these cases our general principle is usually expressed in the rule that motion propagated and altered by mechanical powers always decreases in intensity of force in the same proportion as it increases in velocity. If, therefore, we imagine a weight $m$ being raised with velocity $c$ by a machine in which a force for performing work is produced uniformly by some process or other, then with a different mechanical arrangement the weight $nm$ could be raised, but only with velocity $\frac{c}{n}$, so that in both cases the quantity of tensile force produced by the machine in unit time is represented by $mgc$, where $g$ is the intensity of the gravitational force."[58]

Thus, here too we have the contradiction that an "intensity of force," which decreases and increases in simple proportion to the velocity, has to serve as proof for the conservation of an intensity of force which decreases and increases in proportion to the square of the velocity.

In any case, it becomes evident here that $mv$ and $\frac{mv^2}{2}$ serve to determine two quite distinct processes, but we certainly knew that long ago, for $mv^2$ cannot equal $mv$, unless $v=1$. What has to be done is to make it comprehensible why motion should have a twofold measure, a thing which is surely just as impermissible in science as in commerce. Let us, therefore, attempt this in another way.

By $mv$, then, one measures "a motion propagated and altered by mechanical powers"; hence this measure holds good for the lever and all its derivative forms, for wheels, screws, etc., in short, for all machinery for the transference of motion. But from a very simple and by no means new consideration it becomes evident that in so far as $mv$ applies here, so also does $mv^2$. Let us take any mechanical contrivance in which the sums of the lever arms on the two sides are related to each other as 4 : 1, in which, therefore, a weight of 1 kg. holds a weight of 4 kg. in equilibrium. Hence, by a quite insignificant additional force on one arm of the lever we can raise 1 kg. by 20 metres; the same additional force, when applied to the other arm of the lever, raises 4 kg. a distance of 5 metres, and the preponderating weight sinks in the same time that the other weight requires for rising. Mass and velocity are inversely proportional to each other; $mv$, $1 \times 20 = m'v'$, $4 \times 5$. On the other hand, if we let each of the weights, after it has been raised, fall freely to the original level, then the one, 1 kg., after falling a distance of 20 metres (the acceleration due to gravity is put in round figures= 10 metres instead of 9.81 metres), attains a velocity of 20 metres; the other, 4 kg., after falling a distance of 5 metres, attains a velocity of 10 metres.[59]

$$mv^2 = 1 \times 20 \times 20 = 400 = m'v'^2 = 4 \times 10 \times 10 = 400.$$

On the other hand the times of fall are different: the 4 kg. traverse their 5 m. in 1 second, the 1 kg. traverses its 20 m. in 2 seconds. Friction and air resistance are, of course, neglected here.

But after each of the two bodies has fallen from its height, its motion ceases. Therefore, $mv$ appears here as the measure of simply transferred, hence lasting, mechanical motion, and $mv^2$ as the measure of the vanished mechanical motion.

Further, the same thing applies to the impact of perfectly elastic bodies: the sum both of $mv$ and of $mv^2$ is unaltered before and after impact. Both measures have the same validity.

This is not the case on impact of inelastic bodies. Here, too, the current elementary text-books (higher mechanics is hardly concerned at all any more with such trifles) teach that before and after impact the sum of $mv$ remains the same. On the other hand a loss of *vis viva* occurs, for if the sum of $mv^2$ after impact is subtracted from the sum of $mv^2$ *before* impact, there is under all circumstances a positive remainder. By this amount (or the half of it, according to the point of view) the *vis viva* is diminished owing both to the mutual penetration and to the change of form of the colliding bodies.—The latter is now clear and obvious, but not so the first assertion that the sum of $mv$ remains the same before and after impact. In spite of Suter, *vis viva* is motion, and if a part of it is lost, motion is lost. Consequently, either *mv* here incorrectly expresses the amount of motion (die Bewegungsmenge), or the above assertion is untrue. In general the whole theorem has been handed down from a period when there was as yet no inkling of the transformation of motion; when, therefore, a disappearance of mechanical motion was only conceded where there was no other way out. Thus, the equality here of the sum of *mv* before and after impact was taken as proved by the fact that no loss or gain of this sum had been introduced. If, however, the bodies lose *vis viva* in internal friction corresponding to their inelasticity, they also lose velocity, and the sum of *mv* after impact must be smaller than before. For it surely does not do to neglect internal friction in calculating *mv*, when it makes itself felt so clearly in calculating $mv^2$.

But this does not matter. Even if we admit the theorem, and calculate the velocity after impact, on the assumption that the sum of *mv* has remained the same, this decrease of the sum of $mv^2$ is still found. Here, therefore, *mv* and $mv^2$ conflict, and they do so by the difference of the mechanical motion that has actually disappeared. Moreover, the calculation itself shows that the sum of $mv^2$ expresses the amount of motion correctly, while the sum of *mv* expresses it incorrectly.

Such are pretty nearly all the cases in which *mv* is employed in mechanics. Let us now look at some cases in which $mv^2$ is employed.

When a cannon-ball is fired, it uses up in its flight an amount of motion that is proportional to $mv^2$, irrespective of whether it encounters a solid target or comes to a standstill owing to air resistance and gravitation. If a railway train runs into a stationary one, the violence of the collision, and the corresponding destruction, is proportional to its $mv^2$. Similarly, $mv^2$ serves wherever it is necessary to calculate the mechanical force required for overcoming a resistance.

But what is the meaning of this convenient phrase, so current in mechanics: overcoming a resistance?

If we overcome the resistance of gravity by raising a weight, there disappears an amount of motion, an amount of mechanical force, equal to that which can be produced anew by the direct or indirect fall of the raised weight from the height reached back to its original level. The amount is measured by half the product of the mass and square of the final velocity after falling, $\frac{mv^2}{2}$. What then occurred on raising the weight? Mechanical motion, or force, has disappeared as such. But it has not been annihilated; it has been converted into mechanical force of tension, to use Helmholtz's expression; into potential energy, as the moderns say; into ergal as Clausius calls it; and this can at any moment, by any mechanically appropriate means, be reconverted into the same amount of mechanical motion as was necessary to produce it. The potential energy is only the negative expression of the *vis viva*, and *vice versa*.

A 24-lb. cannon-ball moving with a velocity of 400 m. per second strikes the one-metre thick armour-plating of a warship and under these conditions has apparently no effect on the armour. Consequently an amount of mechanical motion has vanished equal to $\frac{mv^2}{2}$, i.e. (since 24 lbs. = 12 kg.)[60] $= 12 \times 400 \times 400 \times \frac{1}{2} =$ 960.000 kilogram-metres. What has become of it? A small portion has been expended in the concussion and molecular alteration of the armour-plate. A second portion goes in smashing the cannon-ball into innumerable fragments. But the greater part has been converted into heat and raises the temperature of the cannon-ball to red heat. When the Prussians, in making the crossing to Alsen in 1864, brought their heavy batteries into play against the armoured sides of the *Rolf Krake*,[61] after each hit they saw in the darkness the flare produced by the suddenly glowing shot. Even earlier, Whitworth had proved by experiment that explosive shells need no detonator when used against armoured warships; the glowing metal itself ignites the charge. Taking the mechanical equivalent of the unit of heat as 424 kilogram-metres, the amount of heat corresponding to the above-mentioned amount of mechanical motion is 2,264 units. The specific heat of iron = 0.1140; that is to say, the amount of heat that raises the temperature of 1 kg. of water by 1° C. (which serves as the unit of heat) suffices to raise the temperature of $\frac{1}{0.1140} =$ 8.772 kg. of iron by 1° C. Therefore the 2,264 heat-units mentioned above raise the temperature of 1 kg. of iron by $8.772 \times 2{,}264 = 19{,}860^\circ$ or 19,860 kg. of iron by 1° C. Since this amount of heat is distributed uniformly in the armour and the shot, the latter has its temperature raised by $\frac{19{,}860^\circ}{2 \times 12} = 828^\circ$, amounting to quite a good glowing heat. But since the foremost, striking end of the shot receives at any rate by far the greater part of the heat, certainly double that of the rear half, the former would be raised to a temperature of 1,104° C. and the latter to 552° C., which would fully suffice to explain the glowing effect even if we make a big deduction for the actual mechanical work performed on impact.

Mechanical motion also disappears in friction, to reappear as heat; it is well known that, by the most accurate possible measurement of the two mutually corresponding processes, Joule in Manchester and Colding in Copenhagen were the first to make an approximate experimental measurement of the mechanical equivalent of heat.

The same thing applies to the production of an electric current in a magneto-electrical machine by means of mechanical force, e.g., from a steam-engine. The amount of so-called electromotive force produced in a given time is proportional to the amount of mechanical motion used up in the same period, being equal to it if expressed in the same units. We can imagine this mechanical motion being produced, not by a steam-engine, but by a weight sinking under the pressure of gravity. The mechanical force that this is capable of supplying is measured by the *vis viva* that it would obtain on falling freely through the same distance, or by the force required to raise it again to the original height; in both cases $\frac{mv^2}{2}$.

Hence we find that mechanical motion has indeed a twofold measure, but also that each of these measures holds good for a very definitely demarcated series of phenomena. If already existing mechanical motion is transferred in such a way that it remains as mechanical motion, the transference takes place in proportion to the product of the mass and the velocity. If, however, it is transferred in such a way that it disappears as mechanical motion in order to reappear in the form of potential energy, heat, electricity, etc., in short, if it is converted into another form of motion, then the amount of this new form of motion is proportional to the product of the originally moving mass and the square of the velocity. In short, $mv$ is mechanical motion measured by mechanical motion; $\frac{mv^2}{2}$ is mechanical motion measured by its capacity to become converted into a definite amount of another form of motion. And, as we have seen, these two measures, because different, do not contradict each other.

It becomes clear from this that Leibniz's quarrel with the Cartesians was by no means a mere verbal dispute, and that d'Alembert's "royal edict" in point of fact settled nothing at all. D'Alembert might have spared himself his tirades on the unclearness of his predecessors, for he was just as unclear as they were. In fact, as long as it was not known what becomes of the apparently annihilated mechanical motion, the absence of clarity was inevitable. And as long as mathematical mechanicians like Suter remain obstinately shut in by the four walls of their special science, they are bound to remain just as unclear as d'Alembert and to fob us off with empty and contradictory phrases.

But how does modern mechanics express this conversion of mechanical motion into another form of motion, proportional in quantity to the former?—It has *performed work*, and indeed a definite amount of work.

But this does not exhaust the concept of work in the physical sense of the word. If, as in a steam or heat engine, heat is converted into mechanical motion, i.e., molecular motion is converted into mass motion, if heat breaks up a chemical compound, if it becomes converted into electricity in a thermopile, if an electric current liberates the elements of water from dilute sulphuric acid, or, conversely, if the motion (alias energy) set free in the chemical process of a generating cell takes the form of electricity and this in the closed circuit once more becomes converted into heat—in all these processes the form of motion that initiates the process, and which is converted by it into another form, performs work, and indeed an amount of work corresponding to its own amount.

Work, therefore, is change of form of motion regarded in its quantitative aspect.

But how so? If a raised weight remains suspended and at rest, is its potential energy during the period of rest also a form of motion? Certainly. Even Tait arrives at the conviction that potential energy is subsequently resolved into a form of actual motion (*Nature*)[62]. And, apart from that, Kirchhoff goes much further in saying (*Math. Mech.*, p. 32)[63]: "Rest is a special case of motion," and thus proves that he can not only calculate but can also think dialectically.

Hence, by a consideration of the two measures of mechanical motion, we arrive incidentally, easily, and almost as a matter of course, at the concept of work, which was described to us as being so difficult to comprehend without mathematical mechanics. At any rate, we now know more about it than from Helmholtz's lecture *Über die Erhaltung der Kraft* (1862), which was intended precisely "to make as clear as possible the basic physical concepts of work and its unalterability." All that we learn there about work is that it is something which is expressed in foot-pounds or in units of heat, and that the number of these foot-pounds or units of heat is invariable for a definite quantity of work; and, further, that besides mechanical forces and heat, chemical and electric forces can perform work, but that all these forces exhaust their capacity for work to the extent that they actually result in work. We learn also that it follows from this that the sum of all effective quantities of force in nature as a whole remains eternally and invariably the same throughout all the changes taking place in nature. The concept of work is neither developed, nor even defined*. And it is precisely the quantitative invariability of the magnitude of work which prevents him from realizing that the qualitative alteration, the change of form, is the basic condition for all physical work. And so Helmholtz can go so far as to assert that "friction and inelastic impact are processes in which *mechanical work is destroyed***

---

* We get no further by consulting Clerk Maxwell. He says (*Theory of Heat*, 4th edition, London, 1875, p. 87): "Work is done when resistance is overcome," and on p. 185, "The energy of a body is its capacity for doing work." That is all that we learn about it. [*Note by Engels.*]

** Italics by Engels.—*Ed.*

and heat is produced instead." (*Pop. Vortr.*, II, S. 166.) Just the contrary. Here mechanical work is not *destroyed*, here mechanical work is *performed*. It is mechanical *motion* that is *apparently* destroyed. But mechanical motion *can* never perform even a millionth part of a kilogram-metre of work, without apparently being destroyed as such, without becoming converted into another form of motion.

But, as we have seen, the capacity for work contained in a given amount of mechanical motion is what is known as its *vis viva*, and until recently was measured by $mv^2$. Here, however, a new contradiction arose. Let us listen to Helmholtz. (*Erhaltung der Kraft*, S. 9.) We read there that the magnitude of work can be expressed by a weight $m$ being raised to a height $h$, when, if the force of gravity is put as $g$, the magnitude of work $= mgh$. For the body $m$ to rise freely to the vertical height $h$, it requires a velocity $v = \sqrt{2gh}$, and it attains the same velocity on falling. Consequently, $mgh = \frac{mv^2}{2}$, and Helmholtz proposes "to take the magnitude $\frac{mv^2}{2}$ as the quantity of *vis viva*, whereby it becomes identical with the measure of the magnitude of work. From the viewpoint of how the concept of *vis viva* has been applied hitherto . . . this change has no significance, but it will offer us essential advantages in the future."

It is scarcely to be believed. In 1847, Helmholtz was so little clear about the mutual relations of *vis viva* and work, that he even fails to notice at all how he transforms the former proportional measure of *vis viva* into its absolute measure, and remains quite unconscious of the important discovery he has made by his audacious handling, recommending his $\frac{mv^2}{2}$ only because of its convenience as compared with $mv^2$ ! And it is as a matter of convenience that mechanicians have given general currency to $\frac{mv^2}{2}$. Only gradually was $\frac{mv^2}{2}$ also proved mathematically. Naumann (*Allg. Chemie*, S. 7) gives an algebraical proof, Clausius (*Mech. Wärmetheorie*, 2. Aufl., I, S. 18), an analytical one, which is then to be met with in another form and with a different method of deduction in Kirchhoff (*loc. cit.*, p. 27).

Clerk Maxwell (*loc. cit.*, p. 88) gives an elegant algebraical deduction of $\frac{mv^2}{2}$ from $mv$. This does not prevent our two Scotsmen, Thomson and Tait, from asserting (*loc. cit.*, p. 163): "The *vis viva*, or kinetic energy, of a moving body is proportional to the mass and the square of the velocity conjointly. If we adopt the same units of mass and velocity as before (namely, unit of mass moving with unit velocity), there is *particular advantage** in defining kinetic energy as *half* the product of the mass and the square of its velocity." Here, therefore, we find that not only the ability to think, but also to calculate, has come to a standstill in the two foremost mechanicians of Scotland. The particular advantage, the convenience of the formula, accomplishes everything in the most beautiful fashion.

For us, who have seen that *vis viva* is nothing but the capacity of a given amount of mechanical motion to perform work, it is obvious on the face of it that the expression in mechanical terms of this capacity for work and the work actually performed by the latter must be equal to each other; and that, consequently, if $\frac{mv^2}{2}$ measures the work, the *vis viva* must likewise be measured by $\frac{mv^2}{2}$. But that is what happens in science. Theoretical mechanics arrives at the concept of *vis viva*, the practical mechanics of the engineer arrives at the concept of work and forces it on the theoreticians. And, immersed in their calculations, the theoreticians have become so unaccustomed to thinking that for years they fail to recognize the connection between the two concepts, measuring one of them by $mv^2$, the other by $\frac{mv^2}{2}$, and finally accepting $\frac{mv^2}{2}$ for both, not from comprehension, but for the sake of simplicity of calculation!*

---

* Italics by Engels.—*Ed.*

---

* The word "work" and the corresponding idea is derived from English engineers. But in English, practical work is called "work," while work in the economic sense is called "labour." Hence, physical work also is termed "work," thereby excluding all confusion with work in the economic sense. This is not the case in German; therefore it has been possible in recent pseudo-scientific literature to make various peculiar applications of work in the physical sense to economic conditions of labour and *vice versa*. But we have also the word "*Werk*" which, like the English word "work," is excellently adapted for signifying physical work. Economics, however, being a sphere far too remote from our natural scientists, they will scarcely decide to introduce it to replace the word *Arbeit*, which has already obtained general currency—unless, perhaps,when it is too late. Only Clausius has made the attempt to retain the expression "*Werk*," at least alongside the expression "*Arbeit*." [*Note by Engels*.]

# TIDAL FRICTION. KANT AND THOMSON—TAIT.

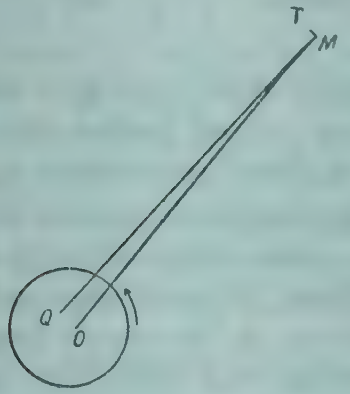
## ROTATION OF THE EARTH AND LUNAR ATTRACTION[64]

Thomson and Tait, *Nat. Philos.*, I, p. 191 (paragraph 276):

"There are also indirect resistances,[65] owing to friction impeding the tidal motions, on all bodies which, like the earth, have portions of their free surfaces covered by liquid, which, as long as these bodies move relatively to neighbouring bodies, must keep drawing off energy from their relative motions. Thus, if we consider, in the first place, the action of the moon alone, on the earth with its oceans, lakes, and rivers, we perceive that it must tend to equalize the periods of the earth's rotation about its axis, and of the revolution of the two bodies about their centre of inertia; because as long as these periods differ, the tidal action of the earth's surface must keep subtracting energy from their motions. To view the subject more in detail, and, at the same time, to avoid unnecessary complications, let us suppose the moon to be a uniform spherical body. The mutual action and reaction of gravitation between her mass and the earth's will be equivalent to a single force in some line through her centre; *and must be such as to impede the earth's rotation as long as this is performed in a shorter period than the moon's motion round the earth.** It must, therefore, lie in some such direction as the line MQ in the diagram, which represents, necessarily with enormous exaggeration, its deviation, OQ, from the earth's centre. Now the actual force on the moon in the line MQ may be regarded as consisting of a force in the line MO towards the earth's centre, sensibly equal in amount to the whole force, and a comparatively very small force in the line MT perpendicular to MO. This latter is very nearly tangential to the moon's path, and is in the direction *with* her motion. Such a force, if suddenly commencing to act, would, in the first place, increase the moon's velocity; but after a certain time she would have moved so much farther from the earth, in virtue of this acceleration, as to have lost, by moving against the earth's attraction, as much velocity as she had gained by the tangential accelerating force. The effect of a continued tangential force, acting with the motion, but so small in amount as to make only a small deviation at any moment from the circular form of the orbit, is to gradually increase the distance from the central body, and to cause as much again as its own amount of work to be done against the attraction of the central mass, by the kinetic energy of motion lost. The circumstances will be readily understood by considering this motion round the central body in a very gradual spiral path tending outwards. Provided the law of force is the inverse square

---

* Italics by Engels.—*Ed.*



of the distance, the tangential component of gravity against the motion will be twice as great as the disturbing tangential force in the direction with the motion; and therefore one-half of the amount of work done against the former, is done by the latter, and the other half by kinetic energy taken from the motion. The integral effect on the moon's motion, of the particular disturbing cause now under consideration, is most easily found by using the principle of moments of momenta. Thus we see that as much moment of momentum is gained in any time by the motions of the centres of inertia, of the moon and earth relatively to their common centre of inertia, as is lost by the earth's rotation about its axis. The sum of the moments of momentum of the centres of inertia of the moon and earth as moving at present, is about 4.45 times the present moment of momentum of the earth's rotation. The average plane of the former is the ecliptic; and therefore the axes of the two moments are inclined to one another at the average angle of 23° 27.5′, which, as we are neglecting the sun's influence on the plane of the moon's motion, may be taken as the actual inclination of the two axes at present. The resultant, or whole moment of momentum, is therefore 5.38 times that of the earth's present rotation, and its axis is inclined 19°13′ to the axis of the earth. Hence the ultimate tendency of the *tides** is to reduce the earth and the moon to a simple uniform rotation with this resultant moment round this resultant axis, as if they were two parts of one rigid body: in which condition the moon's distance would be increased (approximately) in the ratio 1 : 1.46, being the ratio of the square of the present moment of momentum of the centres of inertia to the square of the whole moment of momentum; and the period of revolution in the ratio 1 : 1.77, being that of the cubes of the same quantities. The distance would therefore be increased to 347,100 miles, and the period lengthened to 48.36 days. Were there no other body in the universe but the earth and the moon, these two bodies might go on moving thus for ever, in circular orbits round their common centre of inertia, and the earth rotating about its axis in the same period, so as always to turn the same face to the moon, and, therefore, to have all the liquids at its surface at rest relatively to the solid. But the existence of the sun would prevent any such state of things from being permanent. There would be solar tides—twice high water and twice low water—in the period of the earth's revolution relatively to the sun (that is to say, twice in the solar day, or, which would be the same thing, the month). This could not go on without *loss of energy by fluid friction*.* It is not easy to trace the whole course of the disturbance in the earth's and moon's motions which this cause would produce, but its ultimate effect must be to bring the earth, moon, and sun to rotate round their common centre of inertia, like parts of one rigid body."

---

* Italics by Engels.—*Ed.*

Kant, in 1754, was the first to put forward the view that the rotation of the earth is retarded by tidal friction and that this effect will only reach its conclusion "when its (the earth's) surface will be at relative rest in relation to the moon, i.e., when it will rotate on its axis in the same period that the moon takes to revolve round the earth, and consequently will always turn the same side to the latter."[66] He held the view that this retardation had its origin in tidal friction alone, arising, therefore, from the presence of fluid masses on the earth: "If the earth were a quite solid mass without any fluid, neither the attraction of the sun nor of the moon would do anything to alter its free axial rotation; for it draws with equal force both the eastern and western parts of the terrestrial sphere and so does not cause any inclination either to the one or to the other side; consequently it allows the earth full freedom to continue this rotation unhindered as if there were no external influence on it."[67] Kant could rest content with this result. All scientific prerequisites were lacking at that time for penetrating deeper into the effect of the moon on the rotation of the earth. Indeed, it required almost a hundred years before Kant's theory obtained general recognition, and still longer before it was discovered that the ebb and flow of the tides are only the *visible* aspect of the effect exercised by the attraction of the sun and moon on the rotation of the earth.

---

* Italics by Engels.—*Ed.*

This more general conception of the matter is just that which has been developed by Thomson and Tait. The attraction of the moon and sun affects not only the fluids of the terrestrial body or its surface, but the whole mass of the earth in general in a manner that hinders the rotation of the earth. As long as the period of the earth's rotation does not coincide with the period of the moon's revolution round the earth, so long the attraction of the moon—to deal with this alone first of all—has the effect of bringing the two periods closer and closer together. If the rotational period of the (relative) central body were longer than the period of revolution of the satellite, the former would be gradually shortened; if it were shorter, as is the case for the earth, it would be lengthened. But neither in the one case will kinetic energy be created out of nothing, nor in the other will it be annihilated. In the first case, the satellite would approach closer to the central body and shorten its period of revolution, in the second it would increase its distance from it and acquire a longer period of revolution. In the first case, the satellite by approaching the central body loses exactly as much potential energy as the central body gains in kinetic energy from the accelerated rotation; in the second case the satellite, by increasing its distance, gains exactly the same amount of potential energy as the central body loses in kinetic energy of rotation. The total amount of dynamic energy, potential and kinetic, present in the earth-moon system remains the same; the system is fully conservative.

It is seen that this theory is entirely independent of the physico-chemical constitution of the bodies concerned. It is derived from the general laws of motion of free heavenly bodies, the connection between them being produced by attraction in proportion to their masses and in inverse proportion to the square of the distances between them. The theory has obviously arisen as a generalization of Kant's theory of tidal friction, and is even presented here by Thomson and Tait as its substantiation on mathematical lines. But in reality—and remarkably enough the authors have simply no inkling of this—in reality it excludes the special case of tidal friction.

Friction is hindrance to the motion of masses, and for centuries it was regarded as the destruction of such motion, and therefore of kinetic energy. We now know that friction and impact are the two forms in which kinetic energy is converted into molecular energy, into heat. In all friction, therefore, kinetic energy as such is lost in order to reappear, not as potential energy in the sense of dynamics, but as molecular motion in the definite form of heat. The kinetic energy lost by friction is, therefore, in the first place *really lost* for the dynamic aspects of the system concerned. It can only become dynamically effective again if it is *reconverted* from the form of heat into kinetic energy.

How then does the matter stand in the case of tidal friction? It is obvious that here also the whole of the kinetic energy communicated to the masses of water on the earth's surface by lunar attraction is converted into heat, whether by friction of the water particles among themselves in virtue of the viscosity of the water, or by friction at the rigid surface of the earth and the comminution of rocks which stand up against the tidal motion. Of this heat there is reconverted into kinetic energy only the infinitesimally small part that contributes to evaporation at the surface of the water. But even this infinitesimally small amount of kinetic energy, ceded by the total earth-moon system to a part of the earth's surface, remains first of all at the earth's surface and is subject to the conditions prevailing there, and these conditions lead to all energy active there reaching one and the same final destiny: final conversion into heat and radiation into space.

Consequently, to the extent that tidal friction indisputably has an impeding effect on the rotation of the earth, the kinetic energy used for this purpose is absolutely lost to the dynamic earth-moon system. It can therefore not reappear within this system as dynamic potential energy. In other words, of the kinetic energy expended in impeding the earth's rotation by means of the attraction of the moon, only that part that acts on the *solid mass* of the earth's body can entirely reappear as dynamic potential energy, and hence be compensated for by a corresponding increase of the distance of the moon. On the other hand, the part that acts on the fluid masses of the earth can do so only in so far as it does not set these masses themselves into a motion opposite in direction to that of the earth's rotation, for such a motion is *wholly* converted into heat and is finally lost to the system by radiation.

What holds good for tidal friction at the surface of the earth is equally valid for the often hypothetically assumed tidal friction of a supposed fluid core of the earth.

The peculiar part of the matter is that Thomson and Tait do not notice that in order to establish the theory of tidal friction they are putting forward a theory that proceeds from the tacit assumption that the earth is *an entirely rigid* body, and so excludes any possibility of tides and hence also of tidal friction.

# HEAT[68]

As we have seen, there are two forms in which mechanical motion, *vis viva*, disappears. The first is its conversion into mechanical potential energy, for instance on lifting a weight. This form has the peculiarity that not only can it be re-transformed into mechanical motion—this mechanical motion, moreover, having the same *vis viva* as the original one—but also that it is capable only of this change of form. Mechanical potential energy can never produce heat or electricity, unless it has been converted first into real mechanical motion. To use Clausius' term, it is a "reversible process."

The second form in which mechanical motion disappears is in friction and impact—which differ only in degree. Friction can be conceived as a series of small impacts occurring successively and side by side, impact as friction concentrated at one spot and in a single moment of time. Friction is chronic impact, impact is acute friction. The mechanical motion that disappears here, disappears *as such*. It cannot be restored immediately out of itself. The process is not directly reversible. The motion has been transformed into qualitatively different forms of motion, into heat, electricity—into forms of molecular motion.

Hence, friction and impact lead from the motion of masses, the subject-matter of mechanics, to molecular motion, the subject-matter of physics.

In calling[69] physics the mechanics of molecular motion, it has not been overlooked that this expression by no means covers the entire field of contemporary physics. On the contrary. Ether vibrations, which are responsible for the phenomena of light and radiant heat, are certainly not molecular motions in the modern sense of the word. But their terrestrial actions concern molecules first and foremost: refraction of light, polarization of light, etc., are determined by the molecular constitution of the bodies concerned. Similarly the most important scientists now almost unanimously regard electricity as a motion of ether particles, and Clausius even says of heat that in "the movement of ponderable atoms" (it would be better to say molecules) ". . . the ether within the body can also participate." (*Mechan. Wärmetheorie*, I, S. 22.) But in the phenomena of electricity and heat, once again it is primarily molecular motions that have to be considered; it could not be otherwise, so long as our knowledge of the ether is so small. But when we have got so far as to be able to present the mechanics of the ether, this subject will include, of course, a great deal that is now of necessity allocated to physics.

The physical processes in which the structure of the molecules is altered, or even destroyed, will be dealt with later on. They form the transition from physics to chemistry.

Only with molecular motion does the change of form of motion acquire complete freedom. Whereas, at the boundary of mechanics the motion of masses can assume only a few other forms—heat or electricity—here, a quite different, lively capacity for change of form is to be seen. Heat passes into electricity in the thermopile, it becomes identical with light at a certain stage of radiation, and in its turn reproduces mechanical motion. Electricity and magnetism, a twin pair like heat and light, not only become transformed into each other, but also into heat and light as well as mechanical motion. And this takes place in such definite measure relations that a given amount of any one of these forms can be expressed in any other—in kilogram-metres, in heat-units, in volts,[70] and similarly any unit of measurement can be translated into any other.

---

The practical discovery of the conversion of mechanical motion into heat is so very ancient that it can be taken as marking the beginning of human history. Whatever discoveries, in the way of tools and domestication of animals, may have preceded it, the making of fire by friction was the first instance of men pressing a non-living force of nature into their service. Popular superstitions today still show how greatly the almost immeasurable import of this gigantic advance impressed itself on the mind of mankind. Long after the introduction of the use of bronze and iron the invention of the stone knife, the first tool, continued to be celebrated, all religious sacrifices being performed with stone knives. According to the Jewish legend, Joshua decreed that men born in the wilderness should be circumcised with stone knives; the Celts and Germans used only stone knives in their human sacrifices. But all this long ago passed into oblivion. It was different with the making of fire by friction. Long after other methods of producing fire had become known, every sacred fire among the majority of peoples had to be obtained by friction. But even today, in the majority of the European countries the popular superstition persists that fire with miraculous powers (e.g., our German bonfire against epidemics) may be lighted only by means of friction. Thus, down to our own day, the grateful memory of the first great victory of mankind over nature lives on—half unconsciously—in popular superstition, in the relics of heathen-mythological recollections among the most educated peoples in the world.

However, the process of making fire by friction is still one-sided. By it mechanical motion is converted into heat. To complete the process, it must be reversed; heat must be converted into mechanical motion. Only then is justice done to the dialectics of the process, the cycle of the process being completed—for the first stage, at least. But history has its own pace, and however dialectical its course may be in the last analysis, dialectics has often to wait for history a fairly long time. Many thousands of years must have elapsed between the discovery of fire by friction and the time when Hero of Alexandria (*ca.* 120 B.C.) invented a machine which was set in rotary motion by the steam issuing from it. And almost another two thousand years elapsed before the first steam-engine was built, the first apparatus for the conversion of heat into really useable mechanical motion.

The steam-engine was the first really international invention, and this fact, in turn, testifies to a mighty historical advance. The Frenchman, Papin, invented the first steam-engine, and he invented it in Germany. It was the German, Leibniz, scattering around him, as always, brilliant ideas, without caring whether the merit for them would be awarded to him or someone else, who, as we know now from Papin's correspondence (published by Gerland),[71] gave him the main idea of the machine: the employment of a cylinder and piston. Soon after that, the Englishmen, Savery and Newcomen, invented similar machines; finally, their fellow-countryman, Watt, by introducing a separate condenser, brought the steam-engine in principle up to the level of today. The cycle of inventions in this sphere was completed; the conversion of heat into mechanical motion was achieved. What came afterwards were improvements in details.

Practice, therefore, solved after its own fashion the problem of the relations between mechanical motion and heat. It had, to begin with, converted the first into the second, and then it converted the second into the first. But how did matters stand in regard to theory?

The situation was pitiable enough. Although it was just in the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries that innumerable accounts of travel appeared, teeming with descriptions of savage peoples who knew no way of producing fire other than by friction, yet physicists were almost uninterested in it; they were equally indifferent to the steam-engine during the whole of the eighteenth century and the first decades of the nineteenth. For the most part they were satisfied simply to record the facts.

Finally, in the twenties [of the nineteenth century], Sadi Carnot took the matter in hand, and indeed so very skilfully that his best calculations, afterwards presented by Clapeyron in geometrical form, have retained their validity to the present day in the works of Clausius and Clerk Maxwell. Sadi Carnot almost got to the bottom of the question. It was not the lack of factual data that prevented him from completely solving it, but solely a preconceived *false theory*. Moreover, this false theory was not one which had been forced upon physicists by some variety of malicious philosophy, but was one concocted by the physicists themselves, by means of their own naturalistic mode of thought, allegedly so very superior to the metaphysical-philosophical method.

In the seventeenth century heat was regarded, at any rate in England, as a property of bodies, as "a *motion** of a particular kind, the nature of which has never been explained in a satisfactory manner." That is what Th. Thomson called it, two years before the discovery of the mechanical theory of heat. (*Outline of the Sciences of Heat and Electricity*, 2nd edition, London, 1840 [281].) But in the eighteenth century the view came more and more to the forefront that heat, as also light, electricity, and magnetism, is a special substance, and that all these peculiar substances differ from ordinary matter in having no weight, in being imponderable.

---

* Italics by Engels.—*Ed.*

# ELECTRICITY*

Electricity, like heat, only in a different way, has also a certain omnipresent character. Hardly any change can occur on the earth without being accompanied by electrical phenomena. If water evaporates, if a flame burns, if two different metals, or two metals of different temperature, touch, or if iron comes into contact with a solution of copper sulphate, and so on, electrical processes take place simultaneously with the more apparent physical and chemical phenomena. The more exactly we investigate natural processes of the most diverse nature, the more do we find evidence of electricity. In spite of its omnipresence, in spite of the fact that for half a century electricity has become more and more pressed into the industrial service of mankind, it remains precisely that form of motion the nature of which is still enveloped in the greatest obscurity. The discovery of the galvanic current is approximately

---

* For the factual material in this chapter we rely mainly on Wiedemann's *Lehre vom Galvanismus und Elektromagnetismus*, 2 B-de in 3 Abt., 2. Auflage, Braunschweig, 1872-74.

In *Nature*, June 15, 1882, there is a reference to this "admirable treatise, which in its forthcoming shape, with electro-statics added, will be the greatest experimental treatise on electricity in existence."[72] [*Note by Engels.*]

25 years younger than that of oxygen and is at least as significant for the theory of electricity as the latter discovery was for chemistry. Yet what a difference obtains even today between the two fields! In chemistry, thanks especially to Dalton's discovery of atomic weights, there is order, relative certainty about what has been achieved, and systematic, almost planned, attack on the territory still unconquered, comparable to the regular siege of a fortress. In the theory of electricity there is a barren lumber of ancient, doubtful experiments, neither definitely confirmed nor definitely refuted; an uncertain fumbling in the dark; unco-ordinated research and experiment on the part of numerous isolated individuals, who attack the unknown territory with their scattered forces like the attack of a swarm of nomadic horsemen. It must be admitted, indeed, that in the sphere of electricity a discovery like that of Dalton, giving the whole science a central point and a firm basis for research, is still to seek. It is essentially this confused state of the theory of electricity, which for the time being makes it impossible to establish a comprehensive theory, that is responsible for the fact that a one-sided empiricism prevails in this sphere, an empiricism which as far as possible forbids itself thought, and which precisely for that reason not only thinks incorrectly but also is incapable of faithfully pursuing the facts or even of reporting them faithfully, and which, therefore, becomes transformed into the opposite of true empiricism.

If in general those natural scientists who cannot say anything bad enough of the crazy *a priori* speculations of the German philosophy of nature are to be recommended to read the theoretico-physical works of the empirical school, not only of the contemporary but even of a much later period, this holds good quite especially for the theory of electricity. Let us take a work of the year 1840: *An Outline of the Sciences of Heat and Electricity*, by Thomas Thomson.[73] Old Thomson was indeed an authority in his day; moreover he had already at his disposal a very considerable part of the work of the greatest electrician so far—Faraday. Yet his book contains at least just as crazy things as the corresponding section of the much older Hegelian philosophy of nature. The description of the electric spark, for instance, might have been translated directly from the corresponding passage in Hegel. Both enumerate all the wonders that people sought to discover in the electric spark, prior to knowledge of its real nature and manifold diversity, and which have now been shown to be mainly special cases or errors. More than that, Thomson recounts quite seriously on p. 446 Dessaigne's cock-and-bull stories, such as that, with a rising barometer and falling thermometer, glass, resin, silk, etc., become negatively electrified on immersion in mercury, but positively if instead the barometer is falling and the temperature rising; that in summer gold and several other metals become positive on warming and negative on cooling, but in winter the reverse; that with a high barometer and northerly wind they are strongly electric, positive if the temperature is rising and negative if it is falling, etc. So much for the treatment of the facts. As regards *a priori* speculation, Thomson favours us with the following theory of the electric spark, derived from no lesser person than Faraday himself: "The spark is a discharge or lowering of the polarized inductive state of many dielectric particles, by a particular action of a few of the particles occupying a very small and limited space. Faraday conceives that the few particles where the discharge occurs are not merely pushed apart, but assume a peculiar state, a highly exalted condition for the time; that is to say, have thrown upon them all the surrounding forces in succession, and rising up to proportionate intensity of condition perhaps equal to that of chemically combining atoms; discharge the powers, possibly in the same manner as they do theirs, by some operation at present unknown to us; and so the end of the whole. The ultimate effect is exactly as if a metallic particle had been put into the place of the discharging particles, and it does not seem impossible that the principles of action, in both cases, may hereafter prove to be the same."[74] "I have," adds Thomson, "given this explanation of Faraday's in his own words, because I do not clearly understand it." This will certainly have been the experience of other persons also, quite as much as when they read in Hegel that in the electric spark "the special materiality of the charged body does not as yet enter into the process but is determined within it only in an elementary and spiritual way," and that electricity is "the anger, the effervescence, proper to the body," its "angry self" that "is exhibited by every body when excited." (*Naturphilosophie*, paragraph 324, addendum.) Yet the basic thought of both Hegel and Faraday is the same. Both oppose the idea that electricity is not a state of matter but a special, distinct variety of matter. And since in the spark electricity is apparently exhibited as independent, free, separated from any foreign material substratum, and yet perceptible to the senses, they arrive at the necessity, in the state of science at the time, of having to conceive of the spark as the transient phenomenal form of a "force" momentarily freed from all matter. For us, of course, the riddle is solved, since we know that on the spark discharge between metal electrodes real "metallic particles" leap across, and hence "the special materiality of the charged body" in actual fact "enters into the process."

As is well known, electricity and magnetism, like heat and light, were at first regarded as special imponderable substances. As far as electricity is concerned, it is well known that the view soon developed that there are two opposing substances, two "fluids," one positive and one negative, which in the normal state neutralize each other, until they are forced apart by a so-called "electric force of separation." It is then possible to charge two bodies, one with positive, the other with negative electricity; on uniting them by a third conducting body equalization occurs, either suddenly or by means of a continuous current, according to circumstances. The sudden equalization appeared very simple and comprehensible, but the current offered difficulties. The simplest hypothesis, that the current in every case is a movement of either purely positive or purely negative electricity, was opposed by Fechner, and in more detail by Weber, with the view that in every closed circuit two equal currents of positive and negative electricity flow in opposite directions in channels lying side by side between the ponderable molecules of the bodies. Weber's detailed mathematical working out of this theory finally arrives at the result that a function, of no interest to us here, is multiplied by a magnitude $\frac{1}{r}$, where $\frac{1}{r}$ denotes "*the ratio . . . of the unit of electricity to the milligram.*"* (Wiedemann, *Lehre vom Galvanismus, etc.*, 2. Aufl., III, S. 569.) The ratio to a measure of weight can naturally only be a weight ratio. Hence one-sided empiricism had already to such an extent forgotten the practice of thought in calculating that here it even makes the imponderable electricity ponderable and introduces its weight into the mathematical calculation.

The formulæ derived by Weber sufficed only within certain limits, and Helmholtz, in particular, only a few years ago calculated from them results that come into conflict with the principle of the conservation of energy. In opposition to Weber's hypothesis of the double current flowing in opposite directions, C. Neumann in 1871 put forward the other hypothesis that in the current only one of the two electricities, for instance the positive, moves, while the other, negative one, remains firmly bound up with the mass of the body. On this Wiedemann includes the remark: "This hypothesis could be linked up with that of Weber if to Weber's supposed double current of electric masses $\pm\frac{1}{2}e$ flowing in opposite directions there was added a further *current of neutral electricity*,* externally inactive, which carried with it amounts of electricity $\pm\frac{1}{2}e$ in the direction of the positive current." (III, p. 577.)

---

* Italics by Engels.—*Ed.*

This proposition is once again characteristic of one-sided empiricism. In order to bring about the flow of electricity at all, it is decomposed into positive and negative. All attempts, however, to explain the current with these two substances, meet with difficulties: both the assumption that only one of them is present in every case in the current and that the two of them flow in opposite directions simultaneously, and, finally, the third assumption also that one flows and the other is at rest. If we adopt this last assumption how are we to explain the inexplicable idea that negative electricity, which is mobile enough in the electrostatic machine and the Leyden jar, in the current is firmly united with the mass of the body? Quite simply. Besides the positive current $+e$, flowing through the wire to the right, and the negative current, $-e$, flowing to the left, we make yet another current, this time of neutral electricity, $\pm\frac{1}{2}e$, flow to the right. First we assume that the two electricities, to be able to flow at all, must be separated from each other; and then, in order to explain the phenomena that occur on the flow of the separated electricities, we assume that they can also flow unseparated. First we make a supposition to explain a particular phenomenon, and at the first difficulty encountered we make a second supposition which directly negates the first one. What must be the sort of philosophy that these gentlemen have the right to complain of?

However, alongside this view of the material nature of electricity, there soon appeared a second view, according to which it is to be regarded as a mere state of the body, a "force" or, as we would say today, a special form of motion. We saw above that Hegel, and later Faraday, adhered to this view. After the discovery of the mechanical equivalent of heat had finally disposed of the idea of a special "heat stuff," and heat was shown to be a molecular motion, the next step was to treat electricity also according to the new method and to attempt to determine its mechanical equivalent. This attempt was fully successful. Particularly owing to the experiments of Joule, Favre, and Raoult, not only was the mechanical and thermal equivalent of the so-called "electromotive force" of the galvanic current established, but also its complete equivalence with the energy liberated by chemical processes in the generating cell or used up in the electrolytic cell. This made the assumption that electricity is a special material fluid more and more untenable.

The analogy, however, between heat and electricity was not perfect. The galvanic current still differed in very essential respects from the conduction of heat. It was still not possible to say *what* it was that moved in the electrically affected bodies. The assumption of a mere molecular vibration as in the case of heat seemed insufficient. In view of the enormous velocity of motion of electricity, even exceeding that of light,[75] it remained difficult to overcome the view that here some material substance is in motion between the molecules of the body. Here the most recent theories put forward by Clerk Maxwell (1864), Hankel (1865), Reynard (1870), and Edlund (1872) are in complete agreement with the assumption, already advanced for the first time in 1846 as a suggestion by Faraday, that electricity is a motion of an elastic medium permeating the whole of space and hence all bodies as well, the discrete particles of which medium repel one another according to the law of the inverse square of the distance. In other words, it is a motion of ether particles, and the molecules of the body take part in this motion. As to the manner of this motion, the various theories are divergent; those of Maxwell, Hankel, and Reynard, taking as their basis modern investigations of vortex motion, explain it, too, in various ways from vortices, so that the vortex of old Descartes also once more comes into favour in an increasing number of new fields. We refrain from going more closely into the details of these theories. They differ strongly from one another and they will certainly still experience many transformations. But a decisive advance appears to lie in their common basic conception: that electricity is a motion of the particles of the luminiferous ether that penetrates all ponderable matter, this motion reacting on the molecules of the body. This conception reconciles the two earlier ones. According to it, in electrical phenomena it is indeed something substantial that moves, something different from ponderable matter. But this substance is not electricity itself, which in fact proves rather to be a form of motion, although not a form of the immediate, direct motion of ponderable matter. While, on the one hand, the ether theory shows a way of getting over the primitive clumsy idea of two opposed electrical fluids, on the other hand it gives a prospect of explaining *what* the real, material substratum of electrical motion is, *what* sort of a thing it is whose motion produces electrical phenomena.

The ether theory has already had *one* decisive success. As is well known, there is at least one point where electricity directly alters the motion of light: it rotates the latter's plane of polarization. On the basis of his theory mentioned above, Clerk Maxwell calculates that the electric specific inductive capacity of a body is equal to the square of its index of refraction. Boltzmann has investigated dielectric constants of various non-conductors and he found that in sulphur, rosin, and paraffin, the square roots of these constants were respectively equal to their indices of refraction. The highest deviation—in sulphur—amounted to only 4 per cent. Consequently, the Maxwellian ether theory in this particular has hereby been experimentally confirmed.

It will, however, require a lengthy period and cost much labour before new series of experiments extract a firm kernel from these mutually contradictory hypotheses. Until then, or until the ether theory, too, is perhaps supplanted by an entirely new one, the theory of electricity finds itself in the uncomfortable position of having to employ a mode of expression which it itself admits to be false. Its whole terminology is still based on the idea of two electric fluids. It still speaks quite unashamedly of "electric masses flowing in the bodies," of "a division of electricities in every molecule," etc. This is a misfortune which for the most part, as already said, follows inevitably from the present transitional state of science, but which also, with the one-sided empiricism that prevails especially in this branch of investigation, contributes not a little to preserving the existing confusion of thought.

The opposition between so-called static or frictional electricity and dynamic electricity or galvanism can now be regarded as bridged over, since we have learned to produce continuous currents by means of the electric machine and, conversely, by means of the galvanic current to produce so-called static electricity, to charge Leyden jars, etc. We shall not here touch on the sub-form of static electricity, or on magnetism, which is now recognized to be also a sub-form of electricity. In any case, the theoretical explanation of the phenomena belonging here will have to be sought in the theory of the galvanic current, and consequently we shall keep mainly to this.

A continuous current can be produced in many different ways. Mechanical mass motion produces *directly*, by friction, in the first place only static electricity, and a continuous current only with great dissipation of energy; for the major part, at least, to become transformed into electric motion, the intervention of magnetism is required, as in the well-known magneto-electric machines of Gramme, Siemens, and others. Heat can be converted directly into an electric current, as occurs, for instance, at the junction of two different metals. The energy set free by chemical action, which under ordinary circumstances appears in the form of heat, is converted under appropriate conditions into electric motion. Conversely, the latter form of motion, as soon as the requisite conditions are present, passes into any other form of motion: into mass motion (to a very small extent directly into electro-dynamic attractions and repulsions; to a large extent, however, by the intervention again of magnetism in the electro-

GANDHI SMARAKA GRANTHALA
BANGALORE-1.

magnetic machine); into heat—throughout a closed circuit, unless other changes are brought about; into chemical energy—in electrolytic cells and voltameters introduced into the circuit, where the current dissociates compounds that are attacked in vain by other means.

All these transformations are governed by the basic law of the quantitative equivalence of motion through all its changes of form. Or, as Wiedemann expresses it: "by the law of conservation of force the mechanical work exerted in any way for the production of the current must be equivalent to the work exerted in producing all the effects of the current."[76] The conversion of mass motion or heat into electricity* offers us no difficulties here; it has been shown that the so-called "electromotive force" in the first case is equal to the work expended on that motion, and in the second case it is "at every junction of the thermopile directly proportional to its absolute temperature" (Wiedemann, III, S. 482), i.e., to the quantity of heat present at every junction measured in absolute units. The same law has in fact been proved valid also for electricity produced from chemical energy. But here the matter seems to be not so simple, at least for the theory now current. Let us, therefore, go into this somewhat more deeply.

One of the most beautiful series of experiments on the transformations of form of motion as a result of the action of a galvanic pile is that of Favre (1857-58).[77] He put a Smee pile of five elements in a calorimeter; in a second calorimeter he put a small electro-magnetic motor, with the main axle and pulley wheel projecting so as to be available for any kind of coupling. Each production in the pile of one gram of hydrogen, or solution of 32.6 grams of zinc (the old chemical equivalent of zinc, equal to half the now accepted atomic weight 65.2, and expressed in grams), gave the following results:

---

* I use the term "electricity" in the sense of electric motion with the same justification that the general term "heat" is used to express the form of motion that our senses perceive as heat. This is the less open to objection in as much as any possible confusion with the state of *tension* of electricity is here expressly excluded in advance. [*Note by Engels.*]

A. The pile enclosed in the calorimeter, excluding the motor: heat production 18,682 or 18,674 units of heat.

B. Pile and motor linked in the closed circuit, but the motor prevented from moving: heat in the pile 16,448, in the motor 2,219, together 18,667 units of heat.

C. As B, but the motor in motion without, however, lifting a weight: heat in the pile 13,888, in the motor 4,769, together 18,657 units of heat.

D. As C, but the motor raises a weight and so performs mechanical work=131.24 kilogram-metres: heat in the pile 15,427, in the motor 2,947, total 18,374 units of heat; loss in contrast to the above 18,682 equals 308 units of heat. But the mechanical work performed amounting to 131.24 kilogram-metres, multiplied by 1,000 (in order to bring the kilograms into line with the grams of the chemical results) and divided by the mechanical equivalent of heat=423.5 kilogram-metres,[78] gives 309 units of heat, hence exactly the loss mentioned above as the heat equivalent of the mechanical work performed.

The equivalence of motion in all its transformations is, therefore, strikingly proved for electric motion also, within the limits of unavoidable error. And it is likewise proved that the "electromotive force" of the galvanic battery is nothing but chemical energy converted into electricity, and the battery itself nothing but a device, an apparatus, that converts chemical energy on its liberation into electricity, just as a steam-engine transforms the heat supplied to it into mechanical motion, without in either case the converting apparatus supplying further energy on its own account.

A difficulty arises here, however, in relation to the traditional mode of conception. The latter ascribes an "*electric force of separation*" to the battery in virtue of the conditions of contact present in it between the fluids and metals, which force is proportional to the electromotive force and therefore for a given battery represents a definite quantity of energy. What then is the relation of this electric force of separation, of this source of energy which, according to the traditional mode of conception, is inherent in the battery as such even without chemical action, to the energy set free by chemical action? And if it is a source of energy independent of the latter, whence comes the energy furnished by it?

This question in a more or less unclear form constitutes the point of dispute between the contact theory founded by Volta and the chemical theory of the galvanic current that arose immediately afterwards.

The contact-theory explained the current from the electric tensions arising in the battery on contact of the metals with one or more of the liquids, or even merely on contact of the liquids themselves, and from their neutralization or that of the opposing electricities thus generated in the circuit. The pure contact theory regarded any chemical changes that might thereby occur as quite secondary. On the other hand, as early as 1805, Ritter maintained that a current could only be formed if the excitants reacted chemically even *before* closing the circuit. In general this older chemical theory is summarized by Wiedemann (I, p. 784) to the effect that according to it so-called contact electricity "makes its appearance only if at the same time there comes into play a real chemical action of the bodies in contact, or at any rate a disturbance of the chemical equilibrium, even if not directly bound up with chemical processes, a 'tendency towards chemical action' between the bodies in contact."

It is seen that both sides put the question of the source of energy of the current only indirectly, as indeed could hardly be otherwise at the time. Volta and his successors found it quite in order that the mere contact of heterogeneous bodies should produce a continuous current, and consequently be able to perform definite work without equivalent return. Ritter and his supporters are just as little clear how the chemical action makes the battery capable of producing the current and its performance of work. But if this point has long ago been cleared up for chemical theory by Joule, Favre, Raoult, and others, the opposite is the case for the contact theory. In so far as it has persisted, it remains essentially at the point where it started. Notions belonging to a period long outlived, a period when one had to be satisfied to ascribe a particular effect to the first available apparent cause that showed itself on the surface, regardless of whether motion was thereby made to arise out of nothing—notions that directly contradict the law of the conservation of energy—thus continue to exist in the theory of electricity of today. And if the most objectionable aspects of these ideas are shorn off, weakened, watered down, castrated, glossed over, this does not improve matters at all: the confusion is bound to become only so much the worse.

As we have seen, even the older chemical theory of the current declares the contact relations of the battery to be absolutely indispensable for the formation of the current: it maintains only that these contacts can never achieve a continuous current without simultaneous chemical action. And even today it is still taken as a matter of course that the contact arrangements of the battery provide precisely the apparatus by means of which liberated chemical energy is transformed into electricity, and that it depends essentially on these contact arrangements whether and how much chemical energy actually passes into electric motion.

Wiedemann, as a one-sided empiricist, seeks to save what can be saved of the old contact theory. Let us follow what he has to say.

"In contrast to what was formerly believed," says Wiedemann (I, p. 799), "the effect of contact of chemically indifferent bodies, e.g., of metals, is *neither indispensable for the theory of the pile*, nor proved by the facts that *Ohm* derived his law from it, a law that can be derived without this assumption, and that *Fechner*, who confirmed this law experimentally, likewise defended the contact theory. Nevertheless, the excitation of electricity by *metallic** contact, at least according to the experiments now available, is not to be denied, even though the quantitative results obtainable in this respect may always be tainted with an inevitable uncertainty owing to the impossibility of keeping absolutely clean the surfaces of the bodies in contact."

It is seen that the contact theory has become very modest. It concedes that it is not at all indispensable for explaining the current, and neither proved theoretically by Ohm nor experimentally by Fechner. It even concedes that the so-called fundamental experiments, on which alone it can still rest, can never furnish other than uncertain results in a quantitative respect, and finally it asks us merely to recognize that in general it is by contact—although only of *metals*!—that electric motion occurs.

If the contact theory remained content with this, there would not be a word to say against it. It will certainly be granted that on the contact of two metals electrical phenomena occur, by means of which a preparation of a frog's leg can be made to twitch, an electroscope charged, and other movements brought about. The only question that arises in the first place is: whence comes the energy required for this?

To answer this question, we shall, according to Wiedemann (I, p. 14): "adduce *more or less the following** considerations: if the heterogeneous metal plates $A$ and $B$ are brought within a close distance of each other, they attract each other in consequence of the forces of adhesion,

---

* Italics by Engels.—*Ed*.

On mutual contact they lose the *vis viva* of motion imparted to them by this attraction. (If we assume that the molecules of the metals are in a state of permanent vibration, it *could** also happen that, if on contact of the heterogeneous metals the molecules not vibrating simultaneously come into contact, an alteration of their vibration is thereby brought about with loss of *vis viva.*) The lost *vis viva* is *to a large extent** converted into heat. A *small portion** of it, however, is expended in bringing about a different distribution of the electricities previously unseparated. As we have already mentioned above, the bodies brought together become charged with equal quantities of positive and negative electricity, *possibly** as the result of an unequal attraction for the two electricities."

The modesty of the contact theory becomes greater and greater. At first it is admitted that the powerful electric force of separation, which has later such a gigantic work to perform, in itself possesses no energy of its own, and that it cannot function if energy is not supplied to it from outside. And then it has allotted to it a more than diminutive source of energy, the *vis viva* of adhesion, which only comes into play at scarcely measurable distances and which allows the bodies to travel a scarcely measurable length. But it does not matter: it undeniably exists and equally undeniably vanishes on contact. But even this minute source still furnishes too much energy for our purpose: a *large* part is converted into heat and only a *small* portion serves to evoke the electric force of separation. Now, although it is well known that cases enough occur in nature where extremely minute impulses bring about extremely powerful effects, Wiedemann himself seems to feel that his hardly trickling source of energy can with difficulty suffice here, and he seeks a possible second source in the assumption of an interference of the molecular vibrations of the two metals at the surfaces of contact. Apart from other difficulties encountered here, Grove and Gassiot have shown that for exciting electricity actual contact is not at all indispensable, as Wiedemann himself tells us on the previous page. In short, the more we examine it the more does the source of energy for the electric force of separation dwindle to nothing.

---

* Italics by Engels.—*Ed.*

Yet up to now we hardly know of any other source for the excitation of electricity on metallic contact. According to Naumann (*Allgemeine und physikalische Chemie*, Heidelberg 1877, S. 675), "the contact-electromotive forces convert heat into electricity"; he finds "the assumption natural that the ability of these forces to produce electric motion depends on the quantity of heat present, or, in other words, that it is a function of the temperature," as has also been proved experimentally by Le Roux. Here, too, we find ourselves groping in the dark. The law of the voltaic series of metals forbids us to have recourse to the chemical processes that to a small extent are continually taking place at the contact surfaces, which are always covered by a thin layer of air and impure water, a layer as good as inseparable as far as we are concerned; hence it forbids us to explain the excitation of electricity by the presence of an invisible active electrolyte between the contact surfaces. An electrolyte should produce a continuous current in the closed circuit, but the electricity of mere metallic contact, on the contrary, disappears on closing the circuit. And here we come to the real point: whether, and in what manner, the production of a continuous current on the contact of chemically indifferent bodies is made possible by this "electric force of separation," which Wiedemann himself first of all restricted to metals, declaring it incapable of functioning without energy being supplied from outside, and then referred exclusively to a truly microscopic source of energy.

The voltaic series arranges the metals in such a sequence that each one behaves as electro-negative in relation to the preceding one and as electro-positive in relation to the one that follows it. Hence if we arrange a series of pieces of metal in this order, e.g., zinc, tin, iron, copper, platinum, we shall be able to obtain an electric tension at each end. If, however, we arrange the series of metals to form a closed circuit so that the zinc and platinum are in contact, the electric tension is at once neutralized and disappears. "Therefore the production of a continuous current of electricity is not possible in a closed circuit of bodies belonging to the voltaic series." Wiedemann further supports this statement by the following theoretical consideration: "In fact, if a continuous electric current were to make its appearance in the circuit, it would produce heat in the metallic conductors themselves, and this heating could at the most be counterbalanced by cooling at the metallic junctions. In any case it would give rise to an uneven distribution of heat; moreover an electro-magnetic motor could be driven continuously by the current without any sort of supply from outside, and thus work would be performed, which is impossible, since on firmly joining the metals, for instance by soldering, no further changes to compensate for this work could take place even at the contact surfaces."

And not content with the theoretical and experimental proof that the contact electricity of metals by itself cannot produce any current, we shall see too that Wiedemann finds himself compelled to put forward a special hypothesis to abolish its activity even where it might perhaps make itself evident in the current.

Let us, therefore, try another way of passing from contact electricity to the current. Let us imagine, with Wiedemann, "two metals, such as a zinc rod and a copper rod, soldered together at one end, but with their free ends connected by a third body that does *not* act electromotively in relation to the two metals, but only conducts the opposing electricities collected on their surfaces, so that they are neutralized in it. Then the electric force of separation would always restore the previous difference of potential, thus a continuous electric current would make its appearance in the circuit, a current that would be able to perform work without any compensation, which again is impossible. Accordingly, there cannot be a body which only conducts electricity without electromotive activity in relation to the other bodies." We are no better off than before: the impossibility of creating motion again bars the way. By the contact of chemically indifferent bodies, hence by contact electricity as such, we shall never produce a current. Let us therefore go back again and try a third way pointed out by Wiedemann:

"Finally, if we immerse a zinc plate and a copper plate in a liquid that contains a so-called *binary* compound, which therefore can be decomposed into two chemically distinct constituents that completely saturate one another, e.g., dilute hydrochloric acid (H+Cl), etc., then according to paragraph 27 the zinc becomes negatively charged and the copper positively. On joining the metals, these electricities neutralize each other through the place of contact, through which, *therefore, a current of positive electricity* flows from the copper to the zinc. Moreover, since the electric force of separation making its appearance on the contact of these two metals *conveys* the positive electricity *in the same direction*, the effects of the electric forces of separation are *not* abolished as in a closed metallic circuit. *Hence there arises a continuous current of positive electricity*, flowing in the closed circuit from the copper through its place of contact with the zinc, in the direction of the latter, and through the liquid from the zinc to the copper. We shall return in a moment (paragraph 34, *et seq.*) to the question how far the individual electric forces of separation present in the circuit *really* participate in the formation of the current.—A combination of conductors providing such a 'galvanic current' we term a galvanic element, or also a galvanic battery." (I, p. 45.)*

Thus the miracle has been accomplished. By the mere electric force of separation of the contact which, according to Wiedemann himself, cannot be effective without energy being supplied from outside, a continuous current has been produced. And if we were offered nothing more for its explanation than the above passage from Wiedemann, it would indeed remain an absolute miracle. What have we learned here about the process?

---

* All italics by Engels.—*Ed.*

1. If zinc and copper are immersed in a liquid containing a so-called *binary* compound, then, according to paragraph 27, the zinc becomes negatively charged and the copper positively charged.—But in the whole of paragraph 27 there is no word of any binary compound. It describes only a simple voltaic element of a zinc plate and a copper plate, with a piece of cloth moistened by an *acid* liquid interposed between them, and then investigates, without mentioning any chemical processes, the resulting static-electric charges of the two metals. Hence, the so-called *binary* compound has been smuggled in here by the back-door.

2. What this binary compound is doing here remains a complete mystery. The circumstance that it "*can* be decomposed into two chemical constituents that fully saturate each other" (fully saturate each other after they have been decomposed?!) could at most teach us something new if it were *actually to decompose*. But we are not told a word about that, hence for the time being we have to assume that it does *not* decompose, e.g., in the case of paraffin.

3. When the zinc in the liquid has been negatively charged, and the copper positively charged, we bring them into contact (outside the liquid). At once "these electricities neutralize each other through the place of contact, through which, *therefore*, a current of *positive* electricity flows from the copper to the zinc." Again, we do not learn why only a current of "positive" electricity flows in the one direction, and not also a current of

"negative" electricity in the opposite direction. We do not learn at all what becomes of the negative electricity, which, hitherto, was just as necessary as the positive; the effect of the electric force of separation consisted precisely in setting them free to oppose each other. Now it has been suddenly suppressed, as it were eliminated, and it is made to appear as if there exists only positive electricity.

But then again, on p. 51, the precise opposite is said, for here "*the electricities unite* in one current"; consequently both negative and positive flow in it! Who will rescue us from this confusion?

4. "Moreover, *since* the electric force of separation making its appearance on the contact of these two metals *conveys* the positive electricity *in the same direction*, the effects of the electric forces of separation are not abolished as in a closed metallic circuit. *Hence*, there arises a continuous current," etc.—This is a bit thick. For, as we shall see, Wiedemann proves to us a few pages later (p. 52) that on the "formation of a continuous current . . . the electric force of separation at the place of contact of the metals . . . *must be inactive*,"* that not only does a current occur even when this force, instead of conveying the positive electricity in the same direction, acts in opposition to the direction of the current, but that in this case too it is not compensated by a definite share of the force of separation of the battery and, hence, once again is inactive. Consequently, how can Wiedemann on p. 45 make an electric force of separation participate as a necessary factor in the for-

---

* All italics in these quotations by Engels.—*Ed.*

mation of the current, when on p. 52 he puts it out of action for the duration of the current, and that, moreover, by a hypothesis erected specially for this purpose?

5. "Hence there arises a *continuous current* of positive electricity, flowing in the closed circuit from the copper through its place of contact with the zinc, in the direction of the latter, and through the liquid from the zinc to the copper."—But in the case of such a continuous electric current, "heat would be produced by it in the conductors themselves," and also it would be possible for "an electro-magnetic motor to be driven by it and thus work performed," which, however, is impossible without supply of energy. Since Wiedemann up to now has not breathed a syllable as to whether such a supply of energy occurs, or whence it comes, the continuous current so far remains just as much an impossibility as in both the previously investigated cases.

No one feels this more than Wiedemann himself. So he finds it desirable to hurry as quickly as possible over the many ticklish points of this remarkable explanation of current formation, and instead to entertain the reader throughout several pages with all kinds of elementary anecdotes about the thermal, chemical, magnetic, and physiological effects of this still mysterious current, in the course of which by way of exception he even adopts a quite popular tone. Then he suddenly continues (p. 49):

"We have now to investigate in what way the electric forces of separation are active in a closed circuit of two metals and a liquid, e.g., zinc, copper, and hydrochloric acid.

"*We know* that when the current flows through the liquid the constituents of the binary compound (HCl) contained in it become separated in such a manner that one constituent (H) *is set free* on the copper, and an equivalent amount of the other (Cl) on the zinc, *whereby* the latter constituent combines with an equivalent amount of zinc to form ZnCl."*

*We know!* If we know this, we certainly do not know it from Wiedemann who, as we have seen, so far has not breathed a syllable about this process. Further, *if* we do know anything of this process, it is that it cannot proceed in the way described by Wiedemann.

On the formation of a molecule of HCl from gaseous hydrogen and gaseous chlorine, an amount of energy = 22,000 units of heat is liberated (Julius Thomsen). Therefore, to break away the chlorine from its combination with hydrogen, the same quantity of energy must be supplied from outside for each molecule of HCl. Where does the battery derive this energy? Wiedemann's description does not tell us, so let us look for ourselves.

When chlorine combines with zinc to form zinc chloride a considerably greater quantity of energy is liberated than is necessary to separate chlorine from hydrogen; $(Zn,Cl_2)$ develops 97,210 and 2(H,Cl) 44,000 units of heat (Julius Thomsen). With that the process in the battery becomes comprehensible. Hence it is not, as Wiedemann relates, that hydrogen without more ado is liberated on the copper, and chlorine on the zinc, "whereby" then subsequently and accidentally the zinc and chlorine enter into combination. On the contrary, the union of the zinc with the chlorine is the essential, basic condition for the whole process, and as long as this does not take place, one would wait in vain for hydrogen on the copper.

---

* All italics by Engels.—*Ed.*

The excess of energy liberated on formation of a molecule of $ZnCl_2$ over that expended on liberating two atoms of H from two molecules of HCl, is converted in the battery into electric motion and provides the entire "electromotive force" that makes its appearance in the current circuit. Hence it is not a mysterious "electric force of separation" that tears asunder hydrogen and chlorine without any demonstrable source of energy, it is the total chemical process taking place in the battery that endows all the "electric forces of separation" and "electromotive forces" of the closed circuit with the energy necessary for their existence.

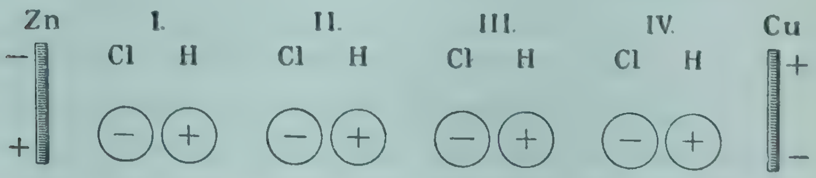
For the time being, therefore, we put on record that Wiedemann's *second* explanation of the current gives us just as little assistance as his first one, and let us proceed further with the text:[79]

"This process proves that the behaviour of the binary substance between the metals does not consist merely in a simple predominant attraction of its entire mass for one electricity or the other, as in the case of metals, but that in addition a special action of its constituents is exhibited. Since the constituent Cl is given off where the current of positive electricity enters the fluid, and the constituent H where the negative electricity enters, *we assume** that each equivalent of chlorine in the compound HCl is charged with a definite amount of negative electricity determining its attraction by the entering positive electricity. It is the *electro-negative constituent* of the compound. Similarly the equivalent H must be charged with positive electricity and so represent the electro-positive constituent of the compound. These charges *could** be produced on the combination of H and Cl in just the same way as on the contact of zinc and copper. Since the compound HCl as such is non-electric, *we must assume** accordingly that in it the atoms of the positive and negative constituents contain equal quantities of positive and negative electricity.

---

* Italics by Engels.—*Ed.*

"If now a zinc plate and a copper plate are dipped in dilute hydrochloric acid, *we can suppose** that the zinc has a stronger attraction towards the electro-negative constituent (Cl) than towards the electro-positive one (H). Consequently, the molecules of hydrochloric acid in contact with the zinc *would* dispose themselves so that their electro-negative constituents are turned towards the zinc, and their electro-positive constituents towards the copper. Owing to the constituents when so arranged exerting their electrical attraction on the constituents of the next molecules of HCl, the whole series of molecules between the zinc and copper plates becomes arranged as in Fig. 10:



---

* Italics by Engels.—*Ed.*

If the second metal acted on the positive hydrogen as the zinc does on the negative chlorine, it would help to promote the arrangement. If it acted in the opposite manner, only more weakly, at least the direction would remain unaltered.

"By the influence exerted by the negative electricity of the electro-negative constituent Cl adjacent to the zinc, the electricity *would* be so distributed in the zinc that places on it which are close to the Cl of the immediately adjacent atom[80] of acid would become charged positively, those farther away negatively. Similarly, negative electricity would accumulate in the copper next to the electro-positive constituent (H) of the adjacent atom[80] of hydrochloric acid, and the positive electricity would be driven to the more remote parts.

"*Next*, the positive electricity in the zinc *would* combine with the negative electricity of the immediately adjacent atom of Cl, and the latter itself with the zinc [to form non-electric ZnCl].** The electro-positive atom H, which was previously combined with this atom of Cl, *would* unite with the atom of Cl turned towards it belonging to the second atom of HCl, with simultaneous combination of the electricities contained in these atoms; similarly, the H of the second atom of HCl *would combine* with the Cl of the third atom, and so on, until finally on the copper an atom of H *would** be set free, the positive electricity of which would unite with the distributed negative electricity of the copper, so that it would escape in a non-electrified state." This process would "repeat itself until the repulsive action of the electricities accumulated in the metal plates on the electricities of the hydrochloric acid constituents turned towards them balances the chemical attraction of the latter by the metals. If, however, the metal plates are joined by a conductor, the free electricities of the metal plates unite with one another and the above-mentioned processes can recommence. *In this way** a constant flow of electricity would come into being.

---

* All italics by Engels.—*Ed.*

** The words in brackets were omitted by Engels.—*Ed.*

"It is evident that thereby a continual loss of *vis viva* occurs, owing to the constituents of the binary compound on their migration to the metals moving to the latter with a definite velocity and then coming to rest, either with formation of a compound (ZnCl) or by escaping in the free state (H). (*Note [by Wiedemann]*: Since the gain in *vis viva* on separation of the constituents Cl and H . . . is compensated by the *vis viva* lost on the union of these constituents with the constituents of the adjacent atoms, the influence of this process can be neglected.) This loss of *vis viva* is equivalent to the quantity of heat which is set free in the visibly occurring chemical process, essentially, therefore, that produced on the solution of an equivalent of zinc in the dilute acid. This value must be the same as that of the work expended on separating the electricities. If, therefore, the electricities unite to form a current, then, during the solution of an equivalent of zinc and the giving off of an equivalent of hydrogen from the liquid, there must make its appearance in the whole circuit, whether in the form of heat or in the form of external performance of work, an amount of work that is likewise equivalent to the development of heat corresponding to this chemical process."

---

* Italics by Engels.—*Ed.*

"Let us assume—could—we must assume—we can suppose—would be distributed—would become charged," etc., etc. Sheer conjecture and subjunctives from which only three actual indicatives can be definitely extracted: firstly, that the combination of the zinc with the chlorine is *now* pronounced to be the condition for the liberation of hydrogen; secondly, as we now learn right at the end and as it were incidentally, that the energy herewith liberated is the source, and indeed the exclusive source, of all energy required for the formation of the current; and thirdly, that this explanation of the current formation is as directly in contradiction to both those previously given as the latter are themselves mutually contradictory.

Further it is said:

"For the formation of a continuous current, therefore, there is active *purely and solely** the electric force of separation which is derived from the unequal attraction and polarization of the atoms of the binary compound in the exciting liquid of the battery by the metal electrodes; at the place of contact of the metals, at which no further mechanical changes can occur, the electric force of separation *must on the other hand be inactive.** That this force, if perchance it *counteracts** the electromotive excitation of the metals by the liquid (as on immersion of tin and lead in potassium cyanide solution), is not compensated by a definite share of the force of separation at the place of contact, is proved by the above-mentioned complete proportionality of the total electric force of separation (and electromotive force) in the closed circuit, with the above-mentioned heat equivalent of the chemical processes. Hence it must be neutralized in another way. This would most simply occur on the assumption that on contact of the exciting liquid with the metals the electromotive force is produced in a double manner; on the one hand by an unequally strong attraction of the *mass** of the liquid as a whole towards one or the other electricity, on the other hand by the unequal attraction of the metals towards the *constituents* of the liquid charged with opposite electricities. . . . Owing to the former unequal (mass) attraction towards the electricities, the liquids would fully conform to the law of the voltaic series of metals, and in a closed circuit . . . complete neutralization to zero of the electric forces of separation (and electromotive forces) take place; the second (*chemical**) action . . . on the other hand would *by itself** supply the electric force of separation necessary for the formation of the current and the corresponding electromotive force." (I, pp. 52-53.)

---

* Italics by Engels.—*Ed.*

Herewith the last relics of the contact theory are now happily eliminated from formation of the current, and simultaneously also the last relics of Wiedemann's first explanation of current formation given on p. 45. It is finally conceded without reservation that the galvanic battery is a simple apparatus for converting chemical energy in process of liberation into electric motion, into so-called electric force of separation and electromotive force, just as the steam-engine is an apparatus for converting heat energy into mechanical motion. In the one case, as in the other, the apparatus provides only the conditions for liberation and further transformation of the energy, but supplies no energy on its own account. This once established, it remains for us now to make a closer examination of this third version of Wiedemann's explanation of the current. How are the energy transformations in the closed circuit of the battery represented here?

---

* Italics by Engels.—*Ed.*

It is evident, he says, that in the battery "a continual loss of *vis viva* occurs, owing to the constituents of the binary compound on their migration to the metals moving to the latter with a definite velocity and then coming to rest, either with formation of a compound (ZnCl) or by escaping in the free state (H). This loss is equivalent to the quantity of heat which is set free in the visibly occurring chemical process, essentially, therefore, that produced on the solution of an equivalent of zinc in the dilute acid."

Firstly, if the process goes on in *pure* form, no heat at all is set free in the battery on solution of the zinc; the liberated energy is indeed converted directly into electricity and only from this converted further into heat by the resistance of the whole circuit.

Secondly, *vis viva* is half the product of the mass and the square of the velocity. Hence the above statement would read: the energy set free on solution of an equivalent of zinc in dilute hydrochloric acid, equalling so many calories, is likewise equivalent to half the product of the mass of the ions and the square of the velocity with which they migrate to the metals. Expressed in this way, the statement is obviously false; the *vis* *viva* appearing on the migration of the ions is far from being equivalent to the energy set free by the chemical process.* But if it were to be so, no current would be possible, since there would be no energy remaining over for the current in the remainder of the closed circuit. Hence the further remark is introduced that the ions come to rest "either with formation of a compound or by escaping in the free state." But if the loss of *vis viva* is to include also the energy transformations taking place on these two processes, then we have indeed arrived at a dead-lock. For it is precisely to these two processes taken together that we owe the whole liberated energy, so that there can be absolutely no question here of a *loss* of *vis viva*, but at most of a *gain*.

---

* F. Kohlrausch has recently calculated (*Wiedemanns Annalen*, VI [Leipzig 1879], p. 206) that "immense forces" are required to drive the ions through the water solvent. To cause one milligramme to move through a distance of one millimetre requires an attractive force which for H=32,500 kg., for Cl=5,200 kg., hence for HCl=37,700 kg.—Even if these figures are absolutely correct, they do not affect what has been said above. But the calculation contains the hypothetical factors hitherto inevitable in the sphere of electricity and therefore requires control by experiment. Such control appears possible. In the first place, these "immense forces" must reappear as a definite quantity of heat in the place where they are consumed, i.e., in the above case in the battery. Secondly, the energy consumed by them must be smaller than that supplied by the chemical processes of the battery, and there should be a definite difference. Thirdly, this difference must be used up in the rest of the closed circuit and likewise be quantitatively demonstrable there. Only after confirmation by this control can the above figures be regarded as final. The demonstration in the electrolytic cell appears still more susceptible of realization. [*Note by Engels.*]

It is therefore obvious that Wiedemann himself did not mean anything definite by this proposition; rather the "loss of *vis viva*" represents only the *deus ex machina* which is to enable him to make the fatal leap from the old contact theory to the chemical explanation of the current. In point of fact, the loss of *vis viva* has now performed its function and is dismissed; henceforth the chemical process in the battery is recognized indisputably as the sole source of energy for current formation, and the only remaining anxiety of our author is as to how he can politely rid the current of the last relic of excitation of electricity on the contact of chemically indifferent bodies, namely, the force of separation active at the place of contact of the two metals.

Reading the above explanation of current formation given by Wiedemann, one could believe oneself in the presence of a specimen of the kind of *apologia* that wholly- and semi-orthodox theologians of almost forty years ago employed to meet the philologico-historical bible criticism of Strauss, Wilke, Bruno Bauer, etc. The method is exactly the same, and it is bound to be so. For in both cases it is a question of saving the *inherited tradition* from scientific thought. Exclusive empiricism, which at most allows itself thinking in the form of mathematical calculation, imagines that it operates only with undeniable facts. In reality, however, it operates predominantly with traditional notions, with the largely obsolete products of thought of its predecessors, and such are positive and negative electricity, the electric force of separation, the contact theory. These serve it as the foundation of endless mathematical calculations in which, owing to the strictness of the mathematical formulation, the hypothetical nature of the premises gets comfortably forgotten. This kind of empiricism is as credulous towards the results of the thought of its predecessors as it is sceptical in its attitude to the results of contemporary thought. For it even the experimentally established facts have gradually become inseparable from their traditional interpretations; the simplest electric phenomenon is presented falsely, e.g., by smuggling in the two electricities; this empiricism *cannot* any longer describe the facts correctly, because the traditional interpretation is woven into the description. In short, we have here in the field of the theory of electricity a tradition just as highly developed as that in the field of theology. And since in both fields the results of recent research, the establishment of hitherto unknown or disputed facts and of the necessarily following theoretical conclusions, run pitilessly counter to the old traditions, the defenders of these traditions find themselves in the direst dilemma. They have to resort to all kinds of subterfuges and untenable expedients, to the glossing over of irreconcilable contradictions, and thus finally land themselves into a medley of contradictions from which they have no escape. It is this faith in all the old theory of electricity that entangles Wiedemann here into most inextricably contradicting himself, simply owing to the hopeless attempt to reconcile rationally the old explanation of the current by "contact force," with the modern one by liberation of chemical energy.

It will perhaps be objected that the above criticism of Wiedemann's explanation of the current rests on juggling with words; that although at the beginning Wiedemann expresses himself somewhat carelessly and inaccurately, still he does finally give the correct account in accord with the principle of the conservation of energy and so sets everything right. As against this view, we give below another example, his description of the process in the battery: zinc—dilute sulphuric acid—copper:

"If, however, the two plates are joined by a wire, a galvanic current arises. . . . *By the electrolytic process*,* one equivalent of hydrogen is given off on the copper from the *water** of the dilute sulphuric acid, this hydrogen escaping in bubbles. On the zinc there is formed one equivalent of oxygen which oxidizes the zinc to form zinc oxide, the latter becoming dissolved in the surrounding acid to form sulphuric zinc oxide." (I, p. 593.)

To break up water into gaseous hydrogen and gaseous oxygen requires an amount of energy of 68,924 heat-units for each molecule of water. Whence then comes the energy in the above battery? "By the electrolytic process." And where does the electrolytic process get it from? No answer is given.

But Wiedemann further tells us, not once, but at least twice (I, p. 472 and p. 614), that "according to recent experiments [in electrolysis] the water itself is not decomposed," but that in our case it is the sulphuric acid $H_2SO_4$ that splits up into $H_2$ on the one hand and into $SO_3 + O$ on the other hand, whereby under suitable conditions $H_2$ and O can escape in gaseous form. But this alters the whole nature of the process. The $H_2$ of the $H_2SO_4$ is directly replaced by the bivalent zinc, forming zinc sulphate, $ZnSO_4$. There remains over, on the one side $H_2$, on the other $SO_3+O$. The two gases escape in the proportions in which they unite to form water, the $SO_3$ unites with the water $H_2O$ of the solution to reform $H_2SO_4$, i.e., sulphuric acid. The formation of $ZnSO_4$, however, develops sufficient energy not only to displace and liberate the hydrogen of the sulphuric acid, but also to leave over a considerable excess, which in our case is expended in forming the current. Hence the zinc does not wait until the electrolytic process puts free oxygen at its disposal, in order first to become oxidized and then to become dissolved in the acid. On the contrary, it enters directly into the process, which only comes into being at all *by this participation of the zinc.*

---

* Italics by Engels.—*Ed.*

We see here how obsolete chemical notions come to the aid of the obsolete contact notions. According to modern views, a salt is an acid in which hydrogen has been replaced by a metal. The process under investigation confirms this view; the direct replacement of the hydrogen of the acid by the zinc fully explains the transformation of energy. The old view, adhered to by Wiedemann, regards a salt as a compound of a metallic oxide with an acid and therefore speaks of sulphuric zinc oxide instead of zinc sulphate. But to arrive at sulphuric zinc oxide in our battery of zinc and sulphuric acid, the zinc must first be oxidized. In order to oxidize the zinc fast enough, we must have free oxygen. In order to get free oxygen, we must assume—since hydrogen appears on the copper—that the water is decomposed. In order to decompose water, we need tremendous energy. How are we to get this? Simply "by the electrolytic process" which itself cannot come into operation as long as its chemical end product, the "sulphuric zinc oxide," has not begun to be formed. The child gives birth to the mother.

Consequently, here again Wiedemann puts the whole process absolutely the wrong way round and upside down. And the reason is that he lumps together active and passive electrolysis, two directly opposite processes, simply as electrolysis.

So far we have only examined the events in the battery, i.e., that process in which an excess of energy is set free by chemical action and is converted into electricity by the arrangements of the battery. But it is well known that this process can also be reversed: the electricity of a continuous current produced in the battery from chemical energy can, in its turn, be reconverted into chemical energy in an electrolytic cell inserted in the closed circuit. The two processes are obviously the opposites of each other; if the first is regarded as chemico-electric, then the second is electro-chemical. Both can take place in the same circuit with the same substances. Thus, the voltaic pile from gas elements, the current of which is produced by the union of hydrogen and oxygen to form water, can, in an electrolytic cell inserted in the circuit, furnish gaseous hydrogen and gaseous oxygen in the proportion in which they form water. The usual view lumps these two opposite processes together under the *single* expression: electrolysis, and does not even distinguish between active and passive electrolysis, between an exciting liquid and a passive electrolyte. Thus Wiedemann treats of electrolysis in general for 143 pages and then adds at the end some

GANDHI SMARAKA G
BANGALORE-1

remarks on "electrolysis in the battery," in which, moreover, the processes in actual batteries only occupy the lesser part of the seventeen pages of this section. Also in the "theory of electrolysis" that follows, this contrast of battery and electrolytic cell is not even mentioned, and anyone who looked for some treatment of the transformations of energy in the closed circuit in the next chapter, "The Influence of Electrolysis on the Conduction Resistance and the Electromotive Force in the Circuit," would be bitterly disappointed.

Let us now consider the irresistible "electrolytic process" which is able to separate $H_2$ from O without visible supply of energy, and which plays the same role in these sections of the book as did previously the mysterious "electric force of separation."

"Alongside the *primary. purely electrolytic** process of separation of the ions, a number of *secondary, purely chemical* processes, quite independent of the first, take place by the action of the ions split off by the current. This action can take place on the material of the electrodes and on the bodies that are decomposed, and in the case of solutions also on the solvent." (I, p. 481.)

Let us return to the above-mentioned battery: zinc and copper in dilute sulphuric acid. Here, according to Wiedemann's own statement, the separated ions are the $H_2$ and O of the water. Consequently, for him the oxidation of the zinc and the formation of $ZnSO_4$ is a secondary, purely chemical process, independent of the electrolytic process, in spite of the fact that it is only through it that the primary process becomes possible.

---

* Italics by Engels.—*Ed.*

Let us now examine somewhat in detail the confusion that must necessarily arise from this inversion of the true course of events.

Let us consider in the first place the so-called secondary processes in the electrolytic cell, of which Wiedemann puts forward some examples* (pp. 481-82):

I. The electrolysis of sodium sulphate ($Na_2SO_4$) dissolved in water. This "breaks up . . . into 1 equivalent of $SO_3+O$ . . . and 1 equivalent of Na. . . . The latter, however, reacts on the water solvent and splits off from it 1 equivalent of H, while 1 equivalent of caustic soda [NaOH] is formed and becomes dissolved in the surrounding water." The equation is:

$$Na_2SO_4+2H_20=O+SO_3+2NaOH+2H.$$

In fact, in this example the decomposition

$$Na_2SO_4=Na_2+SO_3+O$$

could be regarded as the primary, electro-chemical process, and the further transformation

$$Na_2+2H_2O=2NaOH+2H$$

as the secondary, purely chemical one. But this secondary process is effected immediately at the electrode where the hydrogen appears, the very considerable quantity of energy (111,810 heat-units for Na, O, H, aq. according to Julius Thomsen) thereby liberated is therefore, at least for the most part, converted into electricity, and only a portion in the cell is transformed directly into heat. But the latter can also happen to the chemical energy directly or primarily liberated in the *battery*. The quantity of energy which has thus become available and converted into electricity, however, is to be subtracted from that which the current has to supply for continued decomposition of the $Na_2SO_4$. If the conversion of sodium into hydrated oxide appeared in the *first* moment of the total process as a secondary process, from the second moment onwards it becomes an essential factor of the total process and so ceases to be secondary.

---

* It may be noted here once for all that Wiedemann employs throughout the old chemical equivalent values, writing HO, ZnCl, etc. In my equations, the modern atomic weights are everywhere employed, putting, therefore, $H_2O$, $ZnCl_2$, etc. [*Note by Engels.*]

But yet a third process takes place in this electrolytic cell: $SO_3$ combines with $H_2O$ to form $H_2SO_4$, sulphuric acid, provided the $SO_3$ does not enter into combination with the metal of the positive electrode, in which case again energy would be liberated. But this change does not necessarily proceed immediately at the electrode, and consequently the quantity of energy (21,320 heat-units, J. Thomsen) thereby liberated becomes converted wholly or mainly into heat in the cell itself, and provides at most a very small portion of the electricity in the current. The only really secondary process occurring in this cell is therefore not mentioned at all by Wiedemann.

II. "If a solution of copper sulphate [$CuSO_4+5H_2O$] is electrolyzed between a positive copper electrode and a negative one of platinum, 1 equivalent of copper separates out for 1 equivalent of water decomposed at the negative platinum electrode, with simultaneous decomposition of sulphuric acid in the same current circuit; at the positive electrode, 1 equivalent of $SO_4$ should make its appearance; but this combines with the copper of the electrode to form 1 equivalent of $CuSO_4$, which becomes dissolved in the water of the electrolyzed solution." [I, p. 481.]

In the modern chemical mode of expression we have, therefore, to represent the process as follows: copper is deposited on the platinum; the liberated $SO_4$, which cannot exist as such, splits up into $SO_3+O$, the latter escaping in the free state; the $SO_3$ takes up $H_2O$ from the aqueous solvent and forms $H_2SO_4$, which again combines with the copper of the electrode to form $CuSO_4$, $H_2$ being set free. Strictly speaking, we have here three processes: (1) the separation of Cu and $SO_4$; (2) $SO_3+O+H_2O=H_2SO_4+O$; (3) $H_2SO_4+Cu=H_2+CuSO_4$. It is natural to regard the first as primary, the two others as secondary. But if we inquire into the energy transformations, we find that the first process is completely compensated by a part of the third: the separation of copper from $SO_4$ by the reuniting of both at the other electrode. If we leave out of account the energy required for shifting the copper from one electrode to the other, and likewise the inevitable, not accurately determinable, loss of energy in the battery by conversion into heat, we have here a case where the so-called primary process withdraws no energy from the current. The current provides energy exclusively to make possible the separation of $H_2$ and O, which moreover is indirect, and this proves to be the real chemical result of the whole process—hence, for carrying out a *secondary*, or even tertiary, process.

Nevertheless, in both the above examples, as in other cases also, it is undeniable that the distinction of primary and secondary processes has a relative justification. Thus in both cases, among other things, water also is apparently decomposed and the elements of water given off at the opposite electrodes. Since, according to the most recent experiments, absolutely pure water comes as near as possible to being an ideal non-conductor, hence also a non-electrolyte, it is important to show that in these and similar cases it is not the water that is directly electro-chemically decomposed, but that the elements of water are separated from the acid, in the formation of which here it is true the water of the solution must participate.

III. "If one electrolyzes simultaneously in two U-tubes . . . hydrochloric acid [$HCl+8H_2O$] . . . using in one tube a zinc positive electrode and in the other tube one of copper, then in the first tube a quantity of zinc 32.53 is dissolved, in the other a quantity of copper 2 × 31.7."[81]

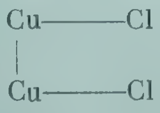
For the time being let us leave the copper out of account and consider the zinc. The decomposition of HCl is regarded here as the primary process, the solution of Zn as secondary.

According to this conception, therefore, the current brings to the electrolytic cell from outside the energy necessary for the separation of H and Cl, and after this separation is completed, the Cl combines with the Zn, whereby a quantity of energy is set free that is subtracted from that required for separating H and Cl; the current needs only therefore to supply the difference. So far everything agrees beautifully; but if we consider the two amounts of energy more closely we find that the one liberated on the formation of $ZnCl_2$ is *larger* than that used up in separating 2HCl; consequently, that the current not only does not need to supply energy, but on the contrary *receives energy*. We are no longer confronted by a passive electrolyte, but by an exciting fluid, not an electrolytic cell but a *battery*, which strengthens the current-forming voltaic pile by a new element; the process which we are supposed to conceive as secondary becomes absolutely primary, becoming the source of energy of the whole process and making the latter independent of the current supplied by the voltaic pile.

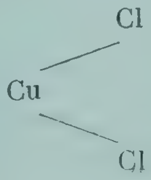
We see clearly here the source of the whole confusion prevailing in Wiedemann's theoretical description. Wiedemann's point of departure is electrolysis; whether this is active or passive, battery or electrolytic cell, is all one to him: saw-bones is saw-bones, as the old Major said to the Doctor of Philosophy[82] doing his year's military service. And since it is easier to study electrolysis in the electrolytic cell than in the battery, he does, in fact, take the electrolytic cell as his point of departure, and he makes the processes taking place in it, and the partly justifiable division of them into primary and secondary, the measure of the altogether reverse processes in the battery, not even noticing when his electrolytic cell becomes surreptitiously transformed into a battery. Hence he is able to put forward the proposition: "the chemical affinity that the separated substances have for the electrodes has no influence on the electrolytic process as such" (I, p. 471), a proposition which in this absolute form, as we have seen, is totally false. Hence, further, his threefold theory of current formation: firstly, the old traditional one, by means of pure contact; secondly, that derived by means of the abstractly conceived electric force of separation, which in an inexplicable manner obtains for itself or for the "electrolytic process" the requisite energy for splitting apart the H and Cl in the battery and for forming a current as well; and finally, the modern, chemico-electric theory which demonstrates the source of this energy in the algebraic sum of all the chemical reactions in the battery. Just as he does not notice that the second explanation overthrows the first, so also he has no idea that the third in its turn overthrows the second. On the contrary, the principle of the conservation of energy is merely added in a quite superficial way to the old theory handed down from routine, just as a new geometrical theorem is appended to the earlier ones. He has no inkling that this principle makes necessary a revision of the whole traditional point of view in this as in all other fields of natural science. Hence Wiedemann confines himself to noting the principle in his explanation of the current, and then calmly puts it on one side, taking it up again only right at the end of the book, in the chapter on the work performed by the current. Even in the theory of the excitation of electricity by contact (I, p. 781 *et seq.*) the conservation of energy plays no role at all in relation to the chief subject dealt with, and is only incidentally brought in for throwing light on subsidiary matters: it is and remains a "secondary process."

Let us return to the above example III. There the same current was used to electrolyze hydrochloric acid in two U-tubes, but in one there was a positive electrode of zinc, in the other the positive electrode used was of copper. According to Faraday's basic law of electrolysis, the same galvanic current decomposes in each cell equivalent quantities of electrolyte, and the quantities of the substances liberated at the two electrodes are also in proportion to their equivalents. (I, p. 470.) In the above case it was found that in the first tube a quantity of zinc 32.53 was dissolved, and in the other a quantity of copper 2 × 31.7. "Nevertheless," continues Wiedemann, "this is no proof for the equivalence of these values. They are observed only in the case of very weak currents with the formation of zinc chloride . . . on the one hand, and of copper chloride . . . on the other. In the case of stronger currents, with the same amount of zinc dissolved, the quantity of dissolved copper would sink . . . down to 31.7 with formation of increasing quantities of chloride."

It is well known that zinc forms only a single compound with chlorine, zinc chloride, $ZnCl_2$; copper on the other hand forms two compounds, cupric chloride, $CuCl_2$, and cuprous chloride, $Cu_2Cl_2$. Hence the process is that the weak current splits off two copper atoms from the electrode for each two chlorine atoms, the two copper atoms remaining united by *one* of their two valencies, while their two free valencies unite with the two chlorine atoms:



On the other hand, if the current becomes stronger, it splits the copper atoms apart altogether, and each one unites with two chlorine atoms.



In the case of currents of medium strength, both compounds are formed side by side. Thus it is solely the strength of the current that determines the formation of one or the other compound, and therefore the process is essentially *electro*-chemical, if this word has any meaning at all. Nevertheless Wiedemann declares explicitly that it is secondary, hence not electro-chemical, but purely chemical.

The above experiment is one performed by Renault (1867) and is one of a whole series of similar experiments in which the same current is led in one U-tube through salt solution (positive electrode—zinc), and in another cell through a varying electrolyte with various metals as the positive electrode. The amounts of the other metals dissolved here for each equivalent of zinc diverged very considerably, and Wiedemann gives the results of the whole series of experiments which, however, in point of fact, are mostly self-evident chemically and could not be otherwise. Thus, for 1 equivalent of zinc, only two-thirds of an equivalent of gold is dissolved in hydrochloric acid. This can only appear remarkable if, like Wiedemann, one adheres to the old equivalent weights and writes ZnCl for zinc chloride, according to which both the chlorine and the zinc appear in the chloride with only a *single* valency. In reality two chlorine atoms are included to one zinc atom ($ZnCl_2$), and as soon as we know this formula we see at once that in the above determination of equivalents, the chlorine atom is to be taken as the unit and not the zinc atom. The formula for gold chloride, however, is $AuCl_3$, from which it is at once seen that $3ZnCl_2$ contains exactly as much chlorine as $2AuCl_3$, and so all primary, secondary, and tertiary processes in the battery or cell are compelled to transform, for each part by weight of zinc converted into zinc chloride, neither more nor less than two-thirds of a part by weight[83] of gold into gold chloride. This holds absolutely unless the compound AuCl also could be prepared by galvanic means, in which case even two equivalents of gold would have to be dissolved for one equivalent of zinc, when also similar variations according to the current strength could occur as in the case of copper and chlorine mentioned above. The value of Renault's experiments consists in the fact that they show how Faraday's law is confirmed by facts that appear to contradict it. But what they are supposed to contribute in throwing light on secondary processes in electrolysis is not evident.

Wiedemann's third example led us again from the electrolytic cell to the battery. And in fact the battery offers by far the greatest interest when one investigates the electrolytic processes in relation to the transformations of energy taking place here. Thus we not infrequently encounter batteries in which the chemico-electric processes seem to take place in direct contradiction to the law of the conservation of energy and in opposition to chemical affinity.

According to Poggendorff's measurements, the battery: zinc—concentrated salt solution—platinum, provides a current of strength 134.6. Hence we have here quite a respectable quantity of electricity, one-third more than in the Daniell cell. What is the source of the energy appearing here as electricity? The "primary" process is the replacement of sodium in the chlorine compound by zinc. But in ordinary chemistry it is not zinc that replaces sodium, but *vice versa*, sodium replacing zinc from chlorine and other compounds. The "primary" process, far from being able to give the current the above quantity of energy, on the contrary requires itself a supply of energy from outside in order to come into being. Hence, with the mere "primary" process we are again at a standstill. Let us look, therefore, at the real process. Then we find that the change is not

$$Zn+2NaCl=ZnCl_2+2Na,$$

but

$$Zn+2NaCl+2H_2O=ZnCl_2+2NaOH+H_2.$$

In other words, the sodium is not split off in the free state at the negative electrode, but forms a hydroxide as in the above example I (pp. [191-92]).

To calculate the energy transformations taking place here, Julius Thomsen's determinations provide us at least with certain important data. According to them, the energy liberated on combination is as follows:

$$(ZnCl_2)=97{,}210,\ (ZnCl_2,\ \text{aqua})=15{,}630,$$

making a total for dissolved

zinc chloride =112,840 heat-units.
2 (Na, O, H, aqua) =223,620 „ „
336,460 „ „

Deducting consumption of energy on the separations:

2 (Na,Cl, aq.) =193,020 heat-units.
2 ($H_2$,O) =136,720 „ „
329,740 „ „

The excess of liberated energy equals 6,720 heat-units.

This amount is obviously small for the current strength obtained, but it suffices to explain, on the one hand, the separation of the sodium from chlorine, and on the other hand, the current formation in general.

We have here a striking example of the fact that the distinction of primary and secondary processes is purely relative and leads us *ad absurdum* as soon as we take it absolutely. The primary electrolytic process, taken alone, not only cannot produce any current, but cannot even take place itself. It is only the secondary, ostensibly purely chemical process that makes the primary one possible and, moreover, supplies the whole surplus energy for current formation. In reality, therefore, it proves to be the primary process and the other the secondary one. When the rigid differences and opposites, as imagined by the metaphysicians and metaphysical natural scientists, were dialectically turned into their opposites by Hegel, it was said that he had twisted the words in their mouths. But if nature itself proceeds exactly like old Hegel, it is surely time to examine the matter more closely.

With greater justification one can regard as secondary those processes which, while taking place *in consequence* of the chemico-electric process of the battery or the electro-chemical process of the electrolytic cell, do so independently and separately, occurring therefore at some distance from the electrodes. Hence the energy transformations taking place in such secondary processes likewise do not enter into the electric process; directly they neither withdraw energy from it nor supply energy to it. Such processes occur very frequently in the electrolytic cell; we saw an instance in the example I. above on the formation of sulphuric acid during electrolysis of sodium sulphate. They are, however, of lesser interest here. Their occurrence in the battery, on the other hand, is of greater practical importance. For although they do not directly supply energy to, or withdraw it from, the chemico-electric process, nevertheless they alter the total available energy present in the battery and thus affect it indirectly.

There belong here, besides subsequent chemical changes of the ordinary kind, the phenomena that occur when the ions are liberated at the electrodes in a different condition from that in which they usually occur in the free state, and when they pass over to the latter only after moving away from the electrodes. In such cases the ions can assume a different density or a different state of aggregation. They can also undergo considerable changes in regard to their molecular constitution, and this case is the most interesting. In all these cases, an analogous heat change corresponds to the secondary chemical or physical change of the ions taking place at a certain distance from the electrodes; usually heat is set free, in some cases it is consumed. This heat change is, of course, restricted primarily to the place where it occurs: the liquid in the battery or electrolytic cell becomes warmer or cooler while the rest of the circuit remains unaffected by this change. Hence this heat is called *local* heat. The liberated chemical energy available for conversion into electricity is, therefore, diminished or increased by the equivalent of this positive or negative local heat produced in the battery. According to Favre, in a battery with hydrogen peroxide and hydrochloric acid two-thirds of the total energy set free is consumed as local heat; the Grove cell, on the other hand, on closing the circuit became considerably cooler and therefore supplied energy from outside to the circuit by absorption of heat. Hence we see that these secondary processes also react on the primary one. We can make whatever approach we like, the distinction between primary and secondary processes remains merely a relative one and is regularly suspended in the interaction of the one with the other. If this is forgotten and such relative opposites are treated as absolute, one finally gets hopelessly involved in contradictions, as we have seen above.

As is well known, on the electrolytic liberation of gases the metal electrodes become covered with a thin layer of gas; in consequence the current strength decreases until the electrodes are saturated with gas, whereupon the weakened current again becomes constant. Favre and Silbermann have shown that local heat arises also in such an electrolytic cell; this local heat, therefore, can only be due to the fact that the gases are not liberated at the electrodes in the state in which they usually occur, but that they are only brought into this usual state after their separation from the electrodes, by a further process bound up with the development of heat. But what is the state in which the gases are given off at the electrodes? One cannot express oneself more cautiously on this than Wiedemann does. He terms it a "certain," an "allotropic," an "active," and finally, in the case of oxygen, several times an "ozonized" state. In the case of hydrogen his statements are still more mysterious. Incidentally, the view comes out that ozone and hydrogen peroxide are the forms in which this "active" state is realized. Our author is so keen in his pursuit of ozone that he even explains the extreme electro-negative properties of certain peroxides from the fact that they "possibly contain a part of the oxygen *in the ozonized state*!*" (I, p. 57.) Certainly both ozone and hydrogen peroxide are formed on the so-called decomposition of water, but only in small quantities. There is no basis at all for assuming that in the case mentioned local heat is produced first of all by the origin and then by the decomposition of any large quantities of the above two compounds. We do not know the heat of formation of ozone ($O_3$) from *free* oxygen atoms. According to Berthelot the heat of formation of hydrogen peroxide from $H_2O$ (liquid)$+O=21,480$; the origin of this compound in any large amount would therefore give rise to a large excess of energy (about 30 per cent. of the energy required for the separation of $H_2$ and O), which could not but be evident and demonstrable. Finally, ozone and hydrogen peroxide would take only oxygen into account (apart from current reversals, where both gases would come together at the same electrode), but not hydrogen. Yet the latter also escapes in an "active" state, in such a way that in the combination: potassium nitrate solution between platinum electrodes, it combines directly with the nitrogen split off from the acid to form ammonia.

In point of fact, all these difficulties and doubts have no existence. The electrolytic process has no monopoly of splitting off bodies "in an active state." Every chemical decomposition does the same thing. It splits off the liberated chemical element in the first place in the form of free atoms of O, H, N, etc., which only after their liberation can unite to form molecules, $O_2$, $H_2$, $N_2$, etc., and on thus uniting give off a definite, though up-to-now still undetermined, quantity of energy which appears as heat. But during the infinitesimal moment of time when the atoms are free, they are the bearers of the total quantity of energy that they can take up at all; while possessed of their maximum energy they are free to enter into any combination offered them. Hence they are "in an active state" in contrast to the molecules $O_2$, $H_2$, $N_2$, which have already surrendered a part of this energy and cannot enter into combination with other elements without this quantity of energy surrendered being re-supplied from outside. We have no need, therefore, to resort only to ozone and hydrogen peroxide, which themselves are merely products of this active state. For instance, we can undertake the above-mentioned formation of ammonia on electrolysis of potassium nitrate even without a battery, simply by chemical means, by adding nitric acid or a nitrate solution to a liquid in which hydrogen is set free by a chemical process. In both cases the active state of the hydrogen is the same. But the interesting point about the electrolytic process is that here the transitory existence of the free atoms becomes as it were tangible. The process here is divided into two phases: the electrolysis provides free atoms at the electrodes, but their combination to form molecules occurs at some distance from the electrodes. However infinitesimally minute this distance may be compared to measurements relating to masses, it suffices to prevent the energy liberated on formation of the molecules being used for the electric process, at least for the most part, and so determines its conversion into heat—the local heat in the battery. But it is owing to this that the fact is established that the elements have been split off as free atoms and for a moment have existed in the battery as free atoms. This fact, which in pure chemistry can only be established by theoretical conclusions, is here proved experimentally, in so far as this is possible without sensuous perception of the atoms and molecules themselves. Herein lies the high scientific importance of the so-called local heat of the battery.

---

* Italics by Engels.—*Ed.*

---

The conversion of chemical energy into electricity by means of the battery is a process about whose course we know next to nothing, and we shall become more closely acquainted with it only when the *modus operandi* of electric motion itself becomes better known.

The battery has ascribed to it an "electric force of separation" which is given for each particular battery. As we saw at the outset, Wiedemann conceded that this electric force of separation is not a definite form of energy. On the contrary, it is primarily nothing more than the capacity, the property, of a battery to convert a definite quantity of liberated chemical energy into electricity in unit time. Throughout the whole process, this chemical energy itself never assumes the form of an "electric force of separation," but, on the contrary, at once and immediately takes on the form of so-called "electromotive force," i.e., of electric motion. If in ordinary life we speak of the force of a steam-engine in the sense that it is capable in unit time of converting a definite quantity of heat into the motion of masses, this is not a reason for introducing the same confusion of ideas into scientific thought also. We might just as well speak of the varying force of a pistol, a carbine, a smooth-bored gun, and a rifle, because, with equal gunpowder charges and projectiles of equal weight, they shoot varying distances. But here the wrongness of the expression is quite obvious. Everyone knows that it is the ignition of the gunpowder charge that drives the bullet, and that the varying range of the weapon is only determined by the greater or lesser dissipation of energy according to the length of the barrel, the clearance of the projectile,[84] and the form of the latter. But it is the same for the force of steam and for the electric force of separation. Two steam-engines—other conditions being equal, i.e., assuming the quantity of energy liberated in equal periods of time to be equal in both—or two galvanic batteries, of which the same thing holds good, differ as regards performance of work only owing to their greater or lesser dissipation of energy. And if until now all armies have been able to develop the technique of fire-arms without the assumption of a special shooting force of weapons, the science of electricity has absolutely no excuse for assuming an "electric force of separation" analogous to this shooting force, a force which embodies absolutely no energy and which therefore of itself cannot perform a millionth of a milligram-millimetre of work.

The same thing holds good for the second form of this "force of separation," the "electric force of contact of metals" mentioned by Helmholtz. It is nothing but the property of metals to convert on their contact the existing energy of another form into electricity. Hence it is likewise a force that does not contain a particle of energy. If we assume with Wiedemann that the source of energy of contact electricity lies in the *vis viva* of the motion of adhesion, then this energy exists in the first place in the form of this mass motion and on its vanishing becomes converted immediately into electric motion, without even for a moment assuming the form of an "electric force of contact."

And now we are assured in addition that the electromotive force, i.e., the chemical energy, reappearing as electric motion is proportional to this "electric force of separation," which not only contains no energy, but owing to the very conception of it *cannot* contain any! This proportionality between non-energy and energy obviously belongs to the same mathematics as that in which there figures the "ratio of the unit of electricity to the milligram." But the absurd form, which owes its existence only to the conception of a simple *property* as a mystical *force*, conceals a quite simple tautology: the capacity of a given battery to convert liberated chemical energy into electricity is measured—by what? By the quantity of the energy reappearing in the closed circuit as electricity in relation to the chemical energy consumed in the battery. That is all.

In order to arrive at an electric force of separation, one must take seriously the emergency device of the two electric fluids. To convert these from their neutrality to their polarity, hence to split them apart, requires a certain expenditure of energy—the electric force of separation. Once separated, the two electricities can, on being reunited, again give off the same quantity of energy—electromotive force. But since nowadays no one, not even Wiedemann, regards the two electricities as having a real existence, it means that one is writing for a defunct public if one deals at length with such a point of view.

The basic error of the contact theory consists in the fact that it cannot divorce itself from the idea that contact force or electric force of separation is a *source of energy*, which of course was difficult when the mere property of an apparatus to bring about transformation of energy had been converted into a *force*; for indeed, a *force* ought precisely to be a definite form of energy. Because Wiedemann cannot rid himself of this unclear notion of force, although side by side with it the modern ideas of indestructible and uncreatable energy have been forced upon him, he falls into his nonsensical explanation No. 1, of the current, and into all the later demonstrated contradictions.

If the expression "electric force of separation" is directly contrary to reason, the other "electromotive force" is at least superfluous. We had heat engines long before we had electromotors, and yet the theory of heat has been developed quite well without any special thermo-motor force. Just as the simple expression "heat" includes all phenomena of motion that belong to this form of energy, so also can the expression "electricity" in its own sphere. Moreover, very many forms of action of electricity are not at all directly "motor": the magnetization of iron, chemical decomposition, conversion into heat. And finally, in every natural science, even in mechanics, it is always an advance if the word *force* can somewhere be got rid of.

We saw that Wiedemann did not accept the chemical explanation of the processes in the battery without a certain reluctance. This reluctance continually attacks him; where he can blame anything on the so-called chemical theory, this is certain to occur. Thus, "it is by no means established that electromotive force is proportional to the intensity of chemical action." (I, p. 791.) Certainly not in every case; but where this proportionality does not occur, it is only a proof that the battery has been badly constructed, that dissipation of energy takes place in it. For that reason Wiedemann is quite right in paying absolutely no attention in his theoretical deductions to such subsidiary circumstances which falsify the purity of the process, but in simply assuring us that the electromotive force of a cell is equal to the mechanical equivalent of the chemical action taking place in it in unit time with unit intensity of current.

In another passage we read: "That further, in the acid-alkali battery, the combination of acid and alkali is not the cause of current formation follows from the experiments paragraph 61 (Becquerel and Fechner), paragraph 260 (Du-Bois-Reymond), and paragraph 261 (Worm-Müller), according to which in certain cases when these are present in equivalent quantities no current makes its appearance, and likewise from the experiment (Henrici) mentioned in paragraph 62, that on interposing a solution of potassium nitrate between the potassium hydroxide and nitric acid, the electromotive force makes its appearance in the same way as without this interposition."* (I, p. 791.)

The question whether the combination of acid and alkali is the cause of current formation is a matter of very serious concern for our author. Put in this form it is very easy to answer. The combination of acid and alkali is first of all the cause of a *salt* being formed with liberation of energy. Whether this energy wholly or partly takes the form of electricity depends on the circumstances under which it is liberated. For instance, in the battery: nitric acid and potassium hydroxide between platinum electrodes, this will be at least partially the case, and it is a matter of indifference for the *formation* of the current whether a potassium nitrate solution is interposed between the acid and alkali or not, since this can at most slow down the salt formation but not prevent it. If, however, a battery is formed like one of Worm-Müller's, to which Wiedemann constantly refers, where the acid and the alkali solutions are in the middle, but a solution of their salt at both ends, and in the same concentration as the solution that is formed in the battery, then it is obvious that no current can arise, because on account of the end members—since everywhere identical bodies are formed—*no ions can be produced*. Hence the conversion of the liberated energy into electricity has been prevented in as direct a manner as if the circuit had not been closed at all; it is therefore not to be wondered at that no current is obtained. But that acid and alkali can in general produce a current is proved by the battery: carbon, sulphuric acid (one part in ten of water), potassium hydroxide (one part in ten of water), carbon, which according to Raoult has a current strength of 73.* And that, with suitable arrangement of the battery, acid and alkali can provide a current strength corresponding to the large quantity of energy set free on their combination, is seen from the fact that the most powerful batteries known depend almost exclusively on the formation of alkali salts, e.g., that of Wheatstone: platinum, platinic chloride, potassium amalgam—current strength 230; lead peroxide, dilute sulphuric acid, potassium amalgam = 326; manganese peroxide instead of lead peroxide = 280; in each case, if zinc amalgam was employed instead of potassium amalgam, the current strength fell almost exactly by 100. Similarly in the battery: manganese dioxide, potassium permanganate solution, potassium hydroxide, potassium, Beetz obtained the current strength 302, and further: platinum, dilute sulphuric acid, potassium = 293.8; Joule: platinum, nitric acid, potassium hydroxide, potassium amalgam = 302. The "cause" of these exceptionally high current strengths is certainly the combination of acid and alkali, or alkali metal, and the large quantity of energy thereby liberated.

---

* Names included in brackets are added by Engels.—*Ed.*

A few pages further on it is again stated: "It must, however, be carefully borne in mind that the equivalent in work of the whole chemical action occurring at the place of contact of the heterogeneous bodies is not to be directly regarded as the measure of the electromotive force in the closed circuit. When, for instance, in the acid-alkali battery (*iterum Crispinus!*)[85] of Becquerel, these two substances combine; when carbon is consumed in the battery: platinum, molten potassium nitrate, carbon; when zinc is rapidly dissolved in an ordinary cell of copper, impure zinc, dilute sulphuric acid, with formation of local currents, then a large part of the work produced" (it should read: energy liberated) "in these chemical processes . . . is converted into heat and is thus lost for the total current circuit." (I, p. 798.) All these processes are to be referred to loss of energy in the battery; they do not affect the fact that the electric motion arises from transformed chemical energy, but only affect the quantity of energy transformed.

---

* In all the following data relating to current strength, the Daniell cell is put = 100. [*Note by Engels.*]

Electricians have devoted an endless amount of time and trouble to composing the most diverse batteries and measuring their "electromotive force." The experimental material thus accumulated contains very much of value, but certainly still more that is valueless. For instance, what is the scientific value of experiments in which "water" is employed as the electrolyte, when, as has now been proved by F. Kohlrausch, water is the worst conductor and therefore also the worst electrolyte,* and where, therefore, it is not the water but its unknown impurities that caused the process? And yet, for instance, almost half of all Fechner's experiments depend on such employment of water, even his "*experimentum crucis*,"[86] by which he sought to establish the contact theory impregnably on the ruins of the chemical theory. As is already evident from this, in almost all such experiments, a few only excepted, the chemical processes in the battery, which however form the source of the so-called electromotive force, remain practically disregarded. There are, however, a number of batteries whose chemical composition does not allow of any certain conclusion being drawn as to the chemical changes proceeding in them when the current circuit is closed. On the contrary, as Wiedemann (I, p. 797) says, it is "not to be denied that we are by no means in all cases able to obtain an insight into the chemical attractions in the battery." Hence, from the ever more important chemical aspect, all such experiments are valueless unless they are repeated with these processes under control.

---

* A column of the purest water prepared by Kohlrausch 1 mm. in length offered the same resistance as a copper conductor of the same diameter and a length approximately that of the moon's orbit. (Naumann, *Allgemeine Chemie*, S. 729.) [*Note by Engels.*]

In these experiments it is indeed only quite by way of exception that any account is taken of the energy transformations taking place in the battery. Many of them were made before the law of the equivalence of motion was recognized in natural science, but as a matter of custom they continue to be dragged from one textbook into another without having been checked or brought to a finish. It has been said that electricity has no inertia (which has about as much sense as saying velocity has no specific gravity), but this certainly cannot be said of the *theory* of electricity.

---

So far, we have regarded the galvanic cell as an apparatus in which, in consequence of the contact relations established, chemical energy is liberated in some way for the time being unknown, and converted into electricity. We have likewise described the electrolytic cell as an apparatus in which the reverse process is set up, electric motion being converted into chemical energy and used up as such. In so doing we had to put in the foreground the chemical aspect of the process, the aspect that has been so much neglected by electricians, because this was the only way of getting rid of the lumber of notions handed down from the old contact theory and the theory of the two electric fluids. This once accomplished, the question was whether the chemical process in the battery takes place under the same conditions as outside it, or whether special phenomena make their appearance that are dependent on the electric excitation.

In every science, incorrect notions are, in the last resort, apart from errors of observation, incorrect notions of correct facts. The latter remain even when the former are shown to be false. Although we have discarded the old contact theory, the established facts remain, of which this theory was supposed to be the explanation. Let us consider these and with them the electric aspect proper of the process in the battery.

It is not disputed that on the contact of heterogeneous bodies, with or without chemical changes, an excitation of electricity occurs which can be demonstrated by means of an electroscope or a galvanometer. As we have already seen at the outset, it is difficult to establish in a particular case the source of energy of these in themselves extremely minute phenomena of motion; it suffices that the existence of such an external source is generally conceded.

In 1850-53, Kohlrausch published a series of experiments in which he assembled the separate components of a battery in pairs and tested the static electric tensions produced in each case; the electromotive force of the cell should then be composed of the algebraic sum of these tensions. Thus, taking the tension of Zn/Cu = 100, he calculates the relative strengths of the Daniell and Grove cells as follows:

For the Daniell cell:

$$\mathrm{Zn/Cu + amalg.\ Zn/H_2SO_4 + Cu/SO_4Cu = 100 + 149 - 21 = 228;}$$

for the Grove cell:

$$\mathrm{Zn/Pt + amalg. Zn/H_2SO_4 + Pt/HNO_3 = 107 + 149 + 149 = 405,}$$

which closely agrees with the direct measurement of the current strengths of these cells. These results, however, are by no means certain. In the first place, Wiedemann himself calls attention to the fact that Kohlrausch only gives the final result but "unfortunately no figures for the results of the separate experiments."[37] In the second place, Wiedemann himself repeatedly recognizes that all attempts to determine quantitatively the electric excitations on contact of metals, and still more on contact of metal and liquid, are at least very uncertain on account of the numerous unavoidable sources of error. If, nevertheless, he repeatedly uses Kohlrausch's figures in his calculations, we shall do better not to follow him here, the more so as another means of determination is available which is not open to these objections.

If the two exciting plates of a battery are immersed in the liquid and afterwards joined into a closed circuit by the terminals of a galvanometer, then, according to Wiedemann, "the initial deflection of its magnetic needle, before chemical changes have altered the strength of the electric excitation, is a measure of the sum of the electromotive forces in the closed circuit."[88] Batteries of various strengths, therefore, give initial deflections of various strengths, and the magnitude of these initial deflections is proportional to the current strength of the corresponding batteries.

It looks as if we had here tangibly before our eyes the "electric force of separation," the "contact force," which causes motion independently of any chemical action. And this in fact is the opinion of the whole contact theory. In reality we are confronted here by a relation between electric excitation and chemical action that we have not yet investigated. In order to pass to this subject, we shall first of all examine rather more closely the so-called electromotive law; in so doing, we shall find that here also the traditional contact notions not only provide no explanation, but once again directly bar the way to an explanation.

If in any cell consisting of two metals and a liquid, e.g., zinc, dilute hydrochloric acid, and copper, one inserts a third metal such as a platinum plate, without connecting it to the external circuit by a wire, then the initial deflection of the galvanometer will be exactly the same as *without* the platinum plate. Consequently it has no effect on the excitation of electricity. But it is not permissible to express this so simply in electromotive language. Hence one reads:

"The sum of the electromotive forces of zinc and platinum and platinum and copper now takes the place of the electromotive force of zinc and copper in the liquid. Since the path of the electricities is not perceptibly altered by the insertion of the platinum plate, we can conclude from the identity of the galvanometer readings in the two cases, that the electromotive force of zinc and copper in the liquid is equal to that of zinc and platinum plus that of platinum and copper in the same liquid. This would correspond to Volta's theory of the excitation of electricity between the metals as such. The result, which holds good for all liquids and metals, is expressed by saying: On their electromotive excitation by liquids, metals follow the law of the voltaic series. This law is also given the name of the *electromotive law.*" (Wiedemann, I, p. 62.)

In saying that in this combination the platinum does not act at all as an exciter of electricity, one expresses what is simply a fact. If one says that it does act as an exciter of electricity, but in two opposite directions with equal strength so that the effect is neutralized, the fact is converted into a hypothesis merely for the sake of doing honour to the "electromotive force." In both cases the platinum plays the role of a supernumerary.

During the first deflection there is still no closed circuit. The acid, being undecomposed, does not conduct; it can only conduct by means of the ions. If the third metal has no influence on the first deflection, this is simply because it is still *isolated.*

How does the third metal behave *after* the establishment of the continuous current and during the latter?

In the voltaic series of metals in most liquids, zinc lies after the alkali metals fairly close to the positive end and platinum at the negative end, copper being between the two. Hence, if platinum is put as above between copper and zinc it is negative to them both. If the platinum had any effect at all, the current in the liquid would have to flow to the platinum both from the zinc and from the copper, that is away from both electrodes to the unconnected platinum; which would be a *contradictio in adjecto.* The basic condition for the efficacy of several different metals in the battery consists precisely in their being connected among themselves externally into a closed circuit. An unconnected, superfluous metal in the battery acts as a non-conductor; it can neither form ions nor allow them to pass through, and without ions we know of no conduction in electrolytes. Hence it is no mere supernumerary, it even stands in the way by forcing the ions to go round it.

The same thing holds good if we connect the zinc and platinum, leaving the copper unconnected in the middle; here the latter, if it had any effect at all, would produce a current from the zinc to the copper and another from the copper to the platinum; hence it would have to act as a sort of intermediary electrode and give off gaseous hydrogen on the side turned towards the zinc, which again is impossible.

If we discard the traditional electromotive mode of expression the case becomes extremely simple. As we have seen, the galvanic battery is an apparatus in which chemical energy is liberated and transformed into electricity. It consists as a rule of one or more liquids and two metals as electrodes, which must be connected together by a conductor outside the liquids. That constitutes the apparatus. Anything else that is dipped unconnected into the exciting liquid, whether metal, glass, resin, or anything else, cannot participate in the chemico-electric process taking place in the battery, in the formation of the current, so long as the liquid is not chemically altered by it; it can at most *hinder* the process. Whatever the capacity for exciting electricity of a third metal dipped into the liquid may be in relation to the liquid or to one or both electrodes of the battery, it cannot have any effect so long as this metal is not connected to the closed circuit outside the liquid.

Consequently, not only is Wiedemann's *derivation*, as given above, of the so-called electromotive law false, but the interpretation which he gives to this law is also false. One cannot speak of a compensating electromotive activity of the unconnected metal, since the sole condition for such activity is cut off from the outset; nor can the so-called electromotive law be deduced from a fact which lies outside the sphere of this law.

In 1845, old Poggendorff published a series of experiments in which he measured the electromotive force of the most various batteries, that is to say the quantity of electricity supplied by each of them in unit time. Of these experiments, the first twenty-seven are of special value, in each of which three given metals were one after another connected in the same exciting liquid to three different batteries, and the latter investigated and compared as regards the quantity of electricity produced. As a good adherent of the contact theory, Poggendorff also put the third metal unconnected in the battery in each experiment and so had the satisfaction of convincing himself that in all eighty-one batteries this "third in the alliance"[89] remained a pure supernumerary. But the significance of these experiments by no means consists in this fact but rather in the confirmation and establishment of the correct meaning of the so-called electromotive law.

Let us consider the above series of batteries in which zinc, copper, and platinum were connected together in pairs in dilute hydrochloric acid. Here Poggendorff found the quantities of electricity produced to be as follows, taking that of a Daniell cell as 100:

| | |
|---|---|
| Zinc-copper . . . . . . . | 78.8 |
| Copper-platinum . . . . | 74.3 |
| Total . . . . . . | 153.1 |
| Zinc-platinum . . . . . . | 153.7[90] |

Thus, zinc in direct connection with platinum produced almost exactly the same quantity of electricity as zinc-copper + copper-platinum. The same thing occurred in all other batteries, whatever liquids and metals were employed. When, from a series of metals in the same exciting liquid, batteries are formed in such a way that, according to the voltaic series valid for this liquid, the second, third, fourth, etc., one after the other are made to serve as negative electrodes for the preceding one and as positive electrodes for the one which follows, then the sum of the quantities of electricity produced by all these batteries is equal to the quantity of electricity produced by a battery formed directly between the two end members of the whole metallic series. For instance, in dilute hydrochloric acid the sum-total of the quantities of electricity produced by the batteries zinc-tin, tin-iron, iron-copper, copper-silver, and silver-platinum, would be equal to that produced by the battery: zinc-platinum. A pile formed from all the cells of the above series would, other things being equal, be exactly neutralized by the introduction of a zinc-platinum cell with a current of the opposite direction.

In this form, the so-called electromotive law has a real and considerable significance. It reveals a new aspect of the inter-connection between chemical and electrical action. Hitherto, on investigating mainly the *source* of energy of the galvanic current, this source, the chemical change, appeared as the active side of the process; the electricity was produced from it and therefore appeared primarily as passive. Now this is reversed. The electric excitation determined by the constitution of the heterogeneous bodies put into contact in the battery can neither add energy to nor subtract energy from the chemical action (other than by conversion of liberated energy into electricity). It can, however, according as the battery is made up, accelerate or slow down this action. If the battery, zinc-dilute hydrochloric acid-copper, produced in unit time only half as much electricity for the current as the battery, zinc-dilute hydrochloric acid-platinum, this means in chemical terms that the first battery produces in unit time only half as much zinc chloride and hydrogen as the second. *Hence the chemical action has been doubled, although the purely chemical conditions have remained the same.* The electric excitation has become the regulator of the chemical action; it appears now as the active side, and the chemical action as the passive side.

Thus, it becomes comprehensible that a number of processes previously regarded as purely chemical now appear as electro-chemical. Chemically pure zinc is not attacked at all by dilute acid, or only very weakly; ordinary commercial zinc, on the other hand, is rapidly dissolved with formation of a salt and production of hydrogen; it contains an admixture of other metals and carbon, which make their appearance in unequal amounts at various places of the surface. Local currents are formed in the acid between them and the zinc itself, the zinc areas forming the positive electrodes and the other metals the negative electrodes, the hydrogen bubbles being given off on the latter. Likewise the phenomenon that when iron is dipped into a solution of copper sulphate it becomes covered with a layer of copper is now seen to be an electro-chemical phenomenon, one determined by the currents which arise between the heterogeneous areas of the surface of the iron.

In accordance with this we find also that the voltaic series of metals in liquids corresponds on the whole to the series in which metals replace one another from their compounds with halogens and acid radicals. At the extreme negative end of the voltaic series we regularly find the metals of the gold group: gold, platinum, palladium, rhodium, which oxidize with difficulty, are little or not at all attacked by acids, and which are easily precipitated from their salts by other metals. At the extreme positive end are the alkali metals, which exhibit exactly the opposite behaviour: they are scarcely to be split off from their oxides even with the greatest expenditure of energy; they occur in nature almost exclusively in the form of salts, and of all the metals they have by far the greatest affinity for halogens and acid radicals. Between these two come the other metals in somewhat varying sequence, but in such a way that on the whole electrical and chemical behaviour correspond to one another. The sequence of the separate members varies according to the liquids and has hardly been finally established for any single liquid. It is even permissible to doubt whether there exists such an *absolute* voltaic series of metals for any single liquid. Given suitable batteries and electrolytic cells, two pieces of the same metal can act as positive and negative electrodes respectively, hence the same metal can be both positive and negative towards itself. In thermo-cells which convert heat into electricity, with large temperature differences at the two junctions, the direction of the current is reversed; the previously positive metal becomes negative and *vice versa*. Similarly, there is no absolute series according to which the metals replace one another from their chemical compounds with a particular halogen or acid radical; in many cases by supplying energy in the form of heat we are able almost at will to alter and reverse the series valid for ordinary temperatures.

Hence we find here a peculiar interaction between chemism and electricity. The chemical action in the battery, which provides the electricity with the total energy for current formation, is in many cases first brought into operation, and in all cases quantitatively regulated, by the electric tensions developed in the battery. If previously the processes in the battery seemed to be chemico-electric in nature, we see here that they are just as much electro-chemical. From the point of view of formation of the *continuous* current, chemical action appears to be primary; from the point of view of *excitation* of current it appears as secondary and accessory. The reciprocal action excludes any absolute primary or absolute secondary; but it is just as much a double-sided process which from its very nature can be regarded from two different standpoints; to be understood in its totality it must even be investigated from both stand points one after the other, before the total result can be arrived at. If, however, we adhere one-sidedly to a single standpoint as the absolute one in contrast to the other, or if we arbitrarily jump from one to the other according to the momentary needs of our argument, we shall remain entangled in the one-sidedness of metaphysical thinking; the inter-connection escapes us and we become involved in one contradiction after another.

We saw above that, according to Wiedemann, the initial deflection of the galvanometer, immediately after dipping the exciting plates into the liquid of the battery and before chemical changes have altered the strength of the electric excitation, "is a measure of the sum of the electromotive forces in the closed circuit."

So far we have become acquainted with the so-called electromotive force as a form of energy, which in our case was produced in an equivalent amount from chemical energy, and which in the further course of the process became converted again into equivalent quantities of heat, mass motion, etc. Here all at once we learn that the "sum of the electromotive forces in the closed circuit" is already in existence *before* this energy has been liberated by chemical changes; in other words, that the electromotive force is nothing but the capacity of a particular battery to liberate a particular quantity of chemical energy in unit time and to convert it into electric motion. As previously in the case of the electric force of separation, so here also the electromotive force appears as a force which does not contain a single spark of energy. Consequently, Wiedemann understands by "electromotive force" two totally different things: on the one hand, the capacity of a battery to liberate

GANDHIJI SMARAKA GRANTHALAYA
BANGALORE - 19

a definite quantity of given chemical energy and to convert it into electric motion, and, on the other hand, the quantity of electric motion itself that is developed. The fact that the two are proportional, that the one is a measure for the other, does not do away with the difference between them. The chemical action in the battery, the quantity of electricity developed, and the heat in the circuit derived from it, when otherwise no work is performed, are even more than proportional, they are even equivalent; but that does not do away with the difference between them. The capacity of a steam-engine with a given cylinder bore and piston stroke to produce a given quantity of mechanical motion from the heat supplied is very different from this mechanical motion itself, however proportional to the latter it may be. And while such a mode of speech was tolerable at a time when in natural science nothing had yet been said of the conservation of energy, nevertheless it is obvious that since the recognition of this basic law it is no longer permissible to confuse real active energy in any form with the capacity of any apparatus to impart this form to energy which is being liberated. This confusion is a corollary of the confusion of force and energy in the case of the electric force of separation; these two confusions provide a harmonious background for Wiedemann's three mutually contradictory explanations of the current, and in the last resort are the basis in general for all his errors and confusions in regard to so-called "electromotive force."

Besides the above-considered peculiar interaction between chemism and electricity there is also a second point that they have in common, which likewise indicates a closer kinship between these two forms of motion. Both can exist only while they *disappear*. The chemical process takes place suddenly for each group of atoms undergoing it. It can be prolonged only by the presence of new material that continually enters into it. The same thing holds for electric motion. Hardly has it been produced from some other form of motion than it is once more converted into a third form; only the continual readiness of available energy can produce the continuous current, in which at each moment new amounts of motion (Bewegungsmengen) assume the form of electricity and lose it again.

An insight into this close connection of chemical with electric action and *vice versa* will lead to important results in both spheres of investigation. Such an insight is already becoming more and more widespread. Among chemists, Lothar Meyer, and after him Kekulé, have plainly stated that a revival of the electro-chemical theory in a rejuvenated form is impending. Among electricians also, as indicated especially by the latest works of F. Kohlrausch, the conviction seems finally to have taken hold that only exact attention to the chemical processes in the battery and electrolytic cell can help their science to emerge from the blind alley of old traditions.

And in fact one cannot see how else a firm foundation is to be given to the theory of galvanism and so secondarily to that of magnetism and static electricity, other than by a chemically exact general revision of all traditional, uncontrolled experiments made from an obsolete scientific standpoint, with exact attention to establishing the energy transformations and preliminary rejection of all traditional theoretical notions about electricity.

# THE PART PLAYED BY LABOUR IN THE TRANSITION FROM APE TO MAN[91]

Labour is the source of all wealth, the political economists assert. It is this—next to nature, which supplies it with the material that it converts into wealth. But it is also infinitely more than this. It is the primary basic condition for all human existence, and this to such an extent that, in a sense, we have to say: labour created man himself.

Many hundreds of thousands of years ago, during an epoch, not yet definitely determinable, of that period of the earth's history which geologists call the Tertiary period, most likely towards the end of it, a specially highly-developed race of anthropoid apes lived somewhere in the tropical zone—probably on a great continent that has now sunk to the bottom of the Indian Ocean. Darwin has given us an approximate description of these ancestors of ours. They were completely covered with hair, they had beards and pointed ears, and they lived in bands in the trees.

Presumably as an immediate consequence of their mode of life, which in climbing assigns different functions to the hands than to the feet, these apes when moving on level ground began to drop the habit of using their hands and to adopt a more and more erect gait. This was *the decisive step in the transition from ape to man.*

All anthropoid apes of the present day can stand erect and move about on their two feet alone, but only in an emergency and in a very clumsy way. Their natural gait is in a half-erect posture and includes the use of the hands. The majority rest the knuckles of the fist on the ground and, with legs drawn up, swing the body through their long arms, much as a cripple moves with the aid of crutches. In general, we can today still observe among apes all the transition stages from walking on all fours to walking on two legs. But for none of them has the latter method become more than a makeshift.

For erect gait among our hairy ancestors to have become first the rule and in time a necessity presupposes that in the meantime more and more activities devolved upon the hands. Even among the apes there already prevails a certain division in the employment of the hands and feet. As already mentioned, in climbing the hands are used differently from the feet. The former serve primarily for collecting and holding food, as already occurs in the use of the fore paws among lower mammals. Many monkeys use their hands to build nests for themselves in the trees or even, like the Chimpanzee, to construct roofs between the branches for protection against the weather. With their hands they seize hold of clubs to defend themselves against enemies, or bombard the latter with fruits and stones. In captivity, they carry out with their hands a number of simple operations copied from human beings. But it is just here that one sees how great is the gulf between the undeveloped hand of even the most anthropoid of apes and the human hand that has been highly perfected by the labour of hundreds of thousands of years. The number and general arrangement of the bones and muscles are the same in both; but the hand of the lowest savage can perform hundreds of operations that no monkey's hand can imitate. No simian hand has ever fashioned even the crudest stone knife.

At first, therefore, the operations, for which our ancestors gradually learned to adapt their hands during the many thousands of years of transition from ape to man, could only have been very simple. The lowest savages, even those in whom a regression to a more animal-like condition, with a simultaneous physical degeneration, can be assumed to have occurred, are nevertheless far superior to these transitional beings. Before the first flint was fashioned into a knife by human hands, a period of time must probably have elapsed in comparison with which the historical period known to us appears insignificant. But the decisive step was taken: *the hand became free* and could henceforth attain ever greater dexterity and skill, and the greater flexibility thus acquired was inherited and increased from generation to generation.

Thus the hand is not only the organ of labour, *it is also the product of labour*. Only by labour, by adaptation to ever new operations, by inheritance of the thus acquired special development of muscles, ligaments, and, over longer periods of time, bones as well, and by the ever-renewed employment of these inherited improvements in new, more and more complicated operations, has the human hand attained the high degree of perfection that has enabled it to conjure into being the pictures of Raphael, the statues of Thorwaldsen, the music of Paganini.

But the hand did not exist by itself. It was only one member of an entire, highly complex organism. And what benefited the hand, benefited also the whole body it served; and this in two ways.

In the first place, in consequence of the law of correlation of growth, as Darwin called it. According to this law, particular forms of individual parts of an organic being are always bound up with certain forms of other parts that apparently have no connection with the first. Thus all animals that have red blood cells without a cell nucleus, and in which the occiput is connected to the first vertebra by means of a double articulation (condyles), also without exception possess lacteal glands for suckling their young. Similarly cloven hooves in mammals are regularly associated with the possession of a multiple stomach for rumination. Changes in certain forms involve changes in the form of other parts of the body, although we cannot explain this connection. Perfectly white cats with blue eyes are always, or almost always, deaf. The gradually increasing perfection of the human hand, and the parallel development and adaptation of the feet for erect gait, undoubtedly also, owing to such correlation, reacted on other parts of the organism. However, this action has as yet been much too little investigated for us to be able to do more here than to state the fact in general terms.

Much more important is the direct, demonstrable reaction of the development of the hand on the rest of the organism. As already said, our simian ancestors were gregarious; it is obviously impossible to seek the derivation of man, the most social of all animals, from non-gregarious immediate ancestors. The mastery over nature, which begins with the development of the hand, with labour, widened man's horizon at every new advance. He was continually discovering new, hitherto unknown, properties of natural objects. On the other hand, the development of labour necessarily helped to bring the members of society closer together by multiplying cases of mutual support, joint activity, and by making clear the advantage of this joint activity to each individual. In short, men in the making arrived at the point where *they had something to say* to one another. The need led to the creation of its organ; by modulation the undeveloped larynx of the ape was slowly but surely transformed for ever more developed modulation, and the organs of the mouth gradually learned to pronounce one articulate letter after another.

Comparison with animals proves that this explanation of the origin of language from labour and together with labour is the only correct one. The little that even the most highly-developed animals need to communicate to one another can be communicated even without articulate speech. In a state of nature, no animal feels handicapped by its inability to speak or to understand human speech. It is quite different when it has been tamed by man. The dog and the horse, by association with man, have developed such a good ear for articulate speech that they easily learn to understand any language within the range of their circle of ideas. Moreover they have acquired the capacity for feelings, such as affection for man, gratitude, etc., which were previously foreign to them. Anyone who has had much to do with such animals will hardly be able to escape the conviction that there are quite a few cases where they *now* feel their inability to speak as a defect, although, unfortunately, it can no longer be remedied owing to their vocal organs being specialized in a definite direction. However, where the organ exists, within certain limits even this inability disappears. The buccal organs of birds are of course radically different from those of man, yet birds are the only animals that can learn to speak; and it is the bird with the most hideous voice, the parrot, that speaks best of all. Let no one object that the parrot does not understand what it says. It is true that for the sheer pleasure of talking and associating with human beings, the parrot will chatter for hours at a stretch, continuing to repeat its whole vocabulary. But within the limits of its circle of ideas it can also learn to understand what it is saying. Teach a parrot swear words in such a way that it gets an idea of their significance (one of the great amusements of sailors returning from the tropics); tease it and you will soon discover that it knows how to use its swear words just as correctly as a Berlin costermonger. Similarly with begging for tit-bits.

First labour, after it, and then with it, articulate speech—these were the two most essential stimuli under the influence of which the brain of the ape gradually changed into that of man, which for all its similarity to the former is far larger and more perfect. Hand in hand with the development of the brain went the development of its most immediate instruments—the sense organs. Just as the gradual development of speech is necessarily accompanied by a corresponding refinement of the organ of hearing, so the development of the brain as a whole is accompanied by a refinement of all the senses. The eagle sees much farther than man, but the human eye sees considerably more in things than does the eye of the eagle. The dog has a far keener sense of smell than man, but it does not distinguish a hundredth part of the odours that for man are definite features of different things. And the sense of touch, which the ape hardly possesses in its crudest initial form, has been developed only side by side with the development of the human hand itself, through the medium of labour.—

The reaction on labour and speech of the development of the brain and its attendant senses, of the increasing clarity of consciousness, power of abstraction and of judgement, gave an ever-renewed impulse to the further development of both labour and speech. This further development did not reach its conclusion when man finally became distinct from the monkey, but, on the whole, has continued since to make powerful progress, varying in degree and direction among different peoples and at different times, and here and there even interrupted by local or temporary regression. This further development has been strongly urged forward, on the one hand, and has been guided along more definite directions on the other hand, owing to a new element which came into play with the appearance of fully-fledged man, viz., *society*.

Hundreds of thousands of years—of no greater significance in the history of the earth than one second in the life of man*—certainly elapsed before human society arose out of a band of tree-climbing monkeys. Yet it did finally appear. And what do we find once more as the characteristic difference between the band of monkeys and human society? *Labour.* The ape band was satisfied to browse over the feeding area determined for it by geographical conditions or the resistance of neighbouring bands; it undertook migrations and struggles to win new feeding grounds, but it was incapable of extracting from them more than they offered in their natural state, except that the band unconsciously fertilized the soil with its own excrements. As soon as all possible feeding grounds were occupied, further increase of the monkey population could not occur; the number of animals could at best remain stationary. But all animals waste a great deal of food, and, in addition, destroy in embryo the next generation of the food supply. Unlike the hunter, the wolf does not spare the doe which would provide it with young deer in the next year; the goats in Greece, which graze away the young bushes before these grow up, have eaten bare all the mountains of the country. This "predatory economy" of animals plays an important part in the gradual transformation of species by forcing them to adapt themselves to other than the usual food, thanks to which their blood acquires a different chemical composition and the whole physical constitution gradually alters, while species that were once established die out. There is no doubt that this predatory economy has powerfully contributed to the transition of our ancestors from ape to man. In a race of apes that far surpassed all others in intelligence and adaptability, this predatory economy could not help leading to a continual increase in the number of plants used for food and to the devouring of more and more edible parts of these plants. In short, it led to the food becoming more and more varied, hence also the substances entering the body, the chemical premises for the transition to man. But all that was not yet labour in the proper sense of the word. Labour begins with the making of tools. And what are the most ancient tools that we find—the most ancient judging by the heirlooms of prehistoric man that have been discovered, and by the mode of life of the earliest historical peoples and of the most primitive of contemporary savages? They are hunting and fishing implements, the former at the same time serving as weapons. But hunting and fishing presuppose the transition from an exclusively vegetable diet to the concomitant use of meat, and we have here another essential step in the transition to man. A *meat diet* contains in an almost ready state the most essential substances required by the organism for its metabolism. It shortened the time required, not only for digestion, but also for the other vegetative bodily processes corresponding to those of plant life, and thus gained further time, material, and desire for the active manifestation of animal life in the proper sense of the term. And the further that man in the making became removed from the plant kingdom, the higher he rose also above animals. Just as becoming accustomed to a plant diet side by side with meat converted wild cats and dogs into the servants of man, so also adaptation to a flesh diet, side by side with a vegetable diet, considerably contributed to giving bodily strength and independence to man in the making. The most essential effect, however, of a flesh diet was on the brain, which now received a far richer flow of the materials necessary for its nourishment and development, and which therefore could become more rapidly and perfectly developed from generation to generation. With all respect to the vegetarians, it has to be recognized that man did not come into existence without a flesh diet, and if the latter, among all peoples known to us, has led to cannibalism at some time or another (the forefathers of the Berliners, the Weletabians or Wilzians, used to eat their parents as late as the tenth century), that is of no consequence to us today.

---

* A leading authority in this respect, Sir W. Thomson, has calculated that *little more than a hundred million years* could have elapsed since the time when the earth had cooled sufficiently for plants and animals to be able to live on it. [*Note by Engels.*]

A meat diet led to two new advances of decisive importance: to the utilization of fire and the taming of animals. The first still further shortened the digestive process, as it provided the mouth with food already, as it were, semi-digested; the second made meat more copious by opening up a new, more regular source of supply in addition to hunting, and moreover provided, in milk and its products, a new article of food at least as valuable as meat in its composition. Thus, both these advances became directly new means of emancipation for man. It would lead us too far to dwell here in detail on their indirect effects notwithstanding the great importance these have had for the development of man and society.

Just as man learned to consume everything edible, he learned also to live in any climate. He spread over the whole of the habitable world, being the only animal that had the power to do so on its own account. The other animals that have become accustomed to all climates—domestic animals and vermin—did not become so independently, but only in the wake of man. And the transition from the uniformly hot climate of the original home of man to colder regions, where the year was divided into summer and winter, created new requirements: shelter and clothing as protection against cold and damp, new spheres for labour and hence new forms of activity, which further and further separated man from the animal.

By the co-operation of hands, organs of speech, and brain, not only in each individual, but also in society, human beings became capable of executing more and more complicated operations, and of setting themselves, and achieving, higher and higher aims. From generation to generation, labour itself became different, more perfect, more diversified. Agriculture was added to hunting and cattle-breeding, then spinning, weaving, metal-working, pottery, and navigation. Along with trade and industry, there appeared finally art and science. From tribes there developed nations and states. Law and politics arose, and with them the fantastic reflection of human things in the human mind: religion. In the face of all these creations, which appeared in the first place to be products of the mind, and which seemed to dominate human societies, the more modest productions of the working hand retreated into the background, the more so since the mind that planned the labour process already at a very early stage of development of society (e.g., already in the simple family), was able to have this planned labour carried out by other hands than its own. All merit for the swift advance of civilization was ascribed to the mind, to the development and activity of the brain. Men became accustomed to explain their actions from their thoughts, instead of from their needs (which in any case are reflected, come to consciousness in the mind)—and so there arose in the course of time that idealistic outlook on the world which, especially since the downfall of the ancient world, has dominated men's minds. It still rules them to such a degree that even the most materialistic natural scientists of the Darwinian school are still unable to form any clear idea of the origin of man, because under that ideological influence they do not recognize the part that has been played therein by labour.

Animals, as already indicated, change external nature by their activities just as man does, even if not to the same extent, and these changes made by them in their environment, as we have seen, in turn react upon and change their originators. For in nature nothing takes place in isolation. Everything affects every other thing and *vice versa*, and it is mostly because this all-sided motion and interaction is forgotten that our natural scientists are prevented from clearly seeing the simplest things. We have seen how goats have prevented the regeneration of forests in Greece; on St. Helena, goats and pigs brought by the first navigators to arrive there succeeded in exterminating almost completely the old vegetation of the island, and so prepared the ground for the spreading of plants brought by later sailors and colonists. But if animals exert a lasting effect on their environment, it happens unintentionally, and, as far as the animals themselves are concerned, it is an accident. The further men become removed from animals, however, the more their effect on nature assumes the character of premeditated, planned action directed towards definite ends known in advance. The animal destroys the vegetation of a locality without realizing what it is doing. Man destroys it in order to sow field crops on the soil thus released, or to plant trees or vines which he knows will yield many times the amount sown. He transfers useful plants and domestic animals from one country to another and thus changes the flora and fauna of whole continents. More than this. Through artificial breeding, both plants and animals are so changed by the hand of man that they become unrecognizable. The wild plants from which our grain varieties originated are still being sought in vain. The question of the wild animal from which our dogs are descended, the dogs themselves being so different from one another, or our equally numerous breeds of horses, is still under dispute.

It goes without saying, of course, that we have no intention of disputing the ability of animals to act in a planned and premeditated fashion. On the contrary, a planned mode of action exists in embryo wherever protoplasm, living protein, exists and reacts, i.e., carries out definite, even if extremely simple, movements as a result of definite external stimuli. Such reaction takes place even where there is as yet no cell at all, let alone a nerve cell. The manner in which insectivorous plants capture their prey appears likewise in a certain respect as a planned action, although performed quite unconsciously. In animals the capacity for conscious, planned action develops side by side with the development of the nervous system and among mammals it attains quite a high level. While fox-hunting in England, one can observe every day how unerringly the fox knows how to make use of its excellent knowledge of the locality in order to escape from its pursuers, and how well it knows and turns to account all favourable features of the ground that cause the scent to be lost. Among our domestic animals, more highly developed thanks to association with man, every day one can note acts of cunning on exactly the same level as those of children. For, just as the developmental history of the human embryo in the mother's womb is only an abbreviated repetition of the history, extending over millions of years, of the bodily evolution of our animal ancestors, beginning from the worm, so the mental development of the human child is only a still more abbreviated repetition of the intellectual development of these same ancestors, at least of the later ones. But all the planned action of all animals has never resulted in impressing the stamp of their will upon the world. It took man to do that.

In short, the animal merely *uses* external nature, and brings about changes in it simply by his presence; man by his changes makes it serve his ends, *masters* it. This is the final, essential distinction between man and other animals, and once again it is labour that brings about this distinction.*

Let us not, however, flatter ourselves overmuch on account of our human conquests over nature. For each such conquest takes its revenge on us. Each of them, it is true, has in the first place the consequences on which we counted, but in the second and third places it has quite different, unforeseen effects which only too often cancel out the first. The people who, in Mesopotamia, Greece,

---

* In the margin of the manuscript is written in pencil: "Ennoblement."—*Ed.*

Asia Minor, and elsewhere, destroyed the forests to obtain cultivable land, never dreamed that they were laying the basis for the present devastated condition of those countries, by removing along with the forests the collecting centres and reservoirs of moisture. When, on the southern slopes of the mountains, the Italians of the Alps used up the fir forests so carefully cherished on the northern slopes, they had no inkling that by doing so they were cutting at the roots of the dairy industry in their region; they had still less inkling that they were thereby depriving their mountain springs of water for the greater part of the year, making it possible for these to pour still more furious flood torrents on the plains during the rainy season. Those who spread the potato in Europe were not aware that with these farinaceous tubers they were at the same time spreading the disease of scrofula. Thus at every step we are reminded that we by no means rule over nature like a conqueror over a foreign people, like someone standing outside nature—but that we, with flesh, blood, and brain, belong to nature, and exist in its midst, and that all our mastery of it consists in the fact that we have the advantage over all other creatures of being able to know and correctly apply its laws.

And, in fact, with every day that passes we are learning to understand these laws more correctly, and getting to know both the more immediate and the more remote consequences of our interference with the traditional course of nature. In particular, after the mighty advances of natural science in the present century, we are more and more placed in a position where we can get to know, and hence to control, even the more remote natural consequences at least of our most ordinary productive activities. But the more this happens, the more will men once more not only feel, but also know, themselves to be one with nature, and thus the more impossible will become the senseless and anti-natural idea of a contradiction between mind and matter, man and nature, soul and body, such as arose in Europe after the decline of classic antiquity and which obtained its highest elaboration in Christianity.

But if it has already required the labour of thousands of years for us to learn to some extent to calculate the more remote *natural* consequences of our actions aiming at production, it has been still more difficult in regard to the more remote *social* consequences of these actions. We mentioned the potato and the resulting spread of scrofula. But what is scrofula in comparison with the effect on the living conditions of the masses of the people in whole countries that resulted from the workers being reduced to a potato diet, or in comparison with the famine which overtook Ireland in 1847 in consequence of the potato blight, and which consigned to the grave a million Irishmen, nourished on potatoes and almost exclusively on potatoes, and forced the emigration overseas of two million more? When the Arabs learned to distil alcohol, it never entered their heads that by so doing they were creating one of the chief weapons for the annihilation of the aborigines of the then still undiscovered American continent. And when afterwards Columbus discovered America, he did not know that by doing so he was giving a new lease of life to slavery, which in Europe had long ago been done away with, and laying the basis for the Negro slave traffic. The men who in the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries laboured to create the steam-engine had no idea that they were preparing the instrument which more than any other was to revolutionize social conditions throughout the world. Especially in Europe, by concentrating wealth in the hands of a minority, the huge majority being rendered propertyless, this instrument was destined at first to give social and political domination to the bourgeoisie, and then, however, to give rise to a class struggle between bourgeoisie and proletariat, which can end only in the overthrow of the bourgeoisie and the abolition of all class antagonisms.—But in this sphere too, by long and often cruel experience and by collecting and analyzing the historical material, we are gradually learning to get a clear view of the indirect, more remote social effects of our productive activity, and so the possibility is afforded us of mastering and regulating these effects as well.

To carry out this regulation requires something more than mere knowledge. It requires a complete revolution in our hitherto existing mode of production, and with it of our whole contemporary social order.

All hitherto existing modes of production have aimed merely at achieving the most immediately and directly useful effect of labour. The further consequences, which only appear later on and become effective through gradual repetition and accumulation, were totally neglected. The original communal ownership of land corresponded, on the one hand, to a level of development of human beings in which their horizon was restricted in general to what lay immediately at hand, and presupposed, on the other hand, a certain surplus of available land, allowing a certain latitude for correcting any possible bad results of this primitive type of economy. When this surplus land was exhausted, communal ownership also declined. All higher forms of production, however, led to the division of the population into different classes and thereby to the antagonism of ruling and oppressed classes. But thanks to this the interest of the ruling class became the driving factor of production, in so far as the latter was not restricted to the barest means of subsistence of the oppressed people. This has been carried through most completely in the capitalist mode of production prevailing today in Western Europe. The individual capitalists, who dominate production and exchange, are able to concern themselves only with the most immediate useful effect of their actions. Indeed, even this useful effect—in as much as it is a question of the usefulness of the article that is produced or exchanged—retreats right into the background, and the sole incentive becomes the profit to be gained on selling.

---

The social science of the bourgeoisie, classical political economy, is predominantly occupied with only the directly intended social effects of human actions aimed at production and exchange. This fully corresponds to the social organization of which it is the theoretical expression. As individual capitalists are engaged in production and exchange for the sake of the immediate profit, only the nearest, most immediate results can be taken into account in the first place. When an individual manufacturer or merchant sells a manufactured or purchased commodity with the usual profit, he is satisfied, and he does not care what becomes afterwards of the commodity and its purchasers. The same thing applies to the natural effects of the same actions. What did it matter to the Spanish planters in Cuba, who burned down forests on the slopes of the mountains and obtained from the ashes sufficient fertilizer for *one* generation of very highly profitable coffee trees, what did it matter to them that the heavy tropical rainfall afterwards washed away the now unprotected upper stratum of the soil, leaving behind only bare rock? In relation to nature, as to society, the present mode of production is predominantly concerned only about the first, the most tangible result; and then surprise is expressed that the more remote effects of actions directed to this end turn out to be of quite a different, mainly even of quite an opposite, character; that the harmony of demand and supply becomes transformed into its polar opposite, as shown by the course of each ten years' industrial cycle, and of which Germany, too, has experienced a little prelude in the "crash";[92] that private property based on individual labour necessarily develops into the propertylessness of the workers, while all wealth becomes more and more concentrated in the hands of non-workers; that [. . .][93]

# [NOTES AND FRAGMENTS]

## [FROM THE HISTORY OF SCIENCE]

* * *

*The successive development* of the separate branches of natural science should be studied.—First of all, *astronomy*, which, if only on account of the seasons, was absolutely indispensable for pastoral and agricultural peoples. Astronomy can only develop with the aid of *mathematics*. Hence this also had to be tackled.—Further, at a certain stage of agriculture and in certain regions (raising of water for irrigation in Egypt), and especially with the origin of towns, big building structures and the development of handicrafts, *mechanics* also arose. This was soon needed also for *navigation* and *war*.—Moreover, it requires the aid of mathematics and so promotes the latter's development. Thus, from the very beginning the origin and development of the sciences has been determined by production.

Throughout antiquity, scientific investigation proper remained restricted to these three branches, and indeed in the form of exact, systematic research it occurs for the first time in the post-classical period (the Alexandrines, Archimedes, etc.). In physics and chemistry, which were as yet hardly separated in men's minds (theory of the elements, absence of the concept of a chemical element), in botany, zoology, human and animal anatomy, it had only been possible until then to collect facts and arrange them as systematically as possible. Physiology was sheer guess-work, as soon as one went beyond the most tangible things—e.g., digestion and excretion—and it could not be otherwise when even the circulation of the blood was not known.—At the end of the period, chemistry makes its appearance in the primitive form of alchemy.

If, after the dark night of the Middle Ages was over, the sciences suddenly arose anew with undreamt-of force, developing at a miraculous rate, once again we owe this miracle to production. In the first place, following the crusades, industry developed enormously and brought to light a quantity of new mechanical (weaving, clock-making, milling), chemical (dyeing, metallurgy, alcohol), and physical (spectacles) facts, and this not only gave enormous material for observation, but also itself provided quite other means for experimenting than previously existed, and allowed the construction of *new* instruments; it can be said that really systematic experimental science now became possible for the first time. Secondly, the whole of West and Middle Europe, including Poland, now developed in a connected fashion, even though Italy was still at the head owing to its old-inherited civilization. Thirdly, geographical discoveries—made purely for the sake of gain and, therefore, in the last resort, of production—opened up an infinite and hitherto inaccessible amount of material of a meteorological, zoological, botanical, and physiological (human) bearing. Fourthly, there was the *printing press.**

---

* In the margin of the manuscript opposite this paragraph is written: "Hitherto, what has been boasted of is what production owes to science, but science owes infinitely more to production."—*Ed.*

Now—apart from mathematics, astronomy, and mechanics, which were already in existence—physics becomes definitely separate from chemistry (Torricelli, Galileo—the former in connection with industrial waterworks studied first of all the movement of liquids, see Clerk Maxwell). Boyle put chemistry on a stable basis as a science. Harvey did the same for physiology (human and animal) by the discovery of the blood circulation. Zoology and botany remain at first collecting sciences, until palæontology appeared on the scene—Cuvier—and shortly afterwards came the discovery of the cell and the development of organic chemistry. Therewith comparative morphology and physiology became possible and from then on both are true sciences. Geology was founded at the end of the last [18th] century, and recently anthropology, badly so-called, enabling the transition from the morphology and physiology of man and human races to history. This to be studied further in detail and to be developed.

* * *

## THE ANCIENTS' OUTLOOK ON NATURE

(Hegel, *Geschichte der Philosophie*, Vol. I,—*Greek Philosophy*)[94]

Of the first philosophers, Aristotle says (*Metaphysics*, I, 3) that they assert: "That of which all things consist, from which they first come and into which they are ultimately resolved . . . of which the essence (οὐσία) persists although modified by its affections (πάθεσι) —this is an the element (στοιχετον) and principle (ἀρχή) of all being. . . . Hence they believe that nothing is either generated (οὔτε γίγνεσθαι οὐδέν) or destroyed, since this kind of primary entity always persists." (P. 198.) Here, therefore, is already the whole original spontaneous materialism which at its beginning quite naturally regards the unity of the infinite diversity of natural phenomena as a matter of course, and seeks it in something definitely corporeal, a particular thing, as Thales does in water.

Cicero says: "*Thales** of Miletos . . . declared that water is the basis of things, and God that mind that forms everything out of water." (*De Natura Deorum*, I, p. 10.) Hegel quite rightly declares that this is an addition of Cicero's, and says: "However, we are not concerned here with this question whether, in addition, Thales believed in God; it is not a matter here of supposition, belief, popular religion . . . and even if he spoke of God as having created all things from that water, we would not thereby know anything more of this being . . . it is an empty word without its idea," p. 209 (*ca.* 600 [B. C.]).

The oldest Greek philosophers were at the same time investigators of nature: *Thales*, a geometrician, fixed the year at 365 days, and is said to have predicted a solar eclipse.—*Anaximander* constructed a sun clock, a kind of map (περίμετρον) of land and sea, and various astronomical instruments.—*Pythagoras* was a mathematician.

*Anaximander* of Miletos, according to Plutarch (*Quæstiones convivales*,** VIII, p. 8), makes "*man come*

---

* Italics by Engels.—*Ed.*

** *Table Talk.—Ed.*

*from a fish, emerging from the water on to the land,"* p. 213. For him the ἀρχή καὶ στοιχεῖον τὸ ἄπειρον [beginning and element is the *infinite**], without determining (διορίζων) it as air or water or anything else, (Diogenes Laertius II, paragraph 1). This infinite correctly reproduced by Hegel, p. 215, as "undetermined matter" (*ca.* 580).

*Anaximenes* of Miletos takes *air* as principle and basic element, declaring it to be infinite (Cicero, *De Natura Deorum*, I, p. 10) and that "everything arises from it, in it everything is again dissolved" (Plutarch, *De placitis philosophorum*,** I, p. 3.)[95] Here air ἀήρ=πνεῦμα [breath, spirit]: "Just as our soul, which is air, holds us together, so also a spirit (πνεῦμα) and air hold the whole world together. Spirit and air have the same meaning" (Plutarch). Soul and air conceived as a general medium (*ca.* 555).

Aristotle already says that these ancient philosophers put the primordial essence in a form of matter: air and water (and perhaps Anaximander in something midway between both), later Heraclitus in fire, but none in earth on account of its multiple composition (διὰ τὴν μεγαλομέρειαν). *Metaphysics*, I, 8. (P. 217.)

Aristotle correctly remarks of all of them that they leave the origin of motion unexplained (p. 218 *et seq.*).

*Pythagoras* of Samos (*ca.* 540): *number* is the basic principle: "That *number* is the essence of all things, and the organization of the universe as a whole in its determinations is *a harmonious system of numbers and their relations.*"* (Aristotle, *Metaphysics*, I, 5 *passim.*) Hegel justly points out "the audacity of such language, which at one blow strikes down all that is regarded by the imagination as being or as essential (true), and annihilates the sensuous essence," and puts the essence in a thought determination, even if it is a very restricted and one-sided one. Just as number is subject to definite laws, so also the universe; hereby its obedience to law was expressed for the first time. To Pythagoras is ascribed the reduction of musical harmonies to mathematical relations. Likewise: "The Pythagoreans put fire in the centre, but the earth as a star which revolves in a circle around this central body." (Aristotle, *De coelo*,** II, 13.) This fire, however, is not the sun; nevertheless this is the first inkling that *the earth moves.*

---

* Italics by Engels.—*Ed.*

** *On the Opinions of Philosophers.—Ed.*

Hegel on the planetary system: ". . . the harmonious element, which determines the distances [between the planets]—all mathematics has still not been able to give any basis for it. The empirical numbers are accurately known; but it has all the appearance of chance, not of necessity. An approximate regularity in the distances is known, and thus with luck planets between Mars and Jupiter have been guessed at, where later Ceres, Vesta, Pallas, etc., were discovered; but astronomy still did not find a consistent series in which there was any sense, any reason. Rather it looks with contempt on the regular presentation of this series; for itself, however, it is an extremely important point which must not be surrendered." (P. 267 [-268].)

---

* Italics by Engels.—*Ed.*

** *Concerning the Sky.—Ed.*

For all the naïve materialism of the total outlook, the kernel of the later split is already to be found among the ancient Greeks. For Thales, the soul is already something special, something different from the body (just as he ascribes a soul also to the magnet), for Anaximenes it is air (as in *Genesis*), for the Pythagoreans it is already immortal and migratory, the body being purely accidental to it. For the Pythagoreans, also, the soul is "a chip of the ether (ἀπόσπασμα αἰθέρος)" (Diogenes Laertius, VIII, pp. 26-28), where the cold ether is the air, the dense ether the sea and moisture.

Aristotle correctly reproaches the Pythagoreans also: with their numbers "they do not say how motion comes into being, and how, without motion and change, there is coming into being and passing away, or states and activities of heavenly things." (*Metaphysics*, I, 8.)

Pythagoras is supposed to have discovered the identity of the morning and evening star, that the moon gets its light from the sun, and finally the Pythagorean theorem. "Pythagoras is said to have slaughtered a hecatomb on discovering this theorem . . . and however remarkable it may be that his joy went so far on that account as to order a great feast, to which the rich and the whole people were invited, it was worth the trouble. It is joyousness, joy of the spirit (knowledge)—at the expense of the oxen." (P. 279.)

*The Eleatics.*

* * *

*Leucippus and Democritus.*[96] "Leucippus, however, and his disciple Democritus hold that the elements are the *Full* and the Void — calling the one 'what is' and the other 'what is not.' Of these they identify the *full* or *solid* with 'what is' (i.e., the atoms) and the void or *rare* with 'what is not.' Hence they hold that what is not is no less real than what is . . . and they say that these are the material causes of things. And just as those who make the underlying substance a unity generate all other things by means of its modifications . . . so these thinkers hold that the '*differences*' (namely, of the atoms) are the causes of everything else. These differences, *they say, are three*: *shape*, *arrangement*, and position . . . . Thus, e.g., *A* differs from *N* in shape, *AN* from *NA* in *arrangement*, and *Z* from *N* in position." (Aristotle, *Metaphysics*, Book I. Chapter IV.)

Leucippus "was the first to set up atoms as general principles . . . and these he calls elements. Out of them arise the worlds unlimited in number and into them they are dissolved. This is how the worlds are formed. *In a given section* many atoms of all manner of shapes are carried from the unlimited into the vast empty space. These collect together and *form a single vortex*, in which they jostle against each other and, circling round in every possible way, separate off, by like atoms joining like. And, the atoms being so numerous that they can no longer revolve *in equilibrium, the light ones pass into the empty space outside*, as if they were being winnowed; the remainder keep together and, becoming entangled, go on their circuit together, and form a primary spherical system." (Diogenes Laertius, Book IX, Chap. 6.)[97]

*The following about Epicurus.* "The atoms are in continual *motion* through all eternity. Further, he says below, that the atoms move *with equal speed*, since the *void* makes way *for the lightest and heaviest alike* . . . Atoms have no quality at all except *shape*, *size*, and *weight*. . . . *They are not of any and every size; at any rate no atom has ever been seen by our sense.*" (Diogenes Laertius, Book X, par. 43-45.) "When they are travelling through the void and meet with no resistance, the atoms must move with equal speed. Neither will heavy atoms travel more quickly than small and light ones, so long as nothing meets them, nor will small atoms travel more quickly than large ones, *provided they always find a suitable passage*, and provided also that they meet with no obstruction." (*Ibid.*, par. 61.)

---

"Thus it is clear that in every kind [of things] the *one* is of a definite nature and that in none of them does this, the one, have its nature." (Aristotle, *Metaphysics*, Book IX, Chap. 2.)

* * *

*Aristarchus of Samos*, 270 B. C., already held the *Copernican theory of the Earth and Sun*. (Mädler, p. 44,[98] Wolf, pp. 35-37.[99])

*Democritus* had already surmised that the *Milky Way* sheds on us the combined light of innumerable small stars. (Wolf, p. 313.)

* * *

## DIFFERENCE BETWEEN THE SITUATION AT THE END OF THE ANCIENT WORLD, *CA.* 300—AND AT THE END OF THE MIDDLE AGES—1453:

1. Instead of a thin strip of civilization along the coast of the Mediterranean, stretching its arms sporadically into the interior and as far as the Atlantic coast of Spain, France, and England, which could thus easily be broken through and rolled back by the Germans and Slavs from the North, and by the Arabs from the South-East, there was now a closed area of civilization—the whole of West Europe with Scandinavia, Poland, and Hungary as outposts.

2. Instead of the contrast between the Greeks, or Romans, and the barbarians, there were now six civilized peoples with civilized languages, not counting the Scandinavian, etc., all of whom had developed to such an extent that they could participate in the mighty rise of literature in the fourteenth century, and guaranteed a far more diversified culture than that of the Greek and Latin languages, which were already in decay and dying out at the end of ancient times.

3. An infinitely higher development of industrial production and trade, created by the burghers of the Middle Ages; on the one hand production more perfected, more varied and on a larger scale, and, on the other hand, commerce much stronger, navigation being infinitely more enterprising since the time of the Saxons, Frisians, and Normans, and on the other hand also an amount of inventions and importation of oriental inventions, which not only for the first time made possible the importation and diffusion of Greek literature, the maritime discoveries, and the bourgeois religious

revolution, but also gave them a quite different and quicker range of action. In addition they produced a mass of scientific facts, although as yet unsystematized, such as antiquity never had: the magnetic needle, printing, type, flax paper (used by the Arabs and Spanish Jews since the twelfth century, cotton paper gradually making its appearance since the tenth century, and already more wide-spread in the thirteenth and fourteenth centuries, papyrus quite obsolete in Egypt since the Arabs)—gunpowder, *spectacles*, *mechanical clocks*, great progress both of *chronology* and of *mechanics*.

(See No. 11[100] concerning inventions.)

In addition material provided by travels (Marco Polo, *ca.* 1292, etc.).

General education, even though still bad, much more wide-spread owing to the universities.

With the rise of Constantinople and the fall of Rome, antiquity comes to an end. The end of the Middle Ages is indissolubly linked with the fall of Constantinople. The new age begins with the return to the Greeks—Negation of the negation!

* * *

## HISTORICAL MATERIAL.—INVENTIONS.

B. C.:

Fire-hose, water-clock, *ca.* 200 B.C. Street paving (Rome).

Parchment, *ca.* 160.

A. D.:

Watermills *on the Moselle*, *ca.* 340, in Germany in the time of Charles the Great.

First signs of glass windows, street lighting in Antioch, *ca.* 370.

Silk-worms from China, *ca.* 550 in Greece.

Quill pens in the sixth century.

Cotton paper from China to the Arabs in the seventh century, in the ninth in Italy.

Water-powered organs in France in the eighth century.

Silver mines in the Harz worked since the tenth century.

Windmills, about 1000.

Notes, Guido of Arezzo's musical scale, about 1000.

Sericulture introduced in Italy, about 1100.

Clocks with wheels—ditto.

Magnetic needle from the Arabs to the Europeans, *ca.* 1180.

Street paving in Paris, 1184.

| | |
|---|---|
| Spectacles in Florence. Glass mirrors. | Second half of thirteenth century. |
| Herring-salting. Sluices. | |
| Striking clocks. Cotton paper in France. | |

Rag-paper—beginning of fourteenth century.

Bills of exchange—middle of ditto.

First paper mill in Germany (Nuremberg), 1390.

Street lighting in London. Beginning of fifteenth century.

Post in Venice—ditto.

Wood-cuts and printing—ditto.

Copper-engraving—middle ditto.

Horse post in France, 1464.

Silver mines in the Saxon Erzgebirge, 1471.

Pedal clavicord invented, 1472.

Pocket watches. Air-guns. Flintlock—end of fifteenth century.

Spinning-wheel, 1530.

Diving bell, 1538.

* * *

## HISTORICAL[101]

Modern natural science—the only one which can come into consideration *qua* science as against the brilliant intuitions of the Greeks and the sporadic unconnected investigations of the Arabs—begins with that mighty epoch when feudalism was smashed by the burghers. In the background of the struggle between the burghers of the towns and the feudal nobility this epoch showed the peasant in revolt, and behind the peasant the revolutionary beginnings of the modern proletariat, already red flag in hand and with communism on its lips. It was the epoch which brought into being the great monarchies in Europe, broke the spiritual dictatorship of the Pope, evoked the revival of Greek antiquity and with it the highest artistic development of the new age, broke through the boundaries of the old world, and for the first time really discovered the world.

It was the greatest revolution that the world had so far experienced. Natural science also flourished in this revolution, was revolutionary through and through, advanced hand in hand with the awakening modern philosophy of the great Italians, and provided its martyrs for the stake and the prisons. It is characteristic that Protestants and Catholics vied with one another in persecuting it. The former burned Servetus, the latter

Giordano Bruno. It was a time that called for giants and produced giants, giants in learning, intellect, and character, a time that the French correctly called the Renaissance and Protestant Europe with one-sided prejudice called that of the Reformation.

At that time natural science also had its declaration of independence, though it is true it did not come right at the beginning, any more than that Luther was the first Protestant. What Luther's burning of the papal bull was in the religious field, in the field of natural science was the great work of Copernicus, in which he, although timidly, after thirty-six years' hesitation and so to say on his death-bed, threw down a challenge to ecclesiastical superstition. From then on natural science was in essence emancipated from religion, although the complete settlement of accounts in all details has gone on to the present day and in many minds is still far from being complete. But from then on the development of science went forward with giant strides, increasing, so to speak, proportionately to the square of the distance in time from its point of departure, as if it wanted to show the world that for the motion of the highest product of organic matter, the human mind, the law that holds good is the reverse of that for the motion of inorganic matter.

The first period of modern natural science ends—in the inorganic sphere—with Newton. It is the period in which the available subject-matter was mastered; it performed a great work in the fields of mathematics, mechanics and astronomy, statics and dynamics, especially owing to Kepler and Galileo, from whose work Newton drew the conclusions. In the organic sphere, however, there was no progress beyond the first beginnings. The investigation of the forms of life historically succeeding one another and replacing one another, as well as the changing conditions of life corresponding to them—palæontology and geology—did not yet exist. Nature was not at all regarded as something that developed historically, that had a history in time; only extension in space was taken into account; the various forms were grouped not one after the other, but only one beside the other; natural history was valid for all periods, like the elliptical orbits of the planets. For any closer analysis of organic structure both the immediate bases were lacking, viz., chemistry and knowledge of the essential organic structure, the cell. Natural science, at the outset revolutionary, was confronted by an out-and-out conservative nature, in which everything remained today as it was at the beginning of the world, and in which right to the end of the world everything would remain as it had been in the beginning.

It is characteristic that this conservative outlook on nature both in the inorganic and in the organic sphere [. . .][102]

Astronomy
Mechanics
Mathematics

Physics
Chemistry

Geology
Palæontology
Mineralogy

Plant physiology
Animal physiology
Anatomy

Therapeutics
Diagnostics

The first breach: Kant and Laplace. The second: geology and palæontology (Lyell, slow development).

The third: organic chemistry, which prepares organic bodies and shows the validity of chemical laws for living bodies. The fourth: 1842, mechanical [theory of] heat, Grove. The fifth: Darwin, Lamarck, the cell, etc. (struggle, Cuvier and Agassiz). The sixth: the *comparative element* in anatomy, climatology (isotherms), animal and plant geography (scientific travel expeditions since the middle of the eighteenth century), physical geography in general (Humboldt), the assembling of the material in its inter-connection. Morphology (embryology, Baer).[103]

The old teleology has gone to the devil, but it is now firmly established that matter in its eternal cycle moves according to laws which at a definite stage—now here, now there—necessarily give rise to the thinking mind in organic beings.

The normal existence of animals is given by the contemporary conditions in which they live and to which they adapt themselves—those of man, as soon as he differentiates himself from the animal in the narrower sense, have as yet never been present, and are only to be elaborated by the ensuing historical development. Man is the sole animal capable of working his way out of the merely animal state—his normal state is one appropriate to his consciousness, *one that has to be created by himself.*

* * *

### OMITTED FROM "FEUERBACH"[104]

[The vulgarizing peddlers who dealt in materialism in the Germany of the fifties in no wise went beyond these limits of their teachers.[105] All the advances made by natural science since then served them merely] as fresh arguments against the belief in a creator of the universe; and in fact the further development of theory was quite outside their line of business. Idealism was hard hit owing to 1848 but materialism in this renovated form of it sank still lower. Feuerbach was absolutely right in repudiating responsibility for *this* materialism; only he had no right to confuse the doctrine of the itinerant preachers with materialism in general.

At about the same time, however, empirical natural science made such an advance and arrived at such brilliant results that not only did it become possible to overcome completely the mechanical one-sidedness of the eighteenth century, but also natural science itself, owing to the proof of the inter-connections existing in nature itself between the various fields of investigation (mechanics, physics, chemistry, biology, etc.), was transformed from an empirical into a theoretical science and, by generalizing the results achieved, into a system of the materialist knowledge of nature. The mechanics of gases; newly-created organic chemistry, which stripped the last remnants of incomprehensibility from one so-called organic compound after another by preparing them from inorganic substances; scientific embryology dating from 1818; geology and palæontology; comparative anatomy of plants and animals—all these furnished new material in an unprecedented measure. Three great discoveries, however, were of decisive importance.

The first was the proof of the transformation of energy arising out of the discovery of the mechanical equivalent of heat (by Robert Mayer, Joule and

Colding). All the innumerable acting causes in nature, which had hitherto led a mysterious, inexplicable existence as so-called forces—mechanical force, heat, radiation (light and radiant heat), electricity, magnetism, chemical force of association and dissociation—have now been proved to be special forms, modes of existence of one and the same energy, i.e., motion. We can not only demonstrate its conversion from one form into another, which continually takes place in nature, but we can carry out this conversion in the laboratory and in industry, and indeed in such a way that a given quantity of energy in one form always corresponds to a given quantity of energy in some other form. Thus we can express the unit of heat in kilogram-metres and the units or any quantity of electrical or chemical energy once more in heat-units and *vice versa*; we can likewise measure the energy consumption and energy intake of a living organism and express it in any desired unit, e.g., in heat-units. The unity of all motion in nature is no longer a philosophical assertion, but a natural-scientific fact.

The second discovery—earlier in point of time—was that of the organic cell by Schwann and Schleiden, as being the unit out of which, by its multiplication and differentiation, all organisms with the exception of the lowest are formed and develop. This discovery for the first time gave a firm basis to the investigation of the organic, living products of nature—both comparative anatomy and physiology, and embryology. The origin, growth and structure of organisms were deprived of their mysterious character; the hitherto incomprehensible miracle was merged in a process which takes place according to a law that is essentially identical for all multicellular organisms.

But an essential gap still remained. If all multicellular organisms—both plants and animals, including man—in each case grow out of a single cell according to the law of cell division, what then is the source of the infinite diversity of these organisms? This question was answered by the third great discovery, the theory of evolution, which for the first time was comprehensively worked out and substantiated by Darwin. However many transformations this theory will still undergo as regards details, in the main it has already solved the problem in a more than adequate manner. The evolutionary series of organisms from a few simple forms to increasingly multifarious and complicated ones, as it confronts us today, and extending right up to man, has been established as far as its main features are concerned. Thanks to this, not only has it become possible to explain the existing stock of organic products of nature but the basis has also been provided for the pre-history of the human mind, for tracing the various stages of its development, from the simple protoplasm—structureless but sensitive to stimuli—of the lowest organisms right up to the thinking human brain. Without this pre-history, however, the existence of the thinking human brain remains a miracle.

By means of these three great discoveries, the main processes of nature were explained and referred to natural causes. One thing still remains to be done here: to explain the origin of life from inorganic nature. At the present stage of science that implies nothing less than the preparation of protein bodies from inorganic substances. Chemistry is approaching closer and closer to the solution of this task, but it is still a long way from it. If, however, we bear in mind that it was only in 1828 that Wöhler prepared the first organic body, urea, from inorganic materials, and what an innumerable number of so-called organic compounds are now artificially prepared without any organic materials, we shall not be inclined to bid chemistry halt when confronted by protein. So far chemistry has been able to prepare every organic substance, the composition of which is accurately known. As soon as the composition of the protein bodies becomes known, chemistry will be able to set about the preparation of living protein. But to demand that it should achieve overnight what nature itself succeeds in doing only under very favourable circumstances on a few cosmic bodies after millions of years, would be to demand a miracle.

Thus the materialist outlook on nature rests today on a much firmer foundation than it did in the previous century. At that time only the motion of the heavenly bodies and that of terrestrial solid bodies under the influence of gravity was at all exhaustively understood; almost the entire field of chemistry and the whole of organic nature remained mysterious and not understood. Today the whole of nature lies spread out before us as a system of inter-connections and processes that, at least in its main features, has been explained and understood. At all events, the materialist outlook on nature means nothing more than the simple conception of nature just as it is, without alien addition, and hence among the Greek philosophers it was originally understood in this way as a matter of course. But between those ancient Greeks and us lie more than two thousand years of an essentially idealist outlook on the world, and so the return to self-evident understanding is more difficult than it appears to be at first sight. For it is by no means a matter of simply throwing overboard the entire thought content of those two thousand years, but of a criticism of it, of extracting the results—that had been won within a form that was false and idealistic but which was inevitable for its time and for the course of evolution itself—from this transitory form. And how difficult that is, is proved for us by those numerous natural scientists who are inexorable materialists within their science but outside it are not merely idealists, but even pious and indeed orthodox Christians.

All these epoch-making advances of natural science passed Feuerbach by without affecting him in any essential respect. This was not so much his fault as that of the miserable German conditions, owing to which the university chairs were occupied by empty-headed, eclectic hair-splitters, while Feuerbach, who towered high above them, was compelled almost to rusticate in lonely village isolation. That is why, on the subject of nature, he wastes so much labour—except for a few brilliant generalizations—on empty belletristic writing. Thus he says: "Life is, of course, not the product of a chemical process, nor in general is it the product of an isolated natural force or phenomenon, to which the metaphysical materialist reduces it; it is a result of the whole of nature."[106] That life is a result of the whole of nature in no way contradicts the fact that protein, which is the exclusive independent bearer of life, arises under definite conditions determined by the whole inter-connection of nature, but arises precisely as the product of a chemical process. <Had Feuerbach lived in conditions which permitted him to follow even superficially the development of natural science, it would never have happened that he would speak of a chemical process as the effect of an isolated force of nature.>[107] To the same solitariness must be ascribed the fact that Feuerbach loses himself in a circle of barren speculations on the relation of thought to the thinking organ, the brain—a sphere in which Starcke follows him willingly.

Enough, Feuerbach revolts against the name materialism. And not entirely without reason; for he never completely ceases to be an idealist. In the field of nature he is a materialist; but in the human field [...].[108]

* * *

God is nowhere treated worse than by the natural scientists who believe in him. Materialists simply explain the *facts*, without making use of such phrases, they do this first when importunate pious believers try to force God upon them, and then they answer curtly, either like Laplace: *Sire, je n'avais pas, etc.*,[109] or more rudely in the manner of the Dutch merchants who, when German commercial travellers press their shoddy goods on them, are accustomed to turn them away with the words: *Ik kan die zaken niet gebruiken*,* and that is the end of the matter. But what God has had to suffer at the hands of his defenders! In the history of modern natural science, God is treated by his defenders as

---

* I have no use for the things.—*Ed.*

Frederick William III was treated by his generals and officials in the Jena campaign. One division of the army after another lays down its arms, one fortress after another capitulates before the march of science, until at last the whole infinite realm of nature is conquered by science, and there is no place left in it for the Creator. Newton still allowed Him the "first impulse" but forbade Him any further interference in his solar system. Father Secchi bows Him out of the solar system altogether, with all canonical honours it is true, but none the less categorically for all that, and he only allows Him a creative act as regards the primordial nebula. And so in all spheres. In biology, his last great Don Quixote, Agassiz, even ascribes positive nonsense to Him; He is supposed to have created not only the actual animals but also abstract animals, the fish as such! And finally Tyndall totally forbids Him any entry into nature and relegates Him to the world of emotional processes, only admitting Him because, after all, there must be somebody who knows more about all these things (nature) than John Tyndall![110] What a distance from the old God—the Creator of heaven and earth, the maintainer of all things—without whom not a hair can fall from the head!

Tyndall's emotional need proves nothing. The Chevalier des Grieux also had an emotional need to love and possess Manon Lescaut, who sold herself and him over and over again; for her sake he became a card-sharper and pimp, and if Tyndall wants to reproach him, he would reply with his "emotional need!"

God=*nescio*; but *ignorantia non est argumentum* (Spinoza).[111]

# [NATURAL SCIENCE AND PHILOSOPHY]

* * *

## BÜCHNER[112]

Rise of the tendency. The passing of German philosophy into materialism—control over science abolished—outbreak of shallow materialist popularization, in which the materialism had to make up for the lack of science. Its flourishing at the time of the deepest degradation of bourgeois Germany and official German science—1850-60. Vogt, Moleschott, Büchner. Mutual assurance. New impetus by the coming into fashion of Darwinism, which was immediately monopolized by these gentlemen.

One could let them alone and leave them to their not unpraiseworthy if narrow occupation of teaching atheism, etc., to the German philistine but for: 1, abuse directed against philosophy (passages to be quoted),* which in spite of everything is the glory of Germany, and 2, the presumption of applying the theories about nature to society and of reforming socialism. Thus they compel us to take note of them.

---

* Büchner is acquainted with philosophy only as a dogmatist, just as he himself is a dogmatist of the shallowest reflection of the German would-be Enlightenment, which missed the spirit and movement of the great French materialists (Hegel on this)—just as Nicolai had that of Voltaire. Lessing's "dead dog Spinoza."[113] ([Hegel] *Enzyklopädie*, Preface, p. 19.) [*Note by Engels*.]

First of all, what do they achieve in their own sphere? Quotations.

2. Turning point, pages 170-171. Whence this sudden Hegelianism?[114] Transition to dialectics.

Two philosophical tendencies, the metaphysical with fixed categories, the dialectical (Aristotle and especially Hegel) with fluid categories; the proofs that these fixed opposites of basis and consequence, cause and effect, identity and difference, appearance and essence are untenable, that analysis shows one pole already present in the other *in nuce*, that at a definite point the one pole becomes transformed into the other, and that all logic develops only from these progressing contradictions.—This mystical in Hegel himself, because the categories appear as pre-existing and the dialectics of the real world as their mere reflection. In reality it is the reverse: the dialectics of the mind is only the reflection of the forms of motion of the real world, both of nature and of history. Until the end of the last century, indeed until 1830, natural scientists could manage pretty well with the old metaphysics, because real science did not go beyond mechanics—terrestrial and cosmic. Nevertheless confusion had already been introduced by higher mathematics, which regards the eternal truth of lower mathematics as a superseded point of view, often asserting the contrary, and putting forward propositions which appear sheer nonsense to the lower mathematician. The rigid categories disappeared here; mathematics arrived at a field where even such simple relations as those of mere abstract quantity, bad infinity, assumed a completely dialectical form and compelled the mathematicians to become dialectical, unconsciously and against their will. There is nothing more comical than the twistings, subterfuges, and expedients employed by the mathematicians to solve this contradiction, to reconcile higher and lower mathematics, to make clear to their understanding that what they had arrived at as an undeniable result is not sheer nonsense, and in general rationally to explain the starting-point, method, and result of the mathematics of the infinite.

Now, however, everything is quite different. Chemistry, the abstract divisibility of physical things, bad infinity—atomistics. Physiolcgy—the cell (the organic process of development, both of the individual and of species, by differentiation, the most striking test of rational dialectics), and finally the identity of the forces of nature and their mutual convertibility, which put an end to all fixity of categories. Nevertheless, the bulk of natural scientists are still held fast in the old metaphysical categories and helpless when these modern facts, which so to say prove the dialectics in nature, have to be rationally explained and brought into relation with one another. And here *thinking* is necessary: atoms and molecules, etc., cannot be observed under the microscope, but only by the process of thought. Compare the chemists (except for Schorlemmer, who is acquainted with Hegel) and Virchow's *Cellular Pathology*, where in the end the helplessness has to be concealed by general phrases. Dialectics divested of mysticism becomes an absolute necessity for natural science, which has forsaken the field where rigid categories sufficed, which represent as it were the lower mathematics of logic, its everyday weapons. Philosophy takes its revenge posthumously on natural science for the latter having deserted it; and yet the scientists could have seen even from the successes in natural science achieved by philosophy that the latter possessed something that was superior to them even in their own special sphere (Leibniz—the founder of the mathematics of the infinite, in contrast to whom the inductive ass Newton[115] appears as a plagiarist[116] and corrupter; Kant—the theory of the origin of the universe *before* Laplace; Oken—the first in Germany to accept the theory of evolution; Hegel—whose [...][117] comprehensive treatment and rational grouping of the natural sciences is a greater achievement than all the materialistic nonsense put together).

---

On Büchner's claim to pronounce judgement on socialism and political economy on the basis of the struggle for existence: Hegel (*Enzyklopädie*, I, p. 9), on cobbling.[118]

On politics and socialism· the understanding for which the world has waited, p. 11.[119]

Separation, co-existence, and succession. Hegel, *Enzyklopädie*, p. 35! as determination of the sensuous, of the idea.

Hegel, *Enzyklopädie*, p. 40. Natural phenomena—but in Büchner not *thought about*, merely copied out, hence it is superfluous.

Page 42. Solon's laws were "produced out of his head"—Büchner is able to do the same for modern society.

Page 45. Metaphysics—the science of *things*—not of movements.

Page 53. "In experience everything depends upon the mind we bring to bear upon actuality. A great mind is great in its experience; and in the motley play of phenomena at once perceives the point of real significance."

Page 56. The parallelism between the human individual and history—the parallelism between embryology and palæontology.

* * *

Just as Fourier is a mathematical poem[120] and yet still used, so Hegel a dialectical poem.

* * *

The incorrect *theory of porosity* (according to which the various false matters, caloric, etc., are situated in the pores of one another and yet do not penetrate one another) is presented by Hegel as a pure *figment of the mind* (*Enzyklopädie*, I, p. 259. See also his *Logik.*[121])

* * *

Hegel, *Enzyklopädie*, I, pp. 205-206,[122] a prophetic passage on atomic weights in contrast to the physical views of the time, and on atoms and molecules as *thought* determinations, on which *thinking* has to decide.

* * *

If Hegel regards nature as a manifestation of the eternal "idea" in its alienation, and if this is such a serious crime, what are we to say of the morphologist

Richard Owen: "the archetypal idea was manifested in the flesh under diverse modifications upon this planet, long prior to the existence of those animal species that actually exemplify it." (*Nature of Limbs*, 1849.) If that is said by a mystical natural scientist, who means nothing by it, it is calmly allowed to pass, but if a philosopher says the same thing, and one who means something by it, and indeed *au fond* something correct, although in inverted form, then it is mysticism and a terrible crime.

* * *

*Natural-scientific thought.* Agassiz's plan of creation, according to which God proceeded in creation from the general to the particular and individual, first creating the vertebrate as such, then the mammal as such, the animal of prey as such, the cat as such, and only finally the lion, etc.! That is to say, first of all abstract ideas in the shape of concrete things and then concrete things! (See Hæckel, p. 59.)[123]

* * *

In *Oken* (Hæckel, p. 85 *et seq.*)[124] the nonsense that has arisen from the dualism between natural science and philosophy is evident. By the path of thought, Oken discovers protoplasm and the cell, but it does not occur to anyone to follow up the matter along the lines of natural-scientific investigation—it is to be accomplished by *thinking*! And when protoplasm and the cell were discovered, Oken was in general disrepute!

* * *

GANDHI SMARAKA GRANTHA
BANGALORE-1.

Hofmann (*Ein Jahrhundert Chemie unter den Hohenzollern*) cites the philosophy of nature. A quotation from Rosenkranz,[125] the belletrist, whom no real Hegelian recognizes. To make the philosophy of nature responsible for Rosenkranz is as foolish as Hofmann making the Hohenzollerns responsible for Marggraf's discovery of beet sugar.[126]

* * *

*Theory and empiricism.*—The oblateness of the earth was theoretically established by Newton. The Cassinis[127] and other Frenchmen maintained a long time afterwards, on the basis of their empirical measurements, that the earth is ellipsoidal and the polar axis the longest one.

* * *

The contempt of the empiricists for the Greeks receives a peculiar illustration if one reads, for instance, Th. Thomson (*On Electricity*[128]), where people like Davy and even Faraday grope in the dark (the electric spark, etc.), and make experiments that quite remind one of the stories of Aristotle and Pliny about physico-chemical phenomena. It is precisely in this new science that the empiricists entirely reproduce the blind groping of the ancients. And when Faraday with his genius gets on the right track, the philistine Thomson has to protest against it. (P. 397.)

* * *

Hæckel, *Anthropogenie*, p. 707. "According to the materialist outlook on the world, *matter or substance* was present *earlier than motion* or *vis viva*, matter created force."* This is just as false as that force created matter, since force and matter are inseparable.

Where does he get his materialism from?

* * *

*Causae finales* and *efficientes* transformed by Hæckel (pp. 89, 90)[129] into *purposively* acting and *mechanically* acting causes, because for him *causa finalis*=God! Likewise for him "mechanical," adopted out of hand from Kant,=monistic, not=mechanical in the sense of mechanics. With such confusion of language, nonsense is inevitable. What Hæckel says here of Kant's *Kritik der Urteilskraft* does not agree with Hegel. (*Geschichte der Philosophie* [Vol. III], S. 603.)[130]

* * *

Another[131] example of polarity in Hæckel: mechanism=monism, and vitalism or teleology=dualism. Already in Kant and Hegel *inner* purpose is a protest against dualism. Mechanism applied to life is a helpless category, at the most we could speak of chemism, if we do not want to renounce all understanding of names. Purpose: Hegel, V, p. 205: "Thus mechanism manifests itself as a tendency of totality in that it seeks to seize nature for itself as a whole which requires no other for its notion—a totality which is *not found in end and the extra-mundane understanding which is associated therewith.*"** The point is, however, that mechanism (and also the materialism of the eighteenth century) does not get away from abstract necessity, and hence not from chance either. That matter evolves out of itself the thinking human brain is for mechanism a pure accident, although necessarily determined, step by step, where it happens. But the truth is that it is the nature of matter to advance to the evolution of thinking beings, hence this always necessarily occurs wherever the conditions for it (not necessarily identical at all places and times) are present.

---

* Italics by Engels. In the manuscript, the word "earlier" is underscored with a double line.—*Ed.*

** Italics by Engels.—*Ed.*

Further, Hegel, V, p. 206: "Consequently, in its connection of external necessity, this principle (of mechanism)* affords the consciousness of infinite freedom as against teleology, which sets up as something absolute whatever it contains that is trivial or even contemptible; and here a more universal thought can only feel infinitely cramped or even nauseated."

Here, again, the colossal waste of matter and motion in nature. In the solar system there are perhaps three planets at most on which life and thinking beings could exist—under present conditions. And the whole enormous apparatus for their sake!

The *inner purpose* in the organism, according to Hegel (V, p. 244), operates through *impulse*. *Pas trop fort*. Impulse is supposed to bring the single living being more or less into harmony with the idea of it. From this it is seen how much the whole *inner purpose* is itself an ideological determination. And yet Lamarck is contained in this.

* * *

Natural scientists believe that they free themselves from philosophy by ignoring it or abusing it. They cannot, however, make any headway without thought, and for thought they need thought determinations. But they take these categories unreflectingly from the common consciousness of so-called educated persons, which is dominated by the relics of long obsolete philosophies, or from the little bit of philosophy compulsorily listened to at the University (which is not only fragmentary, but also a medley of views of people belonging to the most varied and usually the worst schools), or from uncritical and unsystematic reading of philosophical writings of all kinds. Hence they are no less in bondage to philosophy, but unfortunately in most cases to the worst philosophy, and those who abuse philosophy most are slaves to precisely the worst vulgarized relics of the worst philosophies.

---

* Added by Engels.—*Ed.*

* * *

Natural scientists may adopt whatever attitude they please, they are still under the domination of philosophy. It is only a question whether they want to be dominated by a bad, fashionable philosophy or by a form of theoretical thought which rests on acquaintance with the history of thought and its achievements.

"Physics, beware of metaphysics," is quite right, but in a different sense.[132]

Natural scientists allow philosophy to prolong an illusory existence by making shift with the dregs of the old metaphysics. Only when natural and historical science has become imbued with dialectics will all the philosophical rubbish—other than the pure theory of thought—be superfluous, disappearing in positive science.

# [DIALECTICS]

## [A) GENERAL QUESTIONS OF DIALECTICS. THE FUNDAMENTAL LAWS OF DIALECTICS]

* * *

Dialectics, so-called *objective* dialectics, prevails throughout nature, and so-called subjective dialectics, dialectical thought, is only the reflection of the motion through opposites which asserts itself everywhere in nature, and which by the continual conflict of the opposites and their final passage into one another, or into higher forms, determines the life of nature. Attraction and repulsion. Polarity begins with magnetism, it is exhibited in one and the same body; in the case of electricity it distributes itself over two or more bodies which become oppositely charged. All chemical processes reduce themselves to processes of chemical attraction and repulsion. Finally, in organic life the formation of the cell nucleus is likewise to be regarded as a polarization of the living protein material, and from the simple cell onwards the theory of evolution demonstrates how each advance up to the most complicated plant on the one side, and up to man on the other, is effected by the continual conflict between heredity and adaptation. In this connection it becomes evident how little applicable to such forms of evolution are categories like "positive" and "negative." One can conceive of heredity as the positive, conservative side, adaptation as the negative side that continually destroys what has been inherited, but one can just as well take adaptation as the creative, active, positive activity, and heredity as the resisting, passive, negative activity. But just as in history progress makes its appearance as the negation of the existing state of things, so here also—on purely *practical* grounds—adaptation is better conceived as negative activity. In history, motion through opposites is most markedly exhibited in all critical epochs of the foremost peoples. At such moments a people has only the choice between the two horns of a dilemma: "either—or!" and indeed the question is always put in a way quite different from that in which the philistines, who dabble in politics in every age, would have liked it put. Even the liberal German philistine of 1848 found himself in 1849 suddenly, unexpectedly, and against his will confronted by the question: a return to the old reaction in an intensified form, or continuance of the revolution up to the republic, perhaps even the one and indivisible republic with a socialist background. He did not spend long in reflection and helped to create the Manteuffel reaction as the flower of German liberalism. Similarly, in 1851, the French bourgeois when faced with the dilemma which he certainly did not expect: a caricature of the empire, pretorian rule, and the exploitation of France by a gang of scoundrels, or a social-democratic republic—and he bowed down before the gang of scoundrels so as to be able, under their protection, to go on exploiting the workers.

* * *

*Hard and fast lines* are incompatible with the theory of evolution. Even the border-line between vertebrates and invertebrates is now no longer rigid, just as little is that between fishes and amphibians, while that between birds and reptiles dwindles more and more every day. Between *Compsognathus*[133] and *Archæopteryx* only a few intermediate links are wanting, and birds' beaks with teeth crop up in both hemispheres. "Either—or" becomes more and more inadequate. Among lower animals the concept of the individual cannot be established at all sharply. Not only as to whether a particular animal is an individual or a colony, but also where in development *one* individual ceases and the other begins (nurses).[134]

For a stage in the outlook on nature where all differences become merged in intermediate steps, and all opposites pass into one another through intermediate links, the old metaphysical method of thought no longer suffices. Dialectics, which likewise knows no hard and fast lines, no unconditional, universally valid "either—or" which bridges the fixed metaphysical differences, and besides "either—or" recognizes also in the right place "both this—and that" and reconciles the opposites, is the sole method of thought appropriate in the highest degree to this stage. Of course, for every-day use, for the small change of science, the metaphysical categories retain their validity.

* * *

The transformation of quantity into quality= "mechanical" world outlook, quantitative change alters quality. The gentlemen never suspected that!

* * *

The character of mutual opposites belonging to the thought determinations of reason: *polarization*. Just as electricity, magnetism, etc., become polarized and move in opposites, so do thoughts. Just as in the former it is not possible to maintain any one-sidedness, and no natural scientist would think of doing so, so also in the latter.

* * *

The true nature of the determinations of "essence" is expressed by Hegel himself (*Enzyklopädie*, I, paragraph 111, addendum): "In essence everything is *relative*"* (e.g., positive and negative, which have meaning only in their relation, not each for itself).

* * *

Part and whole, for instance, are already categories which become inadequate in organic nature. The ejection of seeds—the embryo—and the new-born animal are not to be conceived as a "part" that is separated from the "whole"; that would give a distorted treatment. It becomes a part only in a dead body. (*Enzyklopädie*, I, p. 268.)

* * *

*Simple and compound.* Categories which even in organic nature likewise lose their meaning and become inapplicable. An animal is expressed neither by its mechanical composition from bones, blood, gristle, muscles, tissues, etc., nor by its chemical composition from the elements. Hegel (*Enzyklopädie*, I, p. 256.) The organism is *neither* simple *nor* compound, however complex it may be.

---

* Italics by Engels.—*Ed.*

* * *

*Abstract identity* (*a*=*a*; and negatively, *a* cannot be simultaneously equal and unequal to *a*) likewise inapplicable in organic nature. The plant, the animal, every cell is at every moment of its life identical with itself and yet becoming distinct from itself, by absorption and excretion of substances, by respiration, by cell formation and death of cells, by the process of circulation taking place, in short, by a sum of incessant molecular changes which make up life and the sum-total of whose results are evident to our eyes in the phases of life—embryonic life, youth, sexual maturity, process of reproduction, old age, death. The further physiology develops, the more important for it become these incessant, infinitely small changes, and hence the more important for it also the consideration of difference *within* identity, and the old abstract standpoint of formal identity, that an organic being is to be treated as something simply identical with itself, as something constant, becomes out of date.* Nevertheless, the mode of thought based thereon, together with its categories, persists. But even in inorganic nature identity as such is in reality non-existent. Every body is continually exposed to mechanical, physical, and chemical influences, which are always changing it and modifying its identity.

---

* In the margin of the manuscript occurs the remark, underlined by Engels: "*Apart, moreover, from the evolution of species.*" —*Ed.*

Abstract identity, with its opposition to difference, is in place only in mathematics—an abstract science which is concerned with creations of thought, even though they are reflections of reality—and even there it is continually being sublated. Hegel, *Enzyklopädie*, I, p. 235. The fact that identity contains difference within itself is expressed in *every sentence*, where the predicate is necessarily different from the subject; the *lily* is a *plant*, the *rose is red*, where, either in the subject or in the predicate, there is something that is not covered by the predicate or the subject. Hegel, p. 231. That from the outset *identity with itself* requires *difference from everything else* as its complement, is self-evident.

Continual change, i.e., sublation of abstract identity with itself, is also found in so-called inorganic nature. Geology is its history. On the surface, mechanical changes (denudation, frost), chemical changes (weathering); internally, mechanical changes (pressure), heat (volcanic), chemical (water, acids, binding substances); on a large scale—upheavals, earthquakes, etc. The slate of today is fundamentally different from the ooze from which it is formed, the chalk from the loose microscopic shells that compose it, even more so limestone, which indeed according to some is of purely organic origin, and sandstone from the loose sea sand, which again is derived from disintegrated granite, etc., not to speak of coal.

* * *

*The law of identity* in the old metaphysical sense is the fundamental law of the old outlook: $a = a$. Each thing is equal to itself. Everything was permanent, the solar system, stars, organisms. This law has been refuted by natural science bit by bit in each separate case, but theoretically it still prevails and is still put forward by the supporters of the old in opposition to the new: a thing cannot simultaneously be itself and something else. And yet the fact that true, concrete identity includes difference, change, has recently been shown in detail by natural science (see above).

Abstract identity, like all metaphysical categories, suffices for *everyday* use, where small dimensions or brief periods of time are in question; the limits within which it is usable differ in almost every case and are determined by the nature of the object; for a planetary system, where in ordinary astronomical calculation the ellipse can be taken as the basic form for practical purposes without error, they are much wider than for an insect that completes its metamorphosis in a few weeks. (Give other examples, e.g., alteration of species, which is reckoned in periods of thousands of years.) For natural science in its comprehensive role, however, even in each single branch, abstract identity is totally inadequate, and although on the whole it has now been abolished in practice, theoretically it still dominates people's minds, and most natural scientists imagine that identity and difference are irreconcilable opposites, instead of one-sided poles which represent the truth only in their reciprocal action, in the inclusion of difference *within* identity.

* * *

Identity and difference—necessity and chance—cause and effect—the two main opposites[135] which, treated separately, become transformed into one another.

And then "first principles" must help.

* * *

*Positive and negative.* Can also be given the reverse names: in electricity, etc.; North and South ditto. If one reverses this and alters the rest of the terminology accordingly, everything remains correct. We can call West East and East West. The sun rises in the West, and planets revolve from East to West, etc., the names alone are changed. Indeed, in physics we call the real South pole of the magnet, which is attracted by the North pole of the earth's magnetism, the *North pole*, and it does not matter.

* * *

That positive and negative are equivalent, irrespective of which side is positive and which negative, [holds good] not only in analytical geometry, but still more in physics (see Clausius, p. 87 *et seq.*).[136]

* * *

*Polarity.* A magnet, on being cut through, polarizes the neutral middle portion, but in such a way that the old poles remain. On the other hand a worm, on being cut into two, retains the receptive mouth at the positive pole and forms a new negative pole at the other end with excretory anus; but the old negative pole (the anus) now becomes positive, becoming a mouth, and a new anus or negative pole is formed at the cut end. *Voilà* transformation of positive into negative.

* * *

*Polarization.*[137] For J. Grimm it was still a firmly established law that a German dialect must be either High German or Low German. In this he totally lost sight of the Frankish dialect. Because the written Frankish of the later Carlovingian period was High German (since the High German shifting of consonants had taken possession of the Frankish South-East), he imagined that Frankish passed in one place into old High German, in another place into French. It then remained absolutely impossible to explain the source of the Netherland dialect in the ancient Salic regions. Frankish was only rediscovered after Grimm's death: Salic in its rejuvenation as the Netherland dialect, Ripuaric in the Middle and Lower Rhine dialects, which in part have been shifted to various stages of High German, and in part have remained Low German, so that Frankish is a dialect that is *both* High German *and* Low German.

* * *

## CHANCE AND NECESSITY

Another opposition in which metaphysics is entangled is that of chance and necessity. What can be more sharply contradictory than these two thought determinations? How is it possible that both are identical, that the accidental is necessary, and the necessary is also accidental?

Common sense, and with it the majority of natural scientists, treats necessity and chance as determinations that exclude each other once for all. A thing, a circumstance, a process is either accidental or necessary, but not both. Hence both exist side by side in nature; nature contains all sorts of objects and processes, of which some are accidental, the others necessary, and it is only a matter of not confusing the two sorts with each other. Thus, for instance, one assumes the decisive specific characters to be necessary, other differences between individuals of the same species being termed accidental, and this holds good of crystals as it does for plants and animals. Then again the lower group becomes accidental in relation to the higher, so that it is declared to be a matter of chance how many different species are included in the genus *felis* or *equus*, or how many genera and orders there are in a class, and how many individuals of each of these species exist, or how many different species of animals occur in a given region, or what in general the fauna and flora are like. And then it is declared that the necessary is the sole thing of scientific interest and that the accidental is a matter of indifference to science. That is to say: what can be brought under laws, hence what one *knows*, is interesting; what cannot be brought under laws, and therefore what one does not know, is a matter of indifference and can be ignored. Thereby all science comes to an end, for it has to investigate precisely that which we do *not* know. It means to say: what can be brought under general laws is regarded as necessary, and what cannot be so brought as accidental. Anyone can see that this is the same sort of science as that which proclaims natural what it can explain, and ascribes what it cannot explain to supernatural causes; whether I term the cause of the inexplicable chance, or whether I term it God, is a matter of complete indifference as far as the thing itself is concerned. Both are only equivalents for: I do not know, and therefore do not belong to science. The latter ceases where the requisite connection is wanting.

In opposition to this view there is determinism, which passed from French materialism into natural science, and which tries to dispose of chance by denying it altogether. According to this conception only simple, direct necessity prevails in nature. That a particular pea-pod contains five peas and not four or six, that a particular dog's tail is five inches long and not a whit longer or shorter, that this year a particular clover flower was fertilized by a bee and another not, and indeed by precisely one particular bee and at a particular time, that a particular windblown dandelion seed has sprouted and another not, that last night I was bitten by a flea at four o'clock in the morning, and not at three or five o'clock, and on the right shoulder and not on the left calf—these are all facts which have been produced by an irrevocable concatenation of cause and effect, by an unshatterable necessity of such a nature indeed that the gaseous sphere, from which the solar system was derived, was already so constituted that these events had to happen thus and not otherwise. With this kind of necessity we likewise do not get away from the theological conception of nature. Whether with Augustine and Calvin we call it the eternal decree of God, or Kismet as the Turks do, or whether we call it necessity, is all pretty much the same for science. There is no question of tracing the chain of causation in any of these cases; so we are just as wise in one as in another, the so-called necessity remains an empty phrase, and with it—chance also remains what it was before. As long as we are not able to show on what the number of peas in the pod depends, it remains just a matter of chance, and the assertion that the case was foreseen already in the primordial constitution of the solar system does not get us a step further. Still more. A science which was to set about the task of following back the *casus* of this individual pea-pod in its causal concatenation would be no longer science but pure trifling; for this same pea-pod alone has in addition innumerable other individual, accidentally appearing qualities: shade of colour, thickness and hardness of the pod, size of the peas, not to speak of the individual peculiarities revealed by the microscope. The *one* pea-pod, therefore, would already provide more causal connections for following up than all the botanists in the world could solve.

Hence chance is not here explained by necessity, but rather necessity is degraded to the production of what is merely accidental. If the fact that a particular pea-pod contains six peas, and not five or seven, is of the same order as the law of motion of the solar system, or the law of the transformation of energy, then as a matter of fact chance is not elevated into necessity, but rather necessity degraded into chance. Furthermore, however much the diversity of the organic and inorganic species and individuals existing side by side in a given area may be asserted to be based on irrefragable necessity, for the separate species and individuals it remains what it was before, a matter of chance. For the individual animal it is a matter of chance, where it happens to be born, what environment it finds for living, what enemies and how many of them threaten it. For the mother plant it is a matter of chance whither the wind scatters its seeds, and, for the daughter plant, where the seed finds soil for germination; and to assure us that here also everything rests on irrefragable necessity is a poor consolation. The jumbling together of natural objects in a given region, still more in the whole world, for all the primordial determination from eternity, remains what it was before—a matter of chance.

In contrast to both conceptions, Hegel came forward with the hitherto quite unheard-of propositions that the accidental has a cause because it is accidental, and just as much also has no cause because it is accidental; that the accidental is necessary, that necessity determines itself as chance, and, on the other hand, this chance is rather absolute necessity. (*Logik*, II, Book III, 2: *Reality*.) Natural science has simply ignored these propositions as paradoxical trifling, as self-contradictory nonsense, and, as regards theory, has persisted on the one hand in the barrenness of thought of Wolffian metaphysics, according to which a thing is *either* accidental *or* necessary, but not both at once; or, on the other hand, in the hardly less thoughtless mechanical determinism which in words denies chance in general only to recognize it in practice in each particular case.

While natural science continued to think in this way, what *did it do* in the person of Darwin?

Darwin, in his epoch-making work, set out from the widest existing basis of chance. Precisely the infinite, accidental differences between individuals within a single species, differences which become accentuated until they break through the character of the species, and whose immediate causes even can be demonstrated only in extremely few cases, compelled him to question the previous basis of all regularity in biology, viz., the concept of species in its previous metaphysical rigidity and unchangeability. Without the concept of species, however, all science was nothing. All its branches needed the concept of species as basis: human anatomy and comparative anatomy—embryology, zoology, palæontology, botany, etc., what were they without the concept of species? All their results were not only put in question but directly set aside. Chance overthrows necessity, as conceived hitherto.* The previous idea of necessity breaks down. To retain it means dictatorially to impose on nature as a law a human arbitrary determination that is in contradiction to itself and to reality, it means to deny thereby all inner necessity in living nature, it means generally to proclaim the chaotic kingdom of chance to be the sole law of living nature.

"*Gilt nichts mehr der Tausves Jontof,*"[138] cried out quite logically the biologists of all schools.

Darwin.

* * *

---

* In the margin of the manuscript, a little higher up than this place, is the following sentence in brackets: "The material on chance occurrences accumulated in the meantime has suppressed and shattered the old idea of necessity."—*Ed.*

## HEGEL, *LOGIC*, VOL. I.[139]

"Nothing that is opposed to something, the *nothing of any something, is a determinate nothing.*" (P. 74.)[140]

"In view of the mutually determinant connection of the (world)* whole, metaphysics could make the assertion (*which is really a tautology*) that if the least grain of dust were destroyed the whole universe must collapse." (P. 78.)

*Negation,* main passage. "Introduction," p. 38: "that the self-contradictory resolves itself not into nullity, into abstract Nothingness, but essentially only *into the negation of its particular content,*" etc.

*Negation of the negation. Phänomenologie,* Preface, p. 4. Bud, flower, fruit, etc.

## [B) DIALECTICAL LOGIC AND THE THEORY OF KNOWLEDGE. ON THE "LIMITS OF KNOWLEDGE"]

* * *

*Unity of nature and mind.* To the Greeks it was self-evident that nature could not be unreasonable, but even today the stupidest empiricists prove by their reasoning (however wrong it may be) that they are convinced from the outset that nature cannot be unreasonable or reason contrary to nature.

* * *

---

* Added by Engels.—*Ed.*

The evolution of a concept, or of a conceptual relation (positive and negative, cause and effect, substance and accidency) in the history of thought, is related to its development in the mind of the individual dialectician, just as the evolution of an organism in palæontology is related to its development in embryology (or rather in history and in the single embryo). That this is so was first discovered for concepts by Hegel. In historical development, chance plays its part, which in dialectical thinking, as in the development of the embryo, *is summed up in necessity.*

* * *

*Abstract and concrete.* The general law of the change of form of motion is much more concrete than any single "concrete" example of it.

* * *

*Understanding and reason.* This Hegelian distinction, according to which only dialectical thinking is reasonable, has a definite meaning. We have in common with animals all activity of the understanding: *induction*, *deduction*, and hence also *abstraction* (Dido's[141] generic concepts: quadrupeds and bipeds), *analysis* of unknown objects (even the cracking of a nut is a beginning of analysis), *synthesis* (in animal tricks), and, as the union of both, *experiment* (in the case of new obstacles and unfamiliar situations). In their nature all these modes of procedure—hence all means of scientific investigation that ordinary logic recognizes—are absolutely the same in men and the higher animals. They differ only in degree (of development of the method in each case). The basic features of the method are the same and lead to the same results in man and animals, so long as both operate or make shift merely with these elementary methods.

On the other hand, dialectical thought—precisely because it presupposes investigation of the nature of concepts themselves—is only possible for man, and for him only at a comparatively high stage of development (Buddhists and Greeks), and it attains its full development much later still through modern philosophy—and yet we have the colossal results already among the Greeks which by far anticipate investigation!

Chemistry, in which *analysis* is the predominant form of investigation, is nothing without its opposite pole—*synthesis*.[142]

* * *

## [ON THE CLASSIFICATION OF JUDGEMENTS]

Dialectical logic, in contrast to the old, merely formal logic, is not, like the latter, content with enumerating the forms of motion of thought, i.e., the various forms of judgement and conclusion, and placing them side by side without any connection. On the contrary, it derives these forms out of one another, it makes one subordinate to another instead of putting them on an equal level, it develops the higher forms out of the lower. Faithful to his division of the whole of logic, Hegel groups judgements as:

1. Judgement of inherence, the simplest form of judgement, in which a general property is affirmatively or negatively predicated of a single thing (positive

judgement: the rose is red; negative judgement: the rose is not blue; infinite judgement: the rose is not a camel);

2. Judgement of subsumption, in which a relation determination is predicated of the subject (singular judgement[143]: this man is mortal; particular judgement[144]: some, many men are mortal; universal judgement[145]: all men are mortal, or man is mortal);

3. Judgement of necessity, in which its substantial determination is predicated of the subject (categorical judgement: the rose is a plant; hypothetical judgement: when the sun rises it is day-time; disjunctive judgement: *Lepidosiren* is either a fish or an amphibian);

4. Judgement of the notion, in which is predicated of the subject how far it corresponds to its general nature or, as Hegel says, to the notion of it (assertoric judgement: this house is bad; problematic judgement: if a house is constituted in such and such a way, it is good; apodeictic judgement: the house that is constituted in such and such a way is good.

1. *Individual Judgement.* 2 and 3. *Special.* 4. *General.*

However dry this sounds here, and however arbitrary at first sight this classification of judgements may here and there appear, yet the inner truth and necessity of this grouping will become clear to anyone who studies the brilliant exposition in Hegel's *Larger Logic.* (*Works*, V, pp. 63-115.) To show how much this grouping is based not only on the laws of thought but also on the laws of nature, we should like to put forward here a very well-known example outside this connection.

That friction produces heat was already known practically to prehistoric man, who discovered the making of fire by friction perhaps more than 100,000 years ago, and who still earlier warmed cold parts of the body by rubbing. But from that to the discovery that friction is in general a source of heat, who knows how many thousands of years elapsed? Enough that the time came when the human brain was sufficiently developed to be able to formulate the judgement: *friction is a source of heat*, a judgement of inherence, and indeed a positive one.

Still further thousands of years passed until, in 1842, Mayer, Joule, and Colding investigated this special process in its relation to other processes of a similar kind that had been discovered in the meantime, i.e., as regards its immediate general conditions, and formulated the judgement: *all mechanical motion is capable of being converted into heat by means of friction.* So much time and an enormous amount of empirical knowledge were required before we could make the advance in knowledge of the object from the above positive judgement of inherence to this universal judgement of subsumption.

But from now on things went quickly. Only three years later, Mayer was able, at least in substance, to raise the judgement of subsumption to the level at which it now stands: *any form of motion, under conditions fixed for each case, is both able and compelled to undergo transformation, directly or indirectly, into any other form of motion*—a judgement of the notion, and moreover an apodeictic one, the highest form of judgement altogether.

What, therefore, in Hegel appears as a development of the thought form of judgement as such, confronts us here as the development of our *empirically* based theoretical knowledge of the nature of motion in general. This shows, however, that laws of thought and laws of nature are necessarily in agreement with one another, if only they are correctly known.

We can regard the first judgement as that of individuality; the isolated fact that friction produces heat is registered. The second judgement is that of particularity: a special form of motion, mechanical motion, exhibits the property, under special conditions (through friction), of passing into another special form of motion, viz., heat. The third judgement is that of universality: any form of motion proves able and compelled to undergo transformation into any other form of motion. In this form the law attains its final expression. By new discoveries we can give new illustrations of it, we can give it a new and richer content. But we cannot add anything to the law itself as here formulated. In its universality, equally universal in form and content, it is not susceptible of further extension: it is an absolute law of nature.

Unfortunately we are in a difficulty about the form of motion of protein, alias life, so long as we are not able to make protein.

* * *

Above,[146] however, it has also been proved that to make judgements involves not merely Kant's "power of judgement," but a [...].[147]

* * *

Individuality, particularity, universality—these are the three determinations in which the whole "Doctrine of the Notion"[148] moves. Under these heads, progression from the individual to the particular and from the particular to the universal takes place not in one but in many modalities, and this is often enough exemplified by Hegel as the progression: individual, species, genus. And now the Hæckels come forward with their induction and trumpet it as a great fact—against Hegel—that progression must be from the individual to the particular and then to the universal (!), from the individual to the species and then to the genus—and then permit *deductive* conclusions which are supposed to lead further. These people have got into such a dead-lock over the opposition between induction and deduction that they reduce all logical forms of conclusion to these two, and in so doing do not notice that they (1) unconsciously employ quite different forms of conclusion under those names, (2) deprive themselves of the whole wealth of forms of conclusion in so far as it cannot be forced under these two, and 3) thereby convert both forms, induction and deduction, into sheer nonsense.

* * *

*Induction and deduction.* Hæckel, p. 75 *et seq.*,[149] where Goethe draws the inductive conclusion that man, who *does not normally have* a premaxillary bone, *must* have one, hence by *incorrect* induction arrives at something correct!

* * *

Hæckel's nonsense: induction against deduction. As if it were not the case that deduction=conclusion, and therefore induction is also a deduction. This comes from polarization. Hæckel's *Schöpfungsgeschichte*, pp. 76-77.[150] The conclusion polarized into induction and deduction!

* * *

By induction it was discovered 100 years ago that crayfish and spiders were insects and all lower animals were worms. By induction it has now been found that this is nonsense and there exist $x$ classes. Wherein then lies the advantage of the so-called inductive conclusion, which can be just as false as the so-called deductive conclusion, the basis of which is nevertheless classification?

Induction can never prove that there will never be a mammal without lacteal glands. Formerly nipples were the mark of a mammal. But the platypus has none.

The whole swindle of induction [is derived] from the Englishmen; Whewell, inductive sciences,[151] comprising the purely mathematical [sciences],[152] and so the antithesis to deduction invented. Logic, old or new, knows nothing of this. All forms of conclusion that start from the individual are experimental and based on experience, indeed the inductive conclusion even starts from U—I—P[153] (universal).

It is also characteristic of the thinking capacity of our natural scientists that Hæckel fanatically champions induction at the very moment when the *results* of induction—the classifications—are everywhere put in question (*Limulus* a spider, *Ascidia* a vertebrate or *chordate*, the *Dipnoi*, however, being fishes, in opposition to all original definitions of amphibia) and daily new facts are being discovered which overthrow the *entire* previous classification by induction. What a beautiful confirmation of Hegel's thesis that the inductive conclusion is essentially a problematic one![154] Indeed, owing to the theory of evolution, even the whole classification of organisms has been taken away from induction and brought back to "deduction," to descent—one species being literally *deduced* from another by descent—and it is impossible to prove the theory of evolution by induction alone, since it is quite anti-inductive. The concepts with which induction operates: species, genus, class, have been rendered fluid by the theory of evolution and so have become *relative*: but one cannot use relative concepts for induction.

* * *

*To the Pan-Inductionists.* With all the induction in the world we would never have got to the point of becoming clear about the *process* of induction. Only the *analysis* of this process could accomplish this.—Induction and deduction belong together as necessarily as synthesis and analysis. Instead of one-sidedly lauding one to the skies at the expense of the other, we should seek to apply each of them in its place, and that can only be done by bearing in mind that they belong together, that they supplement each other.

According to the inductionists, induction is an infallible method. It is so little so that its apparently surest results are every day overthrown by new discoveries. Light corpuscles and caloric were results of induction. Where are they now? Induction taught us that all vertebrates have a central nervous system differentiated into brain and spinal cord, and that the spinal cord is enclosed in cartilaginous or bony vertebræ—whence indeed the name is derived. Then *Amphioxus* was revealed as a vertebrate with an undifferentiated central nervous strand and *without* vertebræ. Induction established that fishes are those vertebrates which throughout life breathe exclusively by means of gills. Then animals come to light whose fish character is almost universally recognized, but which, besides gills, have also well-developed lungs, and it turns out that every fish carries a potential lung in the swim bladder. Only by audacious application of the theory of evolution did Hæckel rescue the inductionists, who were feeling quite comfortable in these contradictions.

If induction were really so infallible, whence come the rapid successive revolutions in classification of the organic world? They are the most characteristic product of induction, and yet they annihilate one another.

* * *

*Induction and analysis.* A striking example of how little induction can claim to be the sole or even the predominant form of scientific discovery occurs in thermodynamics: the steam-engine provided the most striking proof that one can impart heat and obtain mechanical motion. 100,000 steam-engines did not prove this more than *one*, but only more and more forced the physicists into the necessity of explaining it. Sadi Carnot was the first seriously to set about the task. But not by induction. He studied the steam-engine, analyzed it, and found that in it the process which mattered does not appear *in pure form* but is concealed by all sorts of subsidiary processes. He did away with these subsidiary circumstances that have no bearing on the essential process, and constructed an ideal steam-engine (or gas engine), which it is true is as little capable of being realized as, for instance, a geometrical line or surface, but in its way performs the same service as these mathematical abstractions: it presents the process in a pure, independent, and unadulterated form. And he came right up against the mechanical equivalent of heat (see the significance of his function *C*), which he only failed to discover and see because he believed in *caloric*. Here also proof of the damage done by false theories.

* * *

The empiricism of observation alone can never adequately prove necessity. *Post hoc* but not *propter hoc*. (*Enzyklopädie*, I, S. 84.) This is so very correct that it does not follow from the continual rising of the sun in the morning that it will rise again tomorrow, and in fact we know now that a time will come when one morning the sun will *not rise*. But the proof of necessity lies in human activity, in experiment, in work: if I am able to *make* the *post hoc*, it becomes identical with the *propter hoc*.

* * *

*Causality*. The first thing that strikes us in considering matter in motion is the inter-connection of the individual motions of separate bodies, their *being determined* by one another. But not only do we find that a particular motion is followed by another, we find also that we can evoke a particular motion by setting up the conditions in which it takes place in nature, that we can even produce motions which do not occur at all in nature (industry), at least not in this way, and that we can give these motions a predetermined direction and extent. *In this way*, by the *activity of human beings*, the idea of *causality* becomes established, the idea that one motion is the *cause* of another. True, the regular sequence of certain natural phenomena can by itself give rise to the idea of causality: the heat and light that come with the sun; but this affords no proof, and to that extent Hume's scepticism was correct in saying that a regular *post hoc* can never establish a *propter hoc*. But the activity of human beings *forms the test* of causality. If we bring the sun's rays to a focus by means of a concave mirror and make them act like the rays of an ordinary fire, we thereby prove that heat comes from the sun. If we bring together in a rifle the priming, the explosive charge, and the bullet and then fire it, we count upon the effect known in advance from previous experience, because we can follow in all its details the whole process of ignition, combustion, explosion by the sudden conversion into gas and pressure of the gas on the bullet. And here the sceptic cannot even say that because of previous experience it does not follow that it will be the same next time. For, as a matter of fact, it does sometimes happen that it is *not* the same, that the priming or the gunpowder fails to work, that the barrel bursts, etc. But it is precisely this which *proves* causality instead of refuting it, because we can find out the cause of each such deviation from the rule by appropriate investigation: chemical decomposition of the priming, dampness, etc., of the gunpowder, defect in the barrel, etc.,

etc., so that here the test of causality is so to say a *double* one.

Natural science, like philosophy, has hitherto entirely neglected the influence of men's activity on their thought; both know only nature on the one hand and thought on the other. But it is precisely *the alteration of nature by men*, not solely nature as such, which is the most essential and immediate basis of human thought, and it is in the measure that man has learned to change nature that his intelligence has increased. The naturalistic conception of history, as found, for instance, to a greater or lesser extent in Draper and other scientists, as if nature exclusively reacts on man, and natural conditions everywhere exclusively determined his historical development, is therefore one-sided and forgets that man also reacts on nature, changing it and creating new conditions of existence for himself. There is devilishly little left of "nature" as it was in Germany at the time when the Germanic peoples immigrated into it. The earth's surface, climate, vegetation, fauna, and the human beings themselves have infinitely changed, and all this owing to human activity, while the changes of nature in Germany which have occurred in this period of time without human interference are incalculably small.

* * *

*Reciprocal action* is the first thing that we encounter when we consider matter in motion as a whole from the standpoint of modern natural science. We see a series of forms of motion, mechanical motion, heat, light, electricity, magnetism, chemical union and decomposition, transitions of states of aggregation, organic life, all of which, if *at present* we *still* make an exception of organic life, pass into one another, mutually determine one another, are in one place cause and in another effect, the sum-total of the motion in all its changing forms remaining the same (Spinoza: *substance is causa sui* strikingly expresses the reciprocal action). Mechanical motion becomes transformed into heat, electricity, magnetism, light, etc., and *vice versa*. Thus natural science confirms what Hegel has said (where?), that reciprocal action is the true *causa finalis* of things. We cannot go back further than to knowledge of this reciprocal action, for the very reason that there is nothing behind to know. If we know the forms of motion of matter (for which it is true there is still very much lacking, in view of the short time that natural science has existed), then we know matter itself, and therewith our knowledge is complete. (Grove's whole misunderstanding about causality rests on the fact that he does not succeed in arriving at the category of reciprocal action; he has the thing, but not the abstract thought, and hence the confusion—pp. 10-14.[155]) Only from this universal reciprocal action do we arrive at the real causal relation. In order to understand the separate phenomena, we have to tear them out of the general inter-connection and consider them in isolation, and *then* the changing motions appear, one as cause and the other as effect.

* * *

For one who denies causality every natural law is a hypothesis, among others also the chemical analysis of heavenly bodies by means of the prismatic spectrum. What shallowness of thought to remain at such a viewpoint!

* * *

## ON NÄGELI'S INCAPACITY TO KNOW THE INFINITE.[156]

*Nägeli*, pp. 12, 13.

Nägeli first of all says that we cannot know real qualitative differences, and immediately afterwards says that such "absolute differences" do not occur in nature! (P. 12.)

Firstly, every quality has infinitely many quantitative gradations, e.g., shades of colour, hardness and softness, length of life, etc., and these, although qualitatively distinct, are measurable and knowable.

Secondly, qualities do not exist but only things *with* qualities and indeed with infinitely many qualities. Two different things always have certain qualities (properties of corporeality at least) in common, others differing in degree, while still others may be entirely absent in one of them. If we consider two such extremely different things—e.g., a meteorite and a man—in separation, we get very little out of it, at most that heaviness and other general properties of bodies are common to both. But an infinite series of other natural objects and natural processes can be put between the two things, permitting us to complete the series from meteorite to man and to allocate to each its place in the inter-connection of nature and thus to *know* them. Nägeli himself admits this.

Thirdly, our various senses might give us impressions differing absolutely as regards quality. In that case, properties which we experience by means of sight, hearing, smell, taste, and touch would be absolutely different. But even here the differences disappear with the progress of investigation. Smell and taste have long ago been recognized as allied senses belonging together, which perceive conjoint if not identical properties. Sight and hearing both perceive wave oscillations. Touch and sight supplement each other to such an extent that from the appearance of an object we can often enough predict its tactile properties. And, finally, it is always the same "*I*" that receives and elaborates all these different sense impressions, that therefore comprehends them into a unity, and likewise these various impressions are provided by the same thing, appearing as its *common* properties, and therefore helping us to know it. To explain these different properties, accessible only to different senses, to bring them into connection with one another, is precisely the task of science, which so far has not complained because we have not a general sense in place of the five special senses, or because we are not able to see or hear tastes and smells.

Wherever we look, nowhere in nature are there to be found such "qualitatively or absolutely distinct fields," which are alleged to be incomprehensible. The whole confusion springs from the confusion about quality and quantity. In accordance with the prevailing mechanical view, Nägeli regards all qualitative differences as explained only in so far as they can be reduced to quantitative differences (on which what is necessary is said elsewhere), or because quality and quantity are for him absolutely distinct categories. Metaphysics.

"We can know *only the finite*, etc." This is quite correct in so far as only finite objects enter the sphere of our knowledge. But the proposition needs to be supplemented by this: "fundamentally we can know *only the infinite*." In fact all real, exhaustive knowledge consists solely in raising the individual thing in thought from individuality into particularity and from this into universality, in seeking and establishing the infinite in the finite, the eternal in the transitory. The form of universality, however, is the form of self-completeness, hence of infinity; it is the comprehension of the many finites in the infinite. We know that chlorine and hydrogen within certain limits of temperature and pressure and under the influence of light, combine with an explosion to form hydrochloric acid gas, and as soon as we know this, we know also that this takes place *everywhere* and *at all times* where the above conditions are present, and it can be a matter of indifference, whether this occurs once or is repeated a million times, or on how many heavenly bodies. The form of universality in nature is *law*, and no one talks more of *the eternal character of the laws of nature* than the natural scientists. Hence when Nägeli says that the finite is made impossible to understand by not desiring to investigate merely this finite, but instead adding something eternal to it, then he denies either the possibility of knowing the laws of nature or their eternal character. All true knowledge of nature is knowledge of the eternal, the infinite, and hence essentially absolute.

But this absolute knowledge has an important drawback. Just as the infinity of knowable matter is composed of the purely finite things, so the infinity of thought which knows the absolute is composed of an infinite number of finite human minds, working side by side and successively at this infinite knowledge, committing practical and theoretical blunders, setting out from erroneous, one-sided, and false premises, pursuing false, tortuous, and uncertain paths, and often not even finding what is right when they run their noses against it (Priestley[157]). The cognition of the infinite is therefore beset with double difficulty and from its very nature can only take place in an infinite asymptotic progress. And that fully suffices us in order to be able to say: the infinite is just as much knowable as unknowable, and that is all that we need.

Curiously enough, Nägeli says the same thing: "We can know only the finite, but we can know *all the finite** that comes into the sphere of our sensuous perception." The finite that comes into the sphere, etc., constitutes in sum precisely the infinite, for *it is just from this that Nägeli has derived his idea of the infinite*! Without this finite, etc., he would have indeed no idea of the infinite!

(Bad infinity, as such, to be dealt with elsewhere.)

Before this investigation of infinity comes the following:

(1) The "insignificant sphere" in regard to space and time.

---

* Italics by Engels.—*Ed.*

(2) The "probably defective development of the sense organs."

(3) That we "only know the finite, changing, transitory, only what is different in degree and relative, because we can only transfer mathematical concepts to natural objects and judge the latter only by measures obtained from them themselves. We have no notions for all that is infinite or eternal, for all that is permanent, for all absolute differences. We know exactly the meaning of an hour, a metre, a kilogram, but we do not know what time, space, force and matter, motion and rest, cause and effect are."

It is the old story. First of all one makes sensuous things into abstractions and then one wants to know them through the senses, to see time and smell space. The empiricist becomes so steeped in the habit of empirical experience, that he believes that he is still in the field of sensuous experience when he is operating with abstractions. We know what an hour is, or a metre, but not what time and space are! As if time was anything other than just hours, and space anything but just cubic metres! The two forms of existence of matter are naturally nothing without matter, empty concepts, abstractions which exist only in our minds. But, of course, we are supposed not to know what matter and motion are! Of course not, for matter as such and motion as such have not yet been seen or otherwise experienced by anyone, but only the various, actually existing material things and forms of motion. Matter is nothing but the totality of material things from which this concept is abstracted, and motion as such nothing but the totality of all sensuously perceptible forms of motion;

words like matter and motion are nothing but *abbreviations* in which we comprehend many different sensuously perceptible things according to their common properties. Hence matter and motion *can* be known in no other way than by investigation of the separate material things and forms of motion, and by knowing these, we also *pro tanto* know matter and motion *as such*. Consequently, in saying that we do not know what time, space, matter, motion, cause and effect are, Nägeli merely says that first of all we make abstractions of the real world through our minds, and then cannot know these self-made abstractions because they are creations of thought and not sensuous objects, while all knowing is[158] *sensuous measurement*! This is just like the difficulty mentioned by Hegel; we can eat cherries and plums, but not *fruit*, because no one has so far eaten fruit as such.[159]

---

When Nägeli asserts that there are probably a whole number of forms of motion in nature which we cannot perceive by our senses, that is a poor apology, equivalent to the suspension—*at least for our knowledge*—of the law of the uncreatability of motion. For they could certainly be *transformed into motion perceptible to us*! That would be an easy explanation of, for instance, contact electricity.

* * *

*Ad vocem* Nägeli. Impossibility of conceiving the infinite. When we say that matter and motion are not created and are indestructible, we are saying that the world exists as infinite progress, i.e., in the form of bad infinity, and thereby we have understood all of this process that is to be understood. At the most the question still arises whether this process is an eternal repetition—in great cycles—or whether the cycles have descending and ascending branches.

* * *

*Bad infinity.* True infinity was already correctly put by Hegel in *filled* space and time, in the process of nature and in history. The whole of nature also is now merged in history, and history is only differentiated from natural history as the evolutionary process of *self-conscious* organisms. This infinite complexity of nature and history has within it the infinity of space and time—bad infinity—only as a sublated factor, essential but not predominant. The extreme limit of our natural science until now has been *our* universe, and we do not need the infinitely numerous universes outside it to have knowledge of nature. Indeed, only a *single* sun among millions, with its solar system, forms the essential basis of our astronomical researches. For terrestrial mechanics, physics, and chemistry we are more or less restricted to our little earth, and for organic science entirely so. Yet this does not do any essential injury to the practically infinite diversity of phenomena and natural knowledge, any more than history is harmed by the similar, even greater limitation to a comparatively short period and small portion of the earth.

* * *

1. According to Hegel, infinite progress is a barren waste because it appears only as *eternal repetition of the same thing*: $1+1+1$, etc.

2. In reality, however, it is no repetition, but a development, an advance or regression, and thereby it becomes a necessary form of motion. This apart from the fact that it is not infinite: the end of the earth's lifetime can already be foreseen. But then, the earth is not the whole universe. In Hegel's system, any development was excluded from the temporal history of nature, otherwise nature would not be the being-beyond-self of spirit. But in human history infinite progress is recognized by Hegel as the sole true form of existence of "spirit," except that fantastically this development is assumed to have an end—in the production of the Hegelian philosophy.

3. There is also infinite knowing:* *questa infinità che le cose non hanno in progresso, la hanno in giro.*** Thus the law of the change of form of motion is an infinite one, including itself in itself. Such infinities, however, are in their turn smitten with finiteness, and only occur piecemeal. So also $\frac{1}{r^2}$.[162]

* * *

*The eternal laws of nature* also become transformed more and more into historical ones. That water is fluid from 0°-100°*C.* is an eternal law of nature, but for it to be valid, there must be (1) water, (2) the given temperature, (3) normal pressure. On the moon there is no water, in the sun only its elements, and the law does not exist for these two heavenly bodies.

---

* In the manuscript is the following subsequent addition by Engels: "(Quantity, p. 259. Astronomy)."[160]—*Ed.*

** This infinite, which things do not have in progress, they have in circling.[161]—*Ed.*

The laws of meteorology are also eternal, but only for the earth or for a body of the size, density, axial inclination, and temperature of the earth, and on condition that it has an atmosphere of the same mixture of oxygen and nitrogen and with the same amounts of water vapour being evaporated and precipitated. The moon has no atmosphere, the sun one of glowing metallic vapours; the former has no meteorology, that of the latter is quite different from ours.

Our whole official physics, chemistry, and biology are exclusively *geocentric*, calculated only for the earth. We are still quite ignorant of the conditions of electric and magnetic tensions on the sun, fixed stars, and nebulæ, even on the planets of a different density from ours. On the sun, owing to high temperature, the laws of chemical combination of the elements are suspended or only momentarily operative at the limits of the solar atmosphere, the compounds becoming dissociated again on approaching the sun. The chemistry of the sun is just in process of arising, and is necessarily quite different from that of the earth, not overthrowing the latter but standing outside it. In the nebulæ perhaps there do not exist even those of the 65 elements which are possibly themselves of compound nature. Hence, if we wish to speak of general laws of nature that are uniformly applicable to *all* bodies—from the nebula to man—we are left only with gravity and perhaps the most general form of the theory of the transformation of energy, *vulgo* the mechanical theory of heat. But, on its general, consistent application to all phenomena of nature, this theory itself becomes converted into a historical presentation of the successive changes occurring in a system of the universe from its origin to its passing away, hence into a history in which at each stage different laws, i.e., different phenomenal forms of the same universal motion, predominate, and so nothing remains as absolutely universally valid except —*motion.*

* * *

The *geocentric* standpoint in astronomy is prejudiced and has rightly been abolished. But as we go deeper in our investigations, it comes more and more into its own. The sun, etc., *serve* the earth (Hegel, *Naturphilosophie*, p. 155).[163] (The whole huge sun exists merely for the sake of the little planets.) Anything other than geocentric physics, chemistry, biology, meteorology, etc., is impossible for us, and these sciences lose nothing by saying that they only hold good for the earth and are therefore only relative. If one takes that seriously and demands a centreless science, one puts a stop to *all* science. [It suffices] us to know that under the same conditions everywhere the same [takes place] [. . .][164]

* * *

*Cognition.* Ants have eyes different from ours, they can see chemical (?) light-rays (*Nature*, June 8, 1882, Lubbock),[165] but as regards knowledge of these rays that are invisible to us, we are considerably more advanced than the ants, and the very fact that we are able to demonstrate that ants can see things invisible to us, and that this proof is based solely on perceptions made with *our* eyes, shows that the special construction of the human eye sets no absolute barrier to human cognition.

In addition to the eye, we have not only the other senses but also our thought activity. With regard to the latter, matters stand exactly as with the eye. To know what can be discovered by our thinking, it is no use, a hundred years after Kant, to try and find out the range of thought from the critique of reason or the investigation of the instrument of knowing. It is as little use as when Helmholtz uses the imperfection of our sight (indeed a necessary imperfection, for an eye that could see *all* rays would for that very reason see *nothing at all*), and the construction of our eye—which restricts sight to definite limits and even so does not give quite correct reproduction—as proof that the eye acquaints us incorrectly or unreliably with the nature of what is seen. What can be discovered by our thought is more evident from what it has already discovered and is every day still discovering. And that is already enough both as regards quantity and quality. On the other hand, the investigation of the *forms* of thought, the thought determinations, is very profitable and necessary, and since Aristotle this has been systematically undertaken only by Hegel.

In any case we shall never find out *how* chemical rays appear to ants. Anyone who is distressed by this is simply beyond help.

* * *

The form of development of natural science, in so far as it thinks, is the *hypothesis*. A new fact is observed which makes impossible the previous method of explaining the facts belonging to the same group. From this moment onwards new methods of explanation are required—at first based on only a limited number of facts and observations. Further observational material weeds out these hypotheses, doing away with some and correcting others, until finally the law is established in a pure form. If one should wait until the material for a law was *in a pure form*, it would mean suspending the process of thought in investigation until then and, if only for this reason, the law would never come into being.

The number and succession of hypotheses supplanting one another—given the lack of logical and dialectical education among natural scientists—easily gives rise to the idea that we cannot know the *essence* of things (Haller and Goethe).[166] This is not peculiar to natural science since all human knowledge develops in a much twisted curve; and in the historical sciences also, including philosophy, theories displace one another, from which, however, nobody concludes that formal logic, for instance, is nonsense.

The last form of this outlook is the "thing-in-itself." In the first place, this assertion that we cannot know the thing-in-itself (Hegel, *Enzyklopädie*, paragraph 44) passes out of the realm of science into that of fantasy. Secondly, it does not add a word to our scientific knowledge, for if we cannot occupy ourselves with things, they do not exist for us. And, thirdly, it is a mere phrase and is never applied. Taken in the abstract it sounds quite sensible. But suppose one applies it. What would one think of a zoologist who said: "A dog *seems* to have four legs, but we do not know whether in reality it has four million legs or none at all"? Or of a mathematician who first of all defines a triangle as having three sides, and then declares that he does not know whether it might not have 25? That 2×2 *seems* to be 4? But scientists take care not to apply the phrase about the thing-in-itself in natural science, they permit themselves this only in passing into philosophy. This is the best proof how little seriously they take it and what little value it has itself. If they did take it seriously, what would be the good of investigating anything?

Taken historically the thing would have a certain meaning: we can only know under the conditions of our epoch and *as far as these allow.*

* * *

*The thing-in-itself*: Hegel, *Logik*, II, p. 10, also later a whole section on it: "Scepticism did not dare to affirm '*it is*'; modern idealism (i.e., Kant and Fichte) did not dare to regard cognition as a knowledge of the thing-in-itself.*. . . But at the same time, scepticism admitted manifold determinations of its show, or rather its show had for content all the manifold riches of the world. In the same manner the '*appearance*'** of idealism (i.e., what idealism calls appearance) comprehends the whole range of these manifold determinatenesses. . . . The content may then have no basis in any being nor in any thing nor thing-in-itself: *for itself it*

---

* In the margin of the manuscript is the remark: "Cf. *Enzyklopädie*, I, p. 252."—*Ed.*

** Italics by Engels.—*Ed.*

*remains as it is; it has only been translated from being into show.*" Hegel, therefore, is here a much more resolute materialist than the modern natural scientists.

* * *

Valuable self-criticism of the Kantian *thing-in-itself*, [which shows] that Kant suffers shipwreck also on the thinking ego and likewise discovers in it an unknowable thing-in-itself. (Hegel, V, p. 256 *et seq.*)

GANDHI SMARAKA GRANTH
BANGALORE-1

# [FORMS OF MOTION OF MATTER. CLASSIFICATION OF THE SCIENCES]

* * *

*Causa finalis*—matter and its inherent motion. This matter is *no abstraction*. Even in the sun the different substances are dissociated and without distinction in their action. But in the *gaseous sphere of the nebula* all substances, although separately present, *become merged in pure matter as such*, acting only as matter, not according to their specific properties.

(Moreover already in Hegel the antithesis of *causa efficiens* and *causa finalis* is sublated in reciprocal action.)

* * *

*Primordial matter*. "The conception of matter as original and pre-existent, and as naturally formless, is a very ancient one; it meets us even among the Greeks, at first in the mythical shape of chaos, which is supposed to represent the unformed substratum of the existing world." (Hegel, *Enzyklopädie*, I, p. 258.) We find this chaos again in Laplace, and approximately in the nebula which also has only the *beginning* of form. Differentiation comes afterwards.

* * *

*Gravity* as *the most general determination of materiality* is commonly accepted. That is to say, attraction is a necessary property of matter, but not repulsion. But attraction and repulsion are as inseparable as positive and negative, and hence from dialectics itself it can already be predicted that the true theory of matter must assign as important a place to repulsion as to attraction, and that a theory of matter based on mere attraction is false, inadequate, and one-sided. In fact sufficient phenomena occur that demonstrate this in advance. If only on account of light, the ether is not to be dispensed with. Is the ether of material nature? If it *exists* at all, it must be of material nature, it must come under the concept of matter. But it is not affected by gravity. The tail of a comet is granted to be of material nature. It shows a powerful repulsion. Heat in a gas produces repulsion, etc.

* * *

*Attraction and gravitation.* The whole theory of gravitation rests on saying that attraction is the essence of matter. This is necessarily false. Where there is attraction, it must be complemented by repulsion. Hence already Hegel was quite right in saying that the essence of matter is attraction *and* repulsion. And in fact we are more and more becoming forced to recognize that the dissipation of matter has a limit where attraction is transformed into repulsion, and conversely the condensation of the repelled matter has a limit where it becomes attraction.[167]

* * *

The transformation of attraction into repulsion and *vice versa* is mystical in Hegel, but in substance he anticipated by it the scientific discovery that came later. Even in a gas there is repulsion of the molecules, still more so in more finely-divided matter, for instance in the tail of a comet, where it even operates with enormous force. Hegel shows his genius even in the fact that he derives attraction as something secondary from repulsion as something preceding it: a solar system is only formed by the gradual preponderance of attraction over the originally prevailing repulsion.—Expansion by heat =repulsion. The kinetic theory of gases.

* * *

*The divisibility of matter.* For science the question is in practice a matter of indifference. We know that in chemistry there is a definite limit to divisibility, beyond which bodies can no longer act chemically—the atom; and that several atoms are always in combination—the molecule. Ditto in physics we are driven to the acceptance of certain—for physical analysis—smallest particles, the arrangement of which determines the form and cohesion of bodies, their vibrations becoming evident as heat, etc. But whether the physical and chemical molecules are identical or different, we do not yet know.

Hegel very easily gets over this question of divisibility by saying that matter is both divisible and continuous, and at the same time neither of the two, which is no answer but is now almost proved (see sheet 5, 3 below: Clausius[168]).

* * *

*Divisibility.* The mammal is indivisible, the reptile can regrow a foot.—Ether waves, divisible and measurable to the infinitesimally small.—Every body divisible, in practice, within certain limits, e.g., in chemistry.

* * *

"Its essence (of motion) is to be the immediate unity of space and time . . . to motion belong space and time; velocity, the quantum of motion, is space in relation to a definite time that has elapsed." ([Hegel,] *Naturphilosophie*, S. 65.) ". . . Space and time are filled with matter. . . . Just as there is no motion without matter, so there is no matter without motion." (P. 67.)

* * *

The indestructibility of motion in *Descartes'* principle that *the universe always contains the same quantity of motion.* Natural scientists express this imperfectly as the "indestructibility of force." The merely quantitative expression of Descartes is likewise inadequate: motion as such, as essential activity, the mode of existence of matter, as indestructible as the latter itself, includes the quantitative element. So here again the philosopher has been confirmed by the natural scientist after 200 years.

* * *

*The indestructibility of motion.* A pretty passage in Grove—p. 20 *et seq.*[169]

* * *

*Motion and equilibrium.* Equilibrium is inseparable from motion.* In the motion of the heavenly bodies there is *motion in equilibrium* and *equilibrium in motion* (relative). But all specifically relative motion, i.e., here all separate motion of individual bodies on one of the heavenly bodies in motion, is an effort to establish relative rest, equilibrium. The possibility of bodies being at relative rest, the possibility of temporary states of equilibrium, is the essential condition for the differentiation of matter and hence for life. On the sun there is no equilibrium of the various substances, only of the mass as a whole, or at any rate only a very restricted one, determined by considerable differences of density; on the surface there is eternal motion and unrest, dissociation. On the moon, equilibrium appears to prevail exclusively, without any relative motion—death (moon=negativity). On the earth motion has become differentiated into interchange of motion and equilibrium: the individual motion strives towards equilibrium, the motion as a whole once more destroys the individual equilibrium. The rock comes to rest, but weathering, the action of the ocean surf, of rivers and glacier ice continually destroy the equilibrium. Evaporation and rain, wind, heat, electric and magnetic phenomena offer the same spectacle. Finally, in the living organism we see continual motion of all the smallest particles as well as of the larger organs, resulting in the continual equilibrium of the total organism during the normal period of life, which yet always remains in motion, the living unity of motion and equilibrium.

---

* Above this line at the very top of the page is written in pencil: "Equilibrium=Predominance of attraction over repulsion."—*Ed.*

All equilibrium is only *relative* and *temporary.*

* * *

(1) Motion of the heavenly bodies. Approximate equilibrium of attraction and repulsion in motion.

(2) Motion on one heavenly body. Mass. In so far as this motion comes from pure mechanical causes, here also there is equilibrium. The masses are at rest on their foundation. On the moon this is apparently complete. Mechanical attraction has overcome mechanical repulsion. From the standpoint of pure mechanics, we do not know what has become of the repulsion, and pure mechanics just as little explains whence come the "forces," by which nevertheless masses on the earth, for example, are set in motion *against* gravity. It takes the fact for granted. Here therefore there is simple communication of repelling, displacing motion from mass to mass, with equality of attraction and repulsion.

(3) The overwhelming majority of all terrestrial motions, however, are made up of the conversion of one form of motion into another—mechanical motion into heat, electricity, chemical motion—and of each form into any other; hence either[170] the transformation of attraction into repulsion—mechanical motion into heat, electricity, chemical decomposition (the transformation is the conversion of the original *lifting* mechanical motion into heat, not of the *falling* motion, which

is only the semblance) [—or transformation of repulsion into attraction].

(4) All energy now active on the earth is transformed heat from the sun.[171]

* * *

*Mechanical motion.* Among natural scientists motion is always as a matter of course taken to mean mechanical motion, change of place. This has been handed down from the pre-chemical eighteenth century and makes a clear conception of the processes much more difficult. Motion, as applied to matter, is *change in general.* From the same misunderstanding is derived also the craze to reduce everything to mechanical motion—even Grove is "strongly inclined to believe that the other affections of matter . . . are, and will ultimately be resolved into, modes of motion," p. 16[172]—which obliterates the specific character of the other forms of motion. This is not to say that each of the higher forms of motion is not always necessarily connected with some real mechanical (external or molecular) motion; just as the higher forms of motion simultaneously also produce other forms, and just as chemical action is not possible without change of temperature and electric changes, organic life without mechanical, molecular, chemical, thermal, electric, etc., changes. But the presence of these subsidiary forms does not exhaust the essence of the main form in each case. One day we shall certainly "reduce" thought experimentally to molecular and chemical motions in the brain; but does that exhaust the essence of thought?

* * *

*Dialectics of natural science*:[173] Subject-matter—matter in motion. The different forms and varieties of matter itself can likewise only be known through motion, only in this are the properties of bodies exhibited; of a body that does not move there is nothing to be said. Hence the nature of bodies in motion results from the forms of motion.

1. The first, simplest form of motion is the mechanical form, pure change of place:

(a) Motion of a single body does not exist—[it can be spoken of][174] only in a relative sense—falling.

(b) The motion of separated bodies: trajectory, astronomy—apparent equilibrium—the end always *contact*.

(c) The motion of bodies in contact in relation to one another—pressure. Statics. Hydrostatics and gases. The lever and other forms of mechanics proper—which all in their simplest form of contact amount to friction or impact, which are different only in degree. But friction and impact, in fact contact, have also other consequences never pointed out here by natural scientists: they produce, according to circumstances, sound, heat, light, electricity, magnetism.

2. These different forces (with the exception of sound)—physics of heavenly bodies—

(a) pass into one another and mutually replace one another, and

(b) on a certain quantitative development of each force, different for each body, applied to the bodies, whether they are chemically compound or several chemically simpele bodies, *chemical* changes take place, and we enter the realm of chemistry. Chemistry of heavenly bodies. Crystallography—part of chemistry.

3. Physics had to leave out of consideration the living organic body, or could do so; chemistry finds only in the investigation of organic compounds the real key to the true nature of the most important bodies, and, on the other hand, it synthesizes bodies which only occur in organic nature. Here chemistry leads to organic life, and it has gone far enough to assure us that *it alone* will explain to us the dialectical transition to the organism.

4. The *real* transition, however, is in *history*—of the solar system, the earth; the *real* pre-condition for organic nature.

5. Organic nature.

* * *

*Classification of the sciences*, each of which analyzes a single form of motion, or a series of forms of motion that belong together and pass into one another, is therefore the classification, the arrangement, of these forms of motion themselves according to their inherent sequence, and herein lies its importance.

At the end of the last [18th] century, after the French materialists, who were predominantly mechanical, the need became evident for an *encyclopædic summing up* of the entire natural science of the *old* Newton-Linnaeus school, and two men of the greatest genius undertook this, *Saint-Simon* (uncompleted) and *Hegel*. Today, when the new outlook on nature is complete in its basic features, the same need makes itself felt, and attempts are being made in this direction. But since the general evolutionary connection in nature has now been demonstrated, an external side by side arrangement is as inadequate as Hegel's artificially constructed dialectical transitions. The transitions must make themselves, they must be natural. Just as one form of motion develops out of another, so their reflections, the various sciences, must arise necessarily out of one another.

* * *

How little Comte can have been the author of his encyclopædic arrangement of the natural sciences, which he copied from Saint-Simon, is already evident from the fact that it only serves him for the purpose of *arranging the means of instruction* and *course of instruction*, and so leads to the crazy *enseignement intégral*, where one science is always exhausted before another is even broached, where a basically correct idea is pushed to a mathematical absurdity.

* * *

Hegel's division (the original one) into mechanics, chemics, and organics,[175] fully adequate for the time. Mechanics: the movement of masses. Chemics: molecular (for physics is also included in this and, indeed, both—physics as well as chemistry—belong to the same order) motion and atomic motion. Organics: the motion of bodies in which the two are inseparable. For the organism is certainly *the higher unity which within itself unites mechanics, physics, and chemistry into a whole* where the trinity can no longer be separated. In the organism, mechanical motion is effected directly by physical and chemical charge, in the form of nutrition, respiration, secretion, etc., just as much as pure muscular movement.

Each group in turn is twofold. Mechanics: (1) celestial, (2) terrestrial.

Molecular motion: (1) physics, (2) chemistry.

Organics: (1) plant, (2) animal.

* * *

*Physiography.* After the transition from chemistry to life has been made, then in the first place it is necessary to analyze the conditions in which life has been produced and continues to exist, i.e., first of all geology, meteorology, and the rest. Then the various forms of life themselves, which indeed without this are incomprehensible.

* * *

## ON THE "MECHANICAL" CONCEPTION OF NATURE.[176]

### Re page 46:[177] The various forms of motion and the sciences dealing with them

Since the above article appeared (*Vorwärts*, Feb. 9, 1877),[178] Kekulé (*Die wissenschaftlichen Ziele und Leistungen der Chemie*)[179] has defined mechanics, physics, and chemistry in a quite similar way: "If this idea of the nature of matter is made the basis, one could define chemistry as *the science of atoms* and physics as *the science of molecules*, and then it would be natural to separate that part of modern physics which deals with *masses* as a special science, reserving for it the name of *mechanics*. Thus mechanics appears as the basic science of physics and chemistry, in so far as in certain aspects and especially in certain calculations both of these have to treat their molecules or atoms as masses."[180] It will be seen that this formulation differs from that in the text[181] and in the previous note[182] only by being rather less definite. But when an English journal (*Nature*) put the above statement of Kekulé in the form that mechanics is the statics and dynamics of masses, physics the statics and dynamics of molecules, and chemistry the statics and dynamics of atoms,[183] then it seems to me that this unconditional reduction of even chemical processes to merely mechanical ones unduly restricts the field, at least of chemistry. And yet it is so much the fashion that, for instance, Hæckel continually uses "mechanical" and "monistic" as having the same meaning, and in his opinion "modern physiology . . . in its field allows only of the operation of physico-chemical—or *in the wider sense*,* mechanical—forces." (*Perigenesis.*)[184]

If I term physics the mechanics of molecules, chemistry the physics of atoms, and furthermore biology the chemistry of proteins, I wish thereby to express the passing of each of these sciences into another, hence both the connection, the continuity, and the distinction, the discrete separation, between the two of them. To go further and to define chemistry as likewise a kind of mechanics seems to me inadmissible. Mechanics—in the wider or narrower sense—knows only quantities, it calculates with velocities and masses, and at most with volumes. Where the quality of bodies comes across its path, as in hydrostatics and aerostatics, it cannot achieve anything without going into molecular states and molecular motions, it is itself only an auxiliary science, the prerequisite for physics. In physics, however, and still more in chemistry, not only does continual qualitative change take place in consequence of quantitative change, the transformation of quantity into quality, but there are also many qualitative changes to be taken into account whose dependence on quantitative change is by no means proven. That the present tendency of science goes in this direction can be readily granted, but does not prove that this direction is the exclusively correct one, that the pursuit of this tendency will *exhaust* the whole of physics and chemistry. All motion includes mechanical motion, change of place of the largest or smallest portions of matter, and the *first* task of science, but only the *first*, is to obtain knowledge of this motion. But this mechanical motion does not exhaust motion as a whole. Motion is not merely change of place, in fields higher than mechanics it is also change of quality. The discovery that heat is a molecular motion was epoch-making. But if I have nothing more to say of heat than that it is a certain displacement of molecules, I should best be silent. Chemistry seems to be well on the way to explaining a number of chemical and physical properties of elements from the ratio of the atomic volumes to the atomic weights. But no chemist would assert that all the properties of an element are exhaustively expressed by its position in the Lothar Meyer curve,[185] that it will ever be possible by this alone to explain, for instance, the peculiar constitution of carbon that makes it the essential bearer of organic life, or the necessity for phosphorus in the brain. Yet the "mechanical" conception amounts to nothing else. It explains all change from change of place, all qualitative differences from quantitative ones, and overlooks that the relation of quality and quantity is reciprocal, that quality can become transformed into quantity just as much as quantity into quality, that, in fact, reciprocal action takes place. If all differences and changes of quality are to be reduced to quantitative differences and changes, to mechanical displacement, then we inevitably arrive at the proposition that all matter consists of *identical* smallest particles, and that all qualitative differences of the chemical elements of matter are caused by quantitative differences in number and by the spatial grouping of those smallest particles to form atoms. But we have not got so far yet.

---

* Italics by Engels.—*Ed.*

It is our modern natural scientists' lack of acquaintance with any other philosophy than the most mediocre vulgar philosophy, like that now rampant in the German universities, which allows them to use expressions like "mechanical" in this way, without taking into account, or even suspecting, the consequences with which they thereby necessarily burden themselves. The theory of the absolute qualitative identity of matter has its supporters—empirically it is equally impossible to refute it or to prove it. But if one asks these people who want to explain everything "mechanically" whether they are conscious of this consequence and accept the identity of matter, what a variety of answers will be heard!

The most comical part about it is that to make "materialist" equivalent to "mechanical" derives from *Hegel*, who wanted to throw contempt on materialism by the addition "mechanical." Now the materialism criticized by Hegel—the French materialism of the eighteenth century—was in fact exclusively *mechanical*, and indeed for the very natural reason that at that time physics, chemistry, and biology were still in their infancy, and were very far from being able to offer the basis for a general outlook on nature. Similarly Hæckel takes from Hegel the translation: *causae efficientes*="mechanically acting causes," and *causae finales*="purposively acting causes"; where Hegel, therefore, puts "mechanical" as equivalent to blindly acting, unconsciously acting, and not as equivalent to mechanical in Hæckel's sense of the word. But this whole antithesis is for Hegel himself so much a superseded standpoint that he *does not even mention it* in either of his two expositions of causality in his *Logic*—but only in his *History of Philosophy*, in the place where it comes historically (hence a sheer misunderstanding on Hæckel's part due to superficiality!) and quite incidentally in dealing with teleology (*Logik*, III, II, 3)[136] where he mentions it as the form in which the *old metaphysics* conceived the antithesis of mechanism and teleology, but otherwise treating it as a long superseded standpoint. Hence Hæckel copied incorrectly in his joy at finding a confirmation of his "mechanical" conception and so arrives at the beautiful result that if a particular change is produced in an animal or plant by natural selection it has been effected by a *causa efficiens*, but if the same change arises by *artificial* selection then it has been effected by a *causa finalis*! The breeder a *causa finalis*! Of course a dialectician of Hegel's calibre could not be caught in the vicious circle of the narrow antithesis of *causa efficiens* and *causa finalis*. And for the modern standpoint the whole hopeless rubbish about this antithesis is put an end to because we *know* from experience and from theory that both matter and its mode of existence, motion, are uncreatable and are, therefore, their own final cause; while to give the name *effective* causes to the individual causes which momentarily and locally become isolated in the mutual interaction of the motion of the universe, or which are isolated by our reflecting mind, adds absolutely no new determination but only a confusing element. A cause that is not effective is no cause.

N. B. Matter as such is a pure creation of thought and an abstraction. We leave out of account the qualitative differences of things in lumping them together as corporeally existing things under the concept matter. Hence matter as such, as distinct from definite existing pieces of matter, is not anything sensuously existing. When natural science directs its efforts to seeking out uniform matter as such, to reducing qualitative differences to merely quantitative differences in combining identical smallest particles, it is doing the same thing as demanding to see fruit as such instead of cherries, pears, apples, or the mammal as such instead of cats, dogs, sheep, etc., gas as such, metal, stone, chemical compound as such, motion as such. The Darwinian theory demands such a primordial mammal, Hæckel's promammal, but, at the same time, it has to admit that if this pro-mammal contained within itself in *germ* all future and existing mammals, it was in reality lower in rank than all existing mammals and primitively crude, hence more transitory than any of them. As Hegel has already shown (*Enzyklopädie*, I, S. 199), this view, this "one-sided mathematical view," according to which matter must be looked upon as having only quantitative determination, but, qualitatively, as identical originally, is "no other standpoint than that" of the French materialism of the eighteenth century. It is even a retreat to Pythagoras, who regarded number, quantitative determination as the essence of things.

* * *

In the first place, Kekulé.[187] Then: the systematizing of natural science, which is now becoming more and more necessary, cannot be found in any other way than in the inter-connections of phenomena themselves. Thus the mechanical motion of small masses on any heavenly body ends in the contact of two bodies, which has two forms, differing only in degree, viz., friction and impact. So we investigate first of all the mechanical effect of friction and impact. But we find that the effect is not thereby exhausted: friction produces heat, light, and electricity, impact produces heat and light if not electricity also—hence conversion of motion of masses into molecular motion. We enter the realm of molecular motion, physics, and investigate further. But here too we find that molecular motion does not represent the conclusion of the investigation. Electricity passes into and arises from chemical transformation. Heat and light, ditto. Molecular motion becomes transformed into motion of atoms—chemistry. The investigation of chemical processes is confronted by the organic world as a field for research, that is to say, a world in which chemical processes take place, although under different conditions, according to the same laws as in the inorganic world, for the explanation of which chemistry suffices. In the organic world, on the other hand, all chemical investigations lead back in the last resort to a body—protein—which, while being the result of ordinary chemical processes, is distinguished from all others by being a self-acting, permanent chemical process. If chemistry succeeds in preparing this protein, in the specific form in which it obviously arose, that of a so-called protoplasm, a specificity, or rather absence of specificity, such that it contains potentially within itself all other forms of protein (though it is not necessary to assume that there is only one kind of protoplasm), then the dialectical transition will have been proved in reality, hence completely proved. Until then, it remains a matter of thought, alias of hypothesis. When chemistry produces protein, the chemical process will reach out beyond itself, as in the case of the mechanical process above, that is, it will come into a more comprehensive realm, that of the organism. Physiology is, of course, the physics and especially the chemistry of the living body, but with that it ceases to be specially chemistry: on the one hand its domain becomes restricted but, on the other hand, inside this domain it becomes raised to a higher power.

# [MATHEMATICS]

* * *

The so-called axioms of mathematics are the few thought determinations which mathematics needs for its point of departure. Mathematics is the science of magnitudes; its point of departure is the concept of magnitude. It defines this lamely and then adds the other elementary determinations of magnitude, not contained in the definition, from outside as axioms, so that they appear as unproved, and naturally also as *mathematically* unprovable. The analysis of magnitude would yield all these axiom determinations as necessary determinations of magnitude. Spencer is right in as much as what thus appears to us to be the *self-evidence* of these axioms is *inherited*. They are provable dialectically, in so far as they are not pure tautologies.

* * *

*Mathematics.* Nothing appears more solidly based than the difference between the four species of arithmetical operations, the elements of all mathematics. Yet right at the outset multiplication is seen to be an abbreviated addition, and division an abbreviated subtraction, of a definite number of equal numerical magnitudes; and in one case—when the divisor is a fraction—

division is even carried out by multiplying by the inverted fraction. In algebraic calculation the thing is carried much further. Every subtraction $(a-b)$ can be represented as an addition $(-b+a)$, every division $\frac{a}{b}$ as a multiplication $a\times\frac{1}{b}$. In calculations with powers of magnitudes one goes much further still. All rigid differences between the kinds of calculation disappear, everything can be presented in the opposite form. A power can be put as a root $(x^2=\sqrt{x^4})$, a root as a power $(\sqrt{x}=x^{\frac{1}{2}})$. Unity divided by a power or root can be put as a power of the denominator $(\frac{1}{\sqrt{x}}=x^{-\frac{1}{2}}$; $\frac{1}{x^3}=x^{-3}$.) Multiplication or division of the powers of a magnitude becomes converted into addition or subtraction of their exponents. Any number can be conceived and expressed as the power of any other number (logarithms, $y=a^x$). And this transformation of one form into the opposite one is no idle trifling, it is one of the most powerful levers of mathematical science, without which today hardly any of the more difficult calculations are carried out. If negative and fractional powers alone were abolished from mathematics, how far could one get?

$(-\cdot-=+$, $\frac{-}{-}=+$, $\sqrt{-1}$, etc., to be expounded earlier.)

The turning point in mathematics was Descartes' *variable magnitude*. With that came *motion* and hence *dialectics* in mathematics, and *at once, too, of necessity the differential and integral calculus*, which moreover immediately begins, and which on the whole was completed by Newton and Leibniz, not discovered by them.

* * *

*Quantity and quality.* Number is the purest quantitative determination that we know. But it is chock-full of qualitative differences. 1. Hegel, number and unity, multiplication, division, raising to a higher power, extraction of roots. Thereby, and this is not shown in Hegel, qualitative differences already make their appearance: prime numbers and products, simple roots and powers. 16 is not merely the sum of 16 ones, it is also the square of 4, the fourth power of 2. Still more. Prime numbers communicate new, definitely determined qualities to numbers derived from them by multiplication with other numbers; only even numbers are divisible by 2, and there is a similar determination in the case of 4 and 8. For 3 there is the rule of the sum of the figures, and the same thing for 9 and also for 6, in the last case in combination with the even number. For 7 there is a special rule. These form the basis for tricks with numbers which seem incomprehensible to the uninitiated. Hence what Hegel says (*Quantity*, p. 237)[188] on the absence of thought in arithmetic is incorrect. Compare, however, *Measure.*[189]

When mathematics speaks of the infinitely large and infinitely small, it introduces a qualitative difference which even takes the form of an unbridgeable qualitative opposition: quantities so enormously different from one another that every rational relation, every comparison, between them ceases, that they become quantitatively incommensurable. Ordinary incommensurability, for instance of the circle and the straight line, is also a dialectical qualitative difference; but here[190] it is the difference in *quantity* of *similar* magnitudes that increases the difference of *quality* to the point of incommensurability.

* * *

*Number.* The individual number becomes endowed with quality already in the numerical system itself, and the quality depends on the system used. 9 is not only 1 added together 9 times, but also the basis for 90, 99, 900,000, etc. All numerical laws depend upon and are determined by the system adopted. In dyadic and triadic systems 2 multiplied by 2 does not equal 4, but = 100 or = 11. In all systems with an odd basic number, the difference between odd and even numbers falls to the ground, e.g., in the system based on 5, 5 = 10, 10 = 20, 15 = 30. Likewise in the same system the sums of digits $3n$ of products of 3 or 9 (6 = 11, 9 = 14). Hence the basic number determines not only its own quality but also that of all the other numbers.

With powers of numbers, the matter goes still further: any number can be conceived as the power of any other number—there are as many logarithmic systems as there are whole and fractional numbers.

* * *

*One.* Nothing looks simpler than quantitative unity, and nothing is more manifold than it, as soon as we investigate it in connection with the corresponding plurality and according to its various modes of origin from plurality. First of all, one is the basic number of the whole positive and negative system of numbers, all other numbers arising by the successive addition of one to itself.

One is the expression of all positive, negative, and fractional powers of one: $1^2$, $\sqrt{1}$, $1^{-2}$ are all equal to one.

It is the content of all fractions in which the numerator and denominator prove to be equal. It is the expression of every number that is raised to the power of zero, and therewith the sole number the logarithm of which is the same in all systems, viz., $=0$. Thus one is the boundary that divides all possible systems of logarithms into two parts: if the base is greater than one, then the logarithms of all numbers more than one are positive, and of all numbers less than one negative; if it is smaller than one, the reverse is the case.

Hence, if every number contains unity in itself in as much as it is compounded entirely of ones added together, unity likewise contains all other numbers in itself. This is not only a possibility, in as much as we can construct any number solely of ones, but also a reality, in as much as one is a definite power of every other number. But the very same mathematicians who, without turning a hair, interpolate into their calculations, wherever it suits them, $x^0=1$, or a fraction whose numerator and denominator are equal and, which therefore likewise represents one, who therefore apply mathematically the plurality contained in unity, turn up their noses and grimace if they are told in general terms that unity and plurality are inseparable, mutually penetrating concepts and that plurality is not less contained in unity than unity is in plurality. How much this is the case we see as soon as we forsake the field of pure numbers. Already in the measurement of lines, surfaces, and the volumes of bodies it becomes apparent that we can take any desired magnitude of the appropriate order as unity, and the same thing holds for measurement of time, weight, motion, etc. For the measurement of cells even millimetres and milligrams are too large, for the measurement of stellar distances or the velocity of light even the kilometre is uncomfortably small, just as the kilogram for planetary or, even more so, solar masses. Here is seen very clearly what diversity and multiplicity is contained in the concept of unity, at first sight so simple.

* * *

*Zero*, because it is the negation of any definite quantity, is not therefore devoid of content. On the contrary, zero has a very definite content. As the border-line between all positive and negative magnitudes, as the sole really neutral number, which can be neither positive nor negative, it is not only a very definite number, but also in itself more important than all other numbers bounded by it. In fact, zero is richer in content than any other number. Put on the right of any other number, it gives to the latter, in our system of numbers, the tenfold value. Instead of zero one could use here any other sign, but only on the condition that this sign taken by itself signifies zero, =0. Hence it is part of the nature of zero itself that it finds this application and that it alone *can* be applied in this way. Zero annihilates every other number with which it is multiplied; united with any other number as divisor or dividend, in the former case it makes this infinitely large, in the latter infinitely small; it is the only number that stands in a relation of infinity to every other number. $\frac{0}{0}$ can express every number between $-\infty$ and $+\infty$, and in each case represents a real magnitude.

The real content of an equation first clearly emerges when all its members have been brought to *one* side, and the equation is thus reduced to zero value, as already happens for quadratic equations, and is almost the general rule in higher algebra. The function $F(x, y)=0$ can then also be put equal to $z$, and this $z$, although it is $=0$, differentiated like an ordinary dependent variable and its partial derivative determined.

The nothing of every quantity, however, is itself quantitatively determined, and only on that account is it possible to calculate with zero. The very same mathematicians who are quite unembarrassed in reckoning with zero in the above manner, i.e., in operating with it as a definite quantitative concept, bringing it into quantitative relation to other quantitative concepts, clutch their heads in desperation when they read this in Hegel generalized as: the nothing of a something is a *determinate** nothing.

But now for (analytical) geometry. Here zero is a definite point from which measurements are taken along a line, in one direction positively, in the other negatively. Here, therefore, the zero point has not only just as much significance as any point denoted by a positive or negative magnitude, but a much greater significance than all of them: it is the point on which they are all dependent, to which they are all related, and by which they are all determined. In many cases it can even be taken quite arbitrarily. But once adopted, it remains the central point of the whole operation, often determining even the direction of the line along which the other points—the end points of the abscissæ—are to be inserted. If, for example, in order to arrive at the equation of the circle, we choose any point of the periphery as the zero point, then the line of the abscissæ must go through the centre of the circle. All this finds just as much application in mechanics, where likewise in the calculation of the motions the point taken as zero in each case forms the main point and pivot for the entire operation. The zero point of the thermometer is the very definite lower limit of the temperature section that is divided into any desired number of degrees, thereby serving as a measure both for temperature stages within the section as also for higher or lower temperatures. Hence in this case also it is a very essential point. And even the absolute zero of the thermometer in no way represents pure abstract negation, but a very definite state of matter: the limit at which the last trace of independent molecular motion vanishes and matter acts only as mass. Wherever we come upon zero, it represents something very definite, and its practical application in geometry, mechanics, etc., proves that—as limit—it is more important than all the real magnitudes bounded by it.

---

* Italics by Engels.—*Ed.*

* * *

*Zero powers.* Of importance in the logarithmic series: $\overset{0}{10^0}\ \overset{1}{10^1}\ \overset{2}{10^2}\ \overset{3\ \text{log.}}{10^3}$ All variables pass somewhere through unity; hence also a constant raised to a variable power ($a^x$) = 1, if $x=0$. $a^0=1$ means nothing more than conceiving unity in its connection with the other members of the series of powers of $a$, only there has it any meaning and can lead to results ($\sum x^0 = \frac{x}{\omega}$),[191] otherwise not at all. From this it follows that unity also, however much it may appear identical with itself, includes within it an infinite manifoldness, since it can be the zero power of any other possible number, and that this manifoldness is not merely imaginary is proved on each occasion that unity is conceived as a determined unity, as one of the variable results of a process (as a momentary magnitude or form of a variable) in connection with this process.

* * *

$\sqrt{-1}$. The negative magnitudes of algebra are real only in so far as they are connected with positive magnitudes and only within the relation to the latter; outside this relation, taken by themselves, they are purely imaginary. In trigonometry and analytical geometry, together with the branches of higher mathematics of which these are the basis, they express a definite direction of motion, opposite to the positive direction. But the sine and tangent of the circle can be reckoned from the upper right-hand quadrant just as well as from the lower right-hand quadrant, thus directly reversing plus and minus. Similarly, in analytical geometry, abscissæ can be calculated from the periphery or from the centre of the circle, indeed in all curves they can be reckoned from the curve in the direction usually denoted as minus [or] in any desired direction, and still give a correct rational equation of the curve. Here plus exists only as the complement of minus, and *vice versa*. But algebraic abstraction treats them [negative magnitudes] as real and independent, even outside the relation to a *larger*, positive magnitude.

* * *

*Mathematics.* To common sense it appears an absurdity to resolve a definite magnitude, e.g., a binomial expression, into an infinite series, that is, into something indefinite. But where would we be without infinite series and the binomial theorem?

* * *

*Asymptotes.* Geometry begins with the discovery that straight and curved are absolute opposites, that straight is absolutely inexpressible in curved, and curved in straight, that the two are incommensurable. Yet even the calculation of the circle is only possible by expressing its periphery in straight lines. For curves with asymptotes, however, straight becomes completely merged in curved, and curved in straight; just as much as the notion of parallelism: the lines are not parallel, they continually approach one another and yet never meet; the arm of the curve becomes more and more straight, without ever becoming entirely so, just as in analytical geometry the straight line is regarded as a curve of the first order with an infinitely small curvature. However large the $x$ of the logarithmic curve may become, $y$ can never $=0$.

* * *

*Straight and curved* in the differential calculus are in the last resort put as equal: in the differential triangle, the hypotenuse of which forms the differential of the arc (in the tangent method), this hypotenuse can be regarded "as a small, quite straight line which is at the same time the element of the arc and that of the tangent"—no matter whether the curve is regarded as composed of an infinite number of straight lines, or also, "whether one considers it as a strict curve; since the curvature at each point *M* is infinitely small, the last ratio of the element of the curve to that of the tangent *is evidently a ratio of equality*."* Here, therefore, although the ratio continually *approaches* equality, but *asymptotically* in accordance with the nature of the curve, yet, since the contact is limited to a single *point* which has no length, it is finally assumed that equality of straight and curved has been reached. (Bossut, *Calcul différentiel et intégral*, Paris, An VI, I, p. 149.) In polar curves[192] the differential imaginary abscissæ are even taken as parallel to the real abscissæ and operations based on this, although both meet at the pole: indeed, from it is deduced the similarity of two triangles, one of which has an angle precisely at the point of intersection of the two lines, the parallelism of which is the whole basis of the similarity! (Fig. 17.)[193]

When the mathematics of straight and curved lines has thus pretty well reached exhaustion a new almost infinite field is opened up by the mathematics that *conceives curved as straight* (the differential triangle) and

---

* Italics by Engels.—*Ed.*

*straight as curved* (curve of the first order with infinitely small curvature). O metaphysics!

* * *

*Trigonometry.* After synthetic geometry has exhausted the properties of a triangle, regarded as such, and has nothing new to say, a more extensive horizon is opened up by a very simple, thoroughly dialectical procedure. The triangle is no longer considered in and for itself but in connection with another figure, the circle. Every right-angled triangle can be regarded as belonging to a circle: if the hypotenuse $=r$, then the sides enclosing the right angle are sin and cos; if one of these sides $=r$, then the other =tan, the hypotenuse =sec. In this way the sides and angles are given quite different, definite relationships which without this relation of the triangle to the circle would be impossible to discover and use, and quite a new theory of the triangle arises, far surpassing the old and universally applicable, because every triangle can be resolved into two right-angled triangles. This development of trigonometry from synthetic geometry is a good example of dialectics, of the way in which it comprehends things in their inter-connection instead of in isolation.

* * *

*Identity and difference*—the dialectical relation is already seen in the differential calculus, where $dx$ is infinitely small, but yet is effective and does everything.

* * *

*Molecule and differential.* Wiedemann (III, p. 636)[194] puts *finite* and *molecular* distances as directly opposed to one another.

* * *

## ON THE PROTOTYPES OF THE MATHEMATICAL INFINITE IN THE REAL WORLD.[195]

### Re pp. 17-18.[196] Concordance of Thought and Being.—The Infinite in Mathematics

The fact that our subjective thought and the objective world are subject to the same laws, and hence, too, that in the final analysis they cannot contradict each other in their results, but must coincide, governs absolutely our whole theoretical thought. It is the unconscious and unconditional premise for theoretical thought. Eighteenth century materialism, owing to its essentially metaphysical character, investigated this premise only as regards content. It restricted itself to the proof that the content of all thought and knowledge must derive from sensuous experience, and revived the principle: *nihil est in intellectu, quod non fuerit in sensu.* It was modern idealistic, but at the same time dialectical, philosophy, and especially Hegel, which for the first time investigated it also as regards *form.* In spite of all the innumerable arbitrary constructions and fantasies that we encounter here, in spite of the idealist, topsy-turvy form of its result—the unity of thought and being—it is undeniable that this philosophy proved the analogy of the processes of thought to those of nature and history and *vice versa*, and the validity of similar laws for all these processes, in numerous cases and in the most diverse fields. On the other hand, modern natural science has extended the principle of the origin of all thought content from experience in a way that breaks down its old metaphysical limitation and formulation. By recognizing the inheritance of acquired characters, it extends the subject of experience from the individual to the genus; the single individual that must have experienced is no longer necessary, its individual experience can be replaced to a certain extent by the results of the experiences of a number of its ancestors. If, for instance, among us the mathematical axioms seem self-evident to every eight-year-old child, and in no need of proof from experience, this is solely the result of "accumulated inheritance." It would be difficult to teach them by a proof to a bushman or Australian Negro.

In the present work[197] dialectics is conceived as the science of the most general laws of *all* motion. This implies that its laws must be valid just as much for motion in nature and human history as for the motion of thought. Such a law can be recognized in two of these three spheres, indeed even in all three, without the metaphysical philistine being clearly aware that it is one and the same law that he has come to know.

Let us take an example. Of all theoretical advances there is surely none that ranks so high as a triumph of the human mind as the discovery of the infinitesimal calculus in the last half of the seventeenth century. If anywhere, it is here that we have a pure and exclusive feat of human intelligence. The mystery which even today surrounds the magnitudes employed in the infinitesimal calculus, the differentials and infinites of various degrees, is the best proof that it is still imagined that what are dealt with here are pure "free creations and imaginations"[198] of the human mind, to which there is nothing corresponding in the objective world. Yet the contrary is the case. Nature offers prototypes for all these imaginary magnitudes.

Our geometry takes as its starting-point space relations, and our arithmetic and algebra numerical magnitudes, which correspond to our terrestrial conditions, which therefore correspond to the magnitude of bodies that mechanics terms masses—masses such as occur on earth and are moved by men. In comparison with these masses, the mass of the earth seems infinitely large and indeed terrestrial mechanics treats it as infinitely large. The radius of the earth $= \infty$, this is the basic principle of all mechanics in the law of falling. But not merely the earth but the whole solar system and the distances occurring in the latter in their turn appear infinitely small as soon as we have to deal with the distances reckoned in light years in the stellar system visible to us through the telescope. We have here, therefore, already an infinity, not only of the first but of the second degree, and we can leave it to the imagination of our readers to construct further infinities of a higher degree in infinite space, if they feel inclined to do so.

According to the view prevailing in physics and chemistry today, however, the terrestrial masses, the bodies with which mechanics operates, consist of molecules, of smallest particles which cannot be further divided without abolishing the physical and chemical identity of the body concerned. According to W. Thomson's calculations, the diameter of the smallest of these molecules cannot be smaller than a fifty-millionth of a millimetre.[199] But even if we assume that the largest molecule itself attains a diameter of a twenty-five-millionth of a millimetre, it still remains an infinitesimally small magnitude compared with the smallest mass dealt with by mechanics, physics, or even chemistry. Nevertheless, it is endowed with all the properties peculiar to the mass in question, it can represent the mass physically and chemically, and does actually represent it in all chemical equations. In short, it has the same properties in relation to the corresponding mass as the mathematical differential has in relation to its variables. The only difference is that what seems mysterious and inexplicable to us in the case of the differential, in the mathematical abstraction, here seems a matter of course and as it were obvious.

Nature operates with these differentials, the molecules, in exactly the same way and according to the same laws as mathematics does with its abstract differentials. Thus, for instance, the differential of $x^3 = 3x^2dx$, where $3xdx^2$ and $dx^3$ are neglected. If we put this in geometrical form, we have a cube with sides of length $x$, the length being increased by the infinitely small amount $dx$. Let us suppose that this cube consists of a sublimated element, say sulphur; and that three of the surfaces around one corner are protected, the other three being free. Let us now expose this sulphur cube to an atmosphere of sulphur vapour and lower the temperature sufficiently; sulphur will be deposited on the three free sides of the cube. We remain quite within the ordinary mode of procedure of physics and chemistry in supposing, in order to picture the process in its pure form, that in the first place a layer of the thickness of a single molecule is deposited on each of these three sides. The length $x$ of the sides of the cube has increased by the diameter of a molecule $dx$. The content of the cube $x^3$ has increased by the difference between $x^3$ and $x^3+3x^2dx+3xdx^2+dx^3$, where $dx^3$, a *single* molecule, and $3xdx^2$, three rows of length $x+dx$, consisting simply of lineally arranged molecules, can be neglected with the same justification as in mathematics. The result is the same, the increase in mass of the cube is $3x^2dx$.

Strictly speaking $dx^3$ and $3xdx^2$ do not occur in the case of the sulphur cube, because two or three molecules cannot occupy the same space, and the cube's increase of bulk is therefore exactly $3x^2dx+3xdx+dx$. This is explained by the fact that in mathematics $dx$ is a linear magnitude, while it is well known that such lines, without thickness or breadth, do not occur independently in nature, hence also the mathematical abstractions have unrestricted validity only in pure mathematics. And since the latter neglects $3xdx^2+dx^3$, it makes no difference.

Similarly in evaporation. When the uppermost molecular layer in a glass of water evaporates, the height of the water layer, $x$, is decreased by $dx$, and the continual flight of one molecular layer after another is actually a continued differentiation. And when the hot vapour is once more condensed to water in a vessel by pressure and cooling, and one molecular layer is deposited on another (it is permissible to leave out of account secondary circumstances that make the process an impure one) until the vessel is full, then literally an integration has been performed which differs from the mathematical one only in that the one is consciously carried out by the human brain, while the other is unconsciously carried out by nature.

But it is not only in the transition from the liquid to the gaseous state and *vice versa* that processes occur which are completely analogous to those of the infinitesimal calculus. When mass motion, as such, is abolished—by impact—and becomes transformed into heat, molecular motion, what is it that happens but that the mass motion is differentiated? And when the movements of the molecules of steam in the cylinder of the steam-engine become added together so that they lift the piston by a definite amount, so that they become transformed into mass motion, have they not been integrated? Chemistry dissociates molecules into atoms, magnitudes of lesser mass and spatial extension, but magnitudes of the same order, so that the two stand in definite, finite relations to one another. Hence, all the chemical equations which express the molecular composition of bodies are in their form differential equations. But in reality they are already integrated owing to the atomic weights which figure in them. For chemistry calculates with differentials, the mutual relation of the magnitudes of which is known.

Atoms, however, are in no wise regarded as simple, or in general as the smallest known particles of matter. Apart from chemistry itself, which is more and more inclining to the view that atoms are compound, the majority of physicists assert that the universal ether, which transmits light and heat radiations, likewise consists of discrete particles, which, however, are so small that they have the same relation to chemical atoms and physical molecules as these have to mechanical masses, that is to say as $d^2x$ to $dx$. Here, therefore, in the now usual notion of the constitution of matter, we have likewise a differential of the second degree, and there is no reason at all why anyone, to whom it would give satisfaction, should not imagine that analogies of $d^3x$, $dx$, etc., also occur in nature.

Hence, whatever view one may hold of the constitution of matter, this much is certain, that it is divided up into a series of big, well-defined groups of a relatively different mass character in such a way that the members of each separate group stand to one another in definite finite mass ratios, in contrast to which those of the next group stand to them in the ratio of the infinitely large or infinitely small in the mathematical sense. The visible system of stars, the solar system, terrestrial masses, molecules and atoms, and finally ether particles, form each of them such a group. It does not alter the case that intermediate links can be found between the separate groups. Thus, between the masses of the solar system and terrestrial masses come the asteroids (some of which have a diameter no greater than, for example, that of the younger branch of the Reuss principality[200]), meteorites, etc. Thus, in the organic world the cell stands between terrestrial masses and molecules. These intermediate links prove only that there are no leaps in nature, *precisely because* nature is composed entirely of leaps.

In so far as mathematics calculates with real magnitudes, it also employs this mode of outlook without hesitation. For terrestrial mechanics the mass of the earth is regarded as infinitely large, just as for astronomy terrestrial masses and the meteorites corresponding to them are regarded as infinitely small, and just as the distances and masses of the planets of the solar system dwindle to nothing as soon as astronomy investigates the constitution of our stellar system extending beyond the nearest fixed stars. As soon, however, as the mathematicians withdraw into their impregnable fortress of abstraction, so-called pure mathematics, all these analogies are forgotten, infinity becomes something totally mysterious, and the manner in which operations are carried out with it in analysis appears as something absolutely incomprehensible, contradicting all experience and all reason. The stupidities and absurdities by which mathematicians have rather excused than explained their mode of procedure, which remarkably enough always leads to correct results, exceed the worst apparent and real fantasies, e.g., of the Hegelian philosophy of nature, about which mathematicians and natural scientists can never adequately express their horror. What they charge Hegel with doing, viz., pushing abstractions to the extreme limit, they do themselves on a far greater scale. They forget that the whole of so-called pure mathematics is concerned with abstractions, that *all* its magnitudes, strictly speaking, are imaginary, and that all abstractions when pushed to extremes are transformed into nonsense or into their opposite. Mathematical infinity is taken from reality, although unconsciously, and therefore can only be explained from reality and not from itself, from mathematical abstraction. And, as we have seen, if we investigate reality in this regard we come also upon the real relations from which the mathematical relation of infinity is taken, and even the natural analogies of the mathematical way in which this relation operates. And thereby the matter is explained.

(Hæckel's bad reproduction of the identity of thinking and being.[201] But also *the contradiction between continuous and discrete matter*;[202] see Hegel.)*

* * *

The differential calculus for the first time makes it possible for natural science to represent mathematically *processes* and not only *states*: motion.

* * *

Application of mathematics: in the mechanics of solid bodies it is absolute, in that of gases approximate, in that of fluids already more difficult; in physics more tentative and relative; in chemistry, simple equations of the first order and of the simplest nature; in biology = 0.

---

* Subsequently added by Engels.—*Ed.*

## [MECHANICS AND ASTRONOMY]

* * *

An example of the necessity of dialectical thought and of the non-rigid categories and relations in nature: the law of falling, which already in the case of a period of fall of some minutes becomes incorrect, since then the radius of the earth can no longer without error be put $= \infty$, and the attraction of the earth increases instead of remaining constant as Galileo's law of falling assumes. Nevertheless, this law is still continually taught, but the reservation omitted!

* * *

Newtonian attraction and centrifugal force—an example of metaphysical thinking: the problem not solved but only *posed*, and this preached as the solution.—Ditto Clausius' dissipation of heat.

* * *

*Newtonian gravitation.* The best that can be said of it is that it does not explain but *pictures* the present state of planetary motion. The motion is given. Ditto the force of attraction of the sun. With these data, how is the motion to be explained? By the parallelogram of forces, by a tangential force which now becomes a necessary postulate that we *must* accept. That is to say, assuming the *eternal character* of the existing state, we need a *first impulse*, God. But neither is the existing planetary state eternal nor is the motion originally compound, but *simple rotation*, and the parallelogram of forces applied here is wrong, because it did not merely make evident the unknown magnitude, the $x$, that had still to be found, that is to say in so far as Newton claimed not merely to put the question but to solve it.

* * *

*Newton's parallelogram of forces* in the solar system is true at best *for the moment when the annular bodies separate*, because then the rotational motion comes into contradiction with itself, appearing on the one hand as attraction, and on the other hand as tangential force. As soon as the separation is complete, however, the motion is again a unity. That this separation must occur is a proof of the dialectical process.

* * *

Laplace's theory presupposes only matter in motion—rotation necessary for all bodies suspended in universal space.

* * *

### MÄDLER, THE FIXED STARS[203]

*Halley*, at the beginning of the eighteenth century, from the difference between the data of Hipparchus and Flamsteed on three stars, first arrived at the idea of proper motion (p. 410).—Flamsteed's British Catalogue, the first fairly accurate and comprehensive one (p. 420), then *ca.* 1750, Bradley, Maskelyne, and Lalande.

Crazy *theory of the range of light rays in the case of* *enormous bodies* and Mädler's calculation based on this—as crazy as anything in Hegel's *Philosophy of Nature* (pp. 424-25).

The strongest (apparent) proper motion of a star—701″ in a century=11′ 41″=one-third of the sun's diameter; smallest average of 921 telescopic stars 8.65″, some of them 4″.

Milky Way a series of rings, all with a common centre of gravity (p. 434).

*The Pleiades Group, and in it Alcyone,* η Tauri, the centre of motion for our island universe "as far as the most remote regions of the Milky Way" (p. 448). Periods of revolution within the Pleiades Group on the average *ca.* two million years (p. 449). About the Pleiades are annular groups alternately poor in stars and rich in stars. —Secchi contests the possibility of fixing a centre at the present time.

According to Bessel, *Sirius* and *Procyon* describe an orbit about a *dark* body, as well as the general motion (p. 450).

*Eclipse of Algol* every 3 days, duration 8 hours, *confirmed by spectral analysis* (Secchi, p. 786).[204]

In the region of the *Milky Way*, but deep *within* it, a dense ring of stars of magnitudes 7-11; a long way outside this ring are the concentric Milky Way rings, of which we see two. In the Milky Way, according to Herschel, *ca.* 18 million stars visible through his telescope, those lying *within* the ring being *ca.* 2 million or more, hence over 20 million in all. In addition there is always a non-resolvable glow in the Milky Way, even behind the resolved stars, hence perhaps still further rings concealed owing to perspective? (Pp. 451-52.)

*Alcyone* distant from the sun 573 light years. *Diameter of the Milky Way ring* of separate visible stars, at least 8,000 light years (pp. 462-63).

The *mass* of the bodies moving within the sun-Alcyone radius of 573 light years is calculated at 118 million sun masses (p. 462), not at all in agreement with the at most 2 million stars moving therein. Dark bodies? At any rate something wrong. A proof of how imperfect our observational bases still are.

For the outermost ring of the Milky Way, Mädler assumes a distance of thousands, perhaps of hundreds of thousands, of light years (p. 464).

A *beautiful argument* against the so-called absorption of light: "At any rate, there does exist a distance from which no further light can reach us, but the reason is quite a different one. The velocity of light is *finite*; from the beginning of creation to our day a *finite* time has elapsed, and therefore we can only become aware of the heavenly bodies up to the distance which light has travelled in this finite time!" (P. 466.) That light, decreasing in intensity according to the square of the distance, must reach a point where it is no longer visible to our eyes, however much the latter may be strengthened and equipped, is quite obvious, and suffices for refuting the view of Olbers that only light absorption is capable of explaining the darkness of the sky that nevertheless is filled in all directions with shining stars to an infinite distance. That is not to say that there does not exist a distance at which the ether *allows no further light to penetrate*.

* * *

*Nebulæ.* Of all forms, strictly circular, elliptical, or irregular and jagged. All degrees of resolvability, merging into total non-resolvability, where only a thickening towards the centre can be distinguished. In some of the resolvable nebulæ, up to ten thousand stars are perceptible, the middle mostly denser, very rarely a central star of greater brilliance. Rosse's giant telescope has, however, resolved many of them. Herschel I enumerates 197 star aggregations and 2,300 nebulæ, to which must be added those catalogued by Herschel II in the southern heavens.

The irregular ones *must be distant island universes*, since masses of vapour can only exist in equilibrium in globular or ellipsoidal form. Most of them, moreover, are only just visible even through the most powerful telescopes. At any rate the circular ones *can* be vapour masses: there are 78 of them among the above 2,500. Herschel assumes 2 million, Mädler—on the assumption of a true diameter equal to 8,000 light years—30 million light years distant from us. Since the distance of each astronomical system of bodies from the next one amounts to at least a hundredfold the diameter of the system, the distance of our island universe from the next one would be *at least* 50 times 8,000 light years = 400,000 light years, in which case with the several thousands of nebulæ we get far beyond Herschel I's 2 million ([Mädler, *loc cit.*, p.] 492).

*Secchi:*[205] The resolvable nebulæ give a continuous and an ordinary stellar spectrum. The nebulæ proper, however, "in part give a continuous spectrum like the nebula in Andromeda, but mostly they give a spectrum consisting of one or only very few bright lines, like the nebulæ in Orion, in Sagittarius, in Lyra, and the majority of those that are known by the name of *planetary* (circular)* nebulæ" (p. 787). (The nebula in Andromeda according to Mädler, p. 495, is unresolvable.—The nebula in Orion is irregular, flocculent and, as it were, puts out arms, p. 495.—Those of Lyra and the Cross are only slightly elliptical, p. 498.)—Huggins found in the spectrum of Herschel's nebulæ No. 4374, three bright lines, "from this it follows immediately that this nebula does not consist of an aggregate of separate stars, but is a *true*** *nebula*, a glowing substance in the gaseous state." The lines belong to nitrogen (I) and hydrogen (I), the third is unknown. Similarly for the nebula in Orion. Even nebulæ that contain gleaming points (Hydra, Sagittarius) have these bright lines, so that star masses in course of aggregation are still not solid or liquid (p. 789). The nebula in Lyra has only a nitrogen line (p. 789).—The densest place of the nebula in Orion is 1°, its whole extension 4° [pp. 790-91].

* * *

Secchi:[206] *Sirius*: "Eleven years later (subsequent to Bessel's calculation, Mädler, p. 450)[207]. . . not only was the satellite of Sirius discovered in the form of a self-luminous star of the sixth magnitude, but it was also shown that its orbit coincides with that calculated by Bessel. Since then the orbit also for Procyon and its companion has been determined by Auwers, although the satellite itself has not yet been seen" (p. 793).

---

* Added by Engels.—*Ed.*

** Italics by Engels.—*Ed.*

Secchi: Fixed Stars: "Since the fixed stars, with the exception of two or three, have no perceptible parallax, they are at least" some 30 light years distant from us (p. 799).—According to Secchi, the stars of the 16th magnitude (still distinguishable in Herschel's big telescope) are 7,560 light years distant, those distinguishable in Rosse's telescope are at least 20,900 light years distant (p. 802).

Secchi (p. 810) himself asks: When the sun and the whole system are extinct, "are there forces in nature which can reconvert the dead system into its original state of glowing nebula and reawaken it to new life? We do not know."[208]

* * *

Secchi and the Pope.

* * *

*Descartes* discovered that the ebb and flow of the tides are caused by the attraction of the moon. He also discovered simultaneously with Snell the basic law of the refraction of light* and this in a form peculiar to himself and different from that of Snell.

* * *

Mayer, *Mechanische Theorie der Wärme,*[210] p. 328. *Kant has already stated* that the ebb and flow of tides exert a retarding pressure on the rotating earth. (Adam's[211] calculation that the duration of the sidereal day is now increasing by 1/100 second in 1,000 years.)

---

* In the margin of the manuscript the following addition is made to this passage: "Contested by Wolf, p. 325."[209]—*Ed.*

## [PHYSICS]

* * *

*Impact and friction.* Mechanics regards the effect of impact as *taking place in a pure form.* But in reality things are different. On every impact part of the mechanical motion is transformed into heat, and friction is nothing more than a form of impact that continually converts mechanical motion into heat (fire by friction known from primeval times).

* * *

*The consumption of kinetic energy* as such in the field of dynamics is always of a twofold nature and has a twofold result: (1) the kinetic work done, production of a corresponding quantity of potential energy, which, however, is always less than the applied kinetic energy; (2) overcoming—besides gravity—frictional and other resistances that convert the remainder of the used-up kinetic energy into *heat.*—Likewise on reconversion: according to the way this takes place, a part of the loss through friction, etc., is dissipated as heat—and that is all very ancient!

* * *

The first, naïve outlook is as a rule more correct than the later, metaphysical one. Thus already *Bacon* (and after him Boyle, Newton, and almost all the Englishmen) said heat is motion (Boyle even said molecular motion). It was only in the eighteenth century that the caloric theory arose in France and became more or less accepted on the Continent.

* * *

*Conservation of energy.* The *quantitative* constancy of motion was already enunciated by Descartes, and indeed almost in the same words as now by? (Clausius, Robert Mayer?). On the other hand, the transformation of the *form* of motion was only discovered in 1842 and this, not the law of quantitative constancy, is what is new.

* * *

*Force and conservation of force.* The passages of J. R. Mayer in his two first papers[212] to be cited against Helmholtz.

* * *

*Force.*[213]—Hegel (*Geschichte der Philosophie*, I, S. 208) says: "It is better to say that a magnet has a *soul*" (as Thales expresses it) "than that it has an attracting *force*; force is a kind of property that, *separable from matter*, is put forward as a predicate—while soul, on the other hand, is *this movement itself, identical with the nature of matter.*"*

* * *

Hegel's conception of force and its manifestation, of cause and effect as identical, is proved in the change of form of matter, where the equivalence is proved mathematically. This had already been recognized in measurement: force is measured by its manifestation, cause by effect.

---

* All italics by Engels.—*Ed.*

* * *

*Force.* If any kind of motion is transferred from one body to another, then one can regard the motion, *in so far as it transfers itself*, is active, as the cause of motion, *in so far as the latter becomes transferred*, is passive, and then this cause, the active motion, appears as *force* and the passive as its *manifestation.* From the law of the indestructibility of motion, it follows automatically that the force is exactly as great as its manifestation, since indeed it is *the same motion* in both cases. Motion that transfers itself, however, is more or less quantitatively determinable, because it appears in two bodies, of which one can serve as a unit of measurement in order to measure the motion in the other. The measurability of motion gives the category *force* its value, otherwise it has none. Hence the more this is the case, the more are the categories of force and its manifestation usable in research. Hence this is so especially in mechanics, where one resolves the forces still further, regarding them as compound, and thereby often arriving at new results, although one should not forget that this is merely a mental operation; by applying the analogy of forces that are really compound, as expressed in the parallelogram of forces, to forces that are really simple, the latter still do not thereby really become compound. Similarly in statics. Then, again, in the transformation of other forms of motion into mechanical motion (heat, electricity, magnetism in the attraction of iron), where the original motion can be measured by the mechanical effect produced. But here, where various forms of motion are considered simultaneously, the limitation of the category or abbreviation, *force*, already stands revealed. No regular physicist any longer terms electricity, magnetism, or heat mere *forces*, any more than *substances* or *imponderabilia*. When we know into how much mechanical motion a definite quantity of heat motion is converted, we still do not know anything of the nature of heat, however much the examination of these transformations may be necessary for investigating this nature of heat. To conceive heat as a form of motion is the latest advance of physics, and by so doing the category of force is sublated in it: in certain connections—those of transition—they[214] can appear as forces and so be measured. Thus heat is measured by the expansion of a body on warming. If heat did not pass here from one body to the other—the measuring rod—i.e., if the heat of the body acting as a measuring rod did not alter, there could be no talk of measurement, of a change of magnitude. One says simply: heat expands a body, whereas to say: heat has the force to expand a body, would be a mere tautology, and to say: heat is the force which expands bodies, would not be correct, since 1. expansion, e.g., in gases, is produced also by other means, and 2. heat is not exhaustively characterized in this way.

Some chemists speak also of chemical force, as the force that makes and maintains compounds. Here, however, there is no real transference, but a combination of the motion of various bodies into a single whole, and so "force" here reaches its limit. It is, however, still measurable by the heat production, but so far without much result. Here it becomes a phrase, as everywhere

where, instead of investigating the uninvestigated forms of motion, one *invents* a so-called force[215] for their explanation (as, for instance, explaining the floating of wood in water by a buoyancy force—the refraction of light by a refractive force, etc.), in which case as many forces are obtained as there are unexplained phenomena, the external phenomenon being indeed merely translated into an internal phrase. (Attraction and repulsion are easier to excuse; here a number of phenomena inexplicable to the physicist are embraced under a common name, which gives an inkling of an inner connection.)

Finally in organic nature the category of force is completely inadequate and yet continually applied. True, it is possible to characterize the action of the muscles, in accordance with its mechanical effect, as muscular force, and also to measure it. One can even conceive of other measurable functions as forces, e. g., the digestive capacity of various stomachs, but one quickly arrives *ad absurdum* (e.g., nervous force), and in any case one can speak here of forces only in a very restricted and figurative sense (the ordinary phrase: to regain one's forces). This misuse, however, has led to speaking of a vital force. If by this is meant that the form of motion in the organic body is different from the mechanical, physical, or chemical form, and contains them all sublated in itself, then it is a very lax manner of expression, and especially so because the force—presupposing transference of motion—appears here as something pumped into the organism from outside, not as inherent in it and inseparable from it, and therefore this vital force has been the last refuge of all supernaturalists.

The defect: (1) Force usually treated as having independent existence. (Hegel, *Naturphilosophie*, S. 79.)

(2) *Latent*, *dormant* force—this to be explained from the relation of motion and rest (inertia, equilibrium), where also arousing of forces to be dealt with.

* * *

*Force* (see above). The transference of motion takes place, of course, only in the presence of *all* the various conditions, which are often multiple and complex, especially in machines (the steam-engine, the shotgun with lock, trigger, percussion cap, and gunpowder). If *one* of them is missing, then the transference does not take place until this condition is supplied. In that case one can imagine this as if the force must first be *aroused* by the introduction of this last condition, as if it lay *latent* in a body, the so-called carrier of force (gunpowder, charcoal), whereas in reality not only this body but all the other conditions must be present in order to evoke precisely this special transference.—

The notion of force comes to us quite automatically in that we possess in our own body means for transferring motion, which within certain limits can be brought into action by our will; especially the muscles of the arms through which we produce mechanical change of place and motion of other bodies, lifting, carrying, throwing, hitting, etc., resulting in definite useful effects. The motion is here apparently *produced*, not transferred, and this gives rise to the notion of force in general *producing motion*. That muscular force is also merely transference has only now been proved physiologically.

* * *

*Force.* The negative side also has to be analyzed: the resistance which is opposed to the transference of motion.

* * *

*Radiation of heat into universal space.* All the hypotheses cited by Lavrov of the renewal of extinct heavenly bodies (p. 109)[216] *involve loss of motion.* The heat once radiated, i.e., the infinitely greater part of the original motion, is and remains lost. Helmholtz says, up to now, 453/454. Hence one finally arrives after all at the exhaustion and cessation of motion. The question is only finally solved when it has been shown how the heat radiated into space becomes *utilizable* again. The theory of the transformation of motion puts this question categorically, and it cannot be got over by postponing the answer or by evasion. That, however, with the posing of the question the conditions for its solution are simultaneously given—*c'est autre chose.* The transformation of motion and its indestructibility were first discovered hardly thirty years ago, and it is only quite recently that the consequences have been further elaborated and worked out. The question as to what becomes of the apparently lost heat has, as it were, only been *nettement posée* since 1867 (Clausius).[217] No wonder that it has not yet been solved; it may still be a long time before we arrive at a solution with our small means. But it will be solved, just as surely as it is certain that there are no miracles in nature and that the original heat of the nebular ball is not communicated to it miraculously from outside the universe. The general assertion that *the total amount* (*die Masse*) *of motion is infinite*, and hence inexhaustible, is of equally little assistance in overcoming the difficulties of each individual case; it too does not suffice for the revival of extinct universes, except in the cases provided for in the above hypotheses, which are always bound up with loss of force and are therefore only temporary cases. The cycle has not been traced and will not be until the possibility of the re-utilization of the radiated heat is discovered.[218]

* * *

Clausius—if correct—proves that the universe has been created, *ergo* that matter is creatable, *ergo* that it is destructible, *ergo* that also force, or motion, is creatable and destructible, *ergo* that the whole theory of the "conservation of force" is nonsense, *ergo* that all his conclusions from it are also nonsense.

* * *

*Clausius's second law*, etc., however it may be formulated, shows energy as lost, qualitatively if not quantitatively. *Entropy cannot be destroyed by natural means but it can certainly be created.* The world clock has to be wound up, then it goes on running until it arrives at a state of equilibrium from which only a miracle can set it going again. The energy expended in winding has disappeared, at least qualitatively, and can only be restored by an *impulse from outside*. Hence, an impulse from outside was necessary at the beginning also, hence, the quantity of motion, or energy, existing in the universe was not always the same, hence, energy must have been created, i.e., it must be creatable, and therefore destructible. *Ad absurdum!*

* * *

Conclusion for Thomson, Clausius, Loschmidt: *The reversion consists in repulsion repelling itself and thereby returning out of the medium into extinct heavenly bodies.* But just therein lies also the proof that repulsion is the really *active* aspect of motion, and attraction the *passive* aspect.

* * *

In the motion of gases—in the process of evaporation—the motion of masses passes directly into molecular motion. Here, therefore, the transition has to be made.

* * *

States of aggregation—nodal points where quantitative change is transformed into qualitative.

* * *

Cohesion—already negative in gases—transformation of attraction into *repulsion*, the latter only real in gas and ether (?).

* * *

At absolute 0° no gas is possible, all motion of the molecules ceases; the slightest pressure, and hence their own attraction, forces them together. *Consequently, a permanent gas is an impossibility.*

* * *

$mv^2$ has been proved also for gas molecules by the kinetic theory of gases. Hence there is the same law for molecular motion as for the motion of masses: the difference between the two is here abolished.

* * *

*The kinetic theory* has to show how molecules that strive upwards can at the same time exert a downwards pressure and—assuming the atmosphere as more or less permanent in relation to universal space—how in spite of gravity they can move to a distance from the centre of the earth, but nevertheless, at a certain distance, although the force of gravity has decreased according to the *square* of the distance, are yet compelled by this force to come to a stop or to return.

* * *

*The kinetic theory of gases*: "In a perfect gas . . . the molecules are already so far distant from one another that their mutual interaction can be neglected." (Clausius, p. 6.)[219] *What fills up the spaces between them?* Ditto ether.[220] Hence here *the postulate of a matter that is not articulated into molecular or atomic cells.*

* * *

The character of mutual opposites belonging to theoretical development; from the *horror vacui* the transition was made at once to absolutely empty universal space, only afterwards the *ether.*

* * *

*Ether.* If the ether offers resistance at all, it must also offer resistance to *light*, and so at a certain distance be impenetrable to light. That however ether *propagates* light, being its *medium*, necessarily involves that it should also offer resistance to light, otherwise light could not set it in vibration.—This the solution of the controversial questions raised by Mädler[221] and mentioned by Лавров [Lavrov].[222]

* * *

*Light and darkness* are certainly the most conspicuous and definite opposites in nature; they have always served as a rhetorical phrase for religion and philosophy from the time of the fourth Gospel to the *lumières** of the eighteenth century. Fick,[223] p. 9: "the law long ago rigidly demonstrated in physics . . . that the form of motion called radiant heat is identical in all essential respects with the form of motion that we call *light*."** Clerk Maxwell,[224] p. 14. "These rays (of radiant heat) have all the physical properties of rays of light and are capable of reflection, etc. . . . Some of the heat-rays are identical with the rays of light, while other kinds of heat-rays make no impression upon our eyes."

Hence there exist *dark* light-rays, and the famous opposition between light and darkness disappears from natural science as an absolute opposition. Incidentally, the deepest darkness and the brightest, most glaring light have the same effect of *dazzling* our eyes, and in this way are *for us* identical.

---

* The Enlightenment.—*Ed.*

** Italics by Engels.—*Ed.*

The fact is, the sun's rays have different effects according to the length of the vibration: those with the greatest wave-length communicate heat, those with medium wave-length, light, and those with the shortest wave-length, chemical action (Secchi,[225] p. 632 *et seq.*), the maxima of the three actions being closely approximated, the *inner* minima of the outer groups of rays, as regards their action, coming within the light-ray group.[226] What is light and what is non-light depends on the structure of the eye. Night animals may be able to see even a part, not of the heat-rays, but of the chemical rays, since their eyes are adapted for shorter wave-lengths than ours. The difficulty disappears if one assumes, instead of three kinds, only a single kind of ray (and scientifically we know only *one* and everything else is a premature conclusion), which has different, but within narrow limits compatible, effects according to the wave-length.

* * *

Hegel constructs the theory of light and colour out of pure thought, and in so doing falls into the *grossest empiricism* of home-bred philistine experience (although with a certain justification, since this point had not been cleared up at that time), e.g., where he adduces against Newton the mixtures of colours used by painters (p. 314, below). [227]

* * *

*Electricity.* In regard to Thomson's cock-and-bull stories, *cf.* Hegel,[228] pp. 346-47, where there is exactly the same thing.—On the other hand, Hegel already conceives frictional electricity quite clearly as *tension*, in contrast to the fluid theory and the electrical matter theory (p. 347).

* * *

When Coulomb says that "*particles* of electricity repel each other inversely as the square of their distance," Thomson calmly takes this as proved (p. 358).[229] Ditto (p. 366) the hypothesis that electricity consists of two fluids, positive and negative, whose particles repel each other. It is said (p. 360) that electricity in a charged body is retained merely by the pressure of the atmosphere. Faraday put the seat of electricity in the opposed poles of the atoms (or molecules, there is still confusion about it), and thus for the first time expressed the idea that electricity is not a fluid but a form of motion, a "force" (p. 378). What old Thomson cannot get into his head at all is that it is precisely the spark that is of a *material* nature!

Already in 1822, Faraday had discovered that the momentary induced current—the first as well as the second, reversed current—"participates more of the current produced by the discharge of the Leyden jar than that produced by the voltaic battery"—herein lay the whole secret (p. 385).

The *spark* has been the subject of all sorts of cock-and-bull stories, which are now known to be special cases or illusions: the spark from a positive body is said to be a "pencil of rays, brush, or cone," the point of which is the point of discharge; the negative spark, on the other hand, is said to be a "*star*" (p. 396). A short spark is said to be always white, a long one usually reddish or purplish. (Wonderful nonsense of Faraday on the spark, p. 400.)[230] The spark, drawn from the prime conductor [of an electric machine] by a metal sphere is said to be white, by the hand—purple, by aqueous moisture—red (p. 405). The spark, i.e., light, is said to be "not inherent in electricity but merely the result of the compression of the air. That air is violently and suddenly *compressed* when an electric spark passes through it" is proved by the experiment of Kinnersley in Philadelphia, according to which the spark produces "*a sudden rarefaction of the air in the tube*,"* and drives the water into the tube (p. 407). In Germany, 30 years ago, Winterl and others believed that the spark, or electric light, was "of the same nature with *fire*"** and arises by the union of two electricities. Against which Thomson seriously proves that the place where the two electricities unite is precisely that where the light is least, and that it is two-thirds from the positive and one-third from the negative end! (Pp. 409-10.) That fire is here still something quite *mythical* is obvious.

With the same seriousness [Thomson quotes] the experiments of Dessaignes, according to which, with a rising barometer and falling temperature, glass, amber, silk, etc., become negatively electrified on being plunged into mercury, but positively electrified if the barometer is falling and the temperature rising, and in summer always become positive in impure, and always negative in pure, mercury; that in summer gold and various other metals become positive on warming and negative on cooling, the reverse being the case in winter; that they are "highly electric" with a high barometer and northerly wind, positive if the temperature is rising, negative if falling, etc. (p. 416).

---

* Italics by Engels (the words "compressed" and "rarefaction" underlined twice to stress the incongruity of Thomson's explanations).—*Ed.*

** Italics by Engels.—*Ed.*

How matters stood in regard to *heat*: "In order to produce thermo-electric effects, it is not necessary to apply heat. Any thing *which alters the temperature** in one part of the chain . . . occasions a deviation in the declination of the magnet." For instance, the cooling of a metal by ice or evaporation of ether! (p. 419).

The electro-chemical theory (p. 438) accepted as "at least exceedingly ingenious and plausible."

Fabroni and Wollaston had already long ago, and Faraday recently, asserted that voltaic electricity is the simple consequence of chemical processes, and Faraday had even given the correct explanation of the shifting of atoms taking place in the liquid, and established that the quantity of electricity is to be measured by the quantity of the electrolytic product.

With the help of Faraday, Thomson arrives at the law: "that every atom must be naturally surrounded by the same quantity of electricity, *so that in this respect heat and electricity resemble each other*!"**[231]

* * *

*Static and dynamic electricity.* Static or frictional electricity is the putting into a state of tension of the electricity *already existing* in nature in the *form* of electricity but in an equilibrated, neutral state. Hence the removal of this tension—if and in so far as the electricity during propagation can be conducted—also occurs at one stroke, by a spark, which re-establishes the neutral state.

---

* Italics by Engels.—*Ed.*

** Italics and exclamation mark by Engels.—*Ed.*

Dynamic or voltaic electricity, on the other hand, is electricity produced by the conversion of chemical motion into electricity. Under certain definite conditions, it is produced by the solution of zinc, copper, etc. Here the tension is not acute, but chronic. At every moment new + and —electricity is produced from some other form of motion, and not already existing ± electricity separated into + and —. The process is a continuous one, and therefore too its result, electricity, does not take the form of instantaneous tension and discharge, but of a continuous current which can be reconverted at the poles into the chemical motion from which it arose, a process that is termed electrolysis. In this process, as well as in the production of electricity by chemical combination (in which electricity is liberated instead of heat, and in fact as much electricity as under other circumstances heat is set free, Guthrie, p. 210),[232] the current can be traced in the liquid (exchange of atoms in adjacent molecules—this is the current).

This electricity, being of the nature of a current, for that very reason cannot be directly converted into static electricity. By means of induction, however, neutral electricity already existing as such can be de-neutralized. In the nature of things the induced electricity has to follow that which induces it, and therefore must likewise be of a flowing character. On the other hand, this obviously gives the possibility of condensing the current and of converting it into static electricity, or rather into a higher form that combines the property of a current with that of tension. This is solved by Ruhmkorff's machine. It provides an inductional electricity, which achieves this result.

* * *

A pretty example of the dialectics of nature is the way in which according to present-day theory the *repulsion of like* magnetic poles is explained by the *attraction of like* electric currents. (Guthrie, p. 264.)

* * *

*Electro-chemistry.* In describing the effect of the electric spark in chemical decomposition and synthesis, Wiedemann declares that this is more the concern of chemistry.[233] In the same case the chemists declare that it is rather a matter which concerns physics. Thus at the point of contact of molecular and atomic science, both declare themselves incompetent, while it is precisely *at this point that the greatest results are to be expected.*

* * *

Friction and impact produce an *internal* motion of the bodies concerned, molecular motion, differentiated as warmth, electricity, etc., according to circumstances. *This motion, however, is only temporary*: *cessante causa cessat effectus.* At a definite stage they all become transformed into a *permanent molecular change*, a *chemical change.*

## [CHEMISTRY]

* * *

The notion of an actual *chemically uniform matter* — ancient as it is—fully corresponds to the childish view, widely held even up to Lavoisier, that the chemical affinity of two bodies depends on each one containing a common third body. (Kopp, *Entwickelung*, p. 105.)[234]

* * *

How old, convenient methods, adapted to previously customary practice, become transferred to other branches and there are a hindrance: in chemistry, the calculation of the composition of compounds in percentages, which was the most suitable method of all for making it impossible to discover the laws of constant proportion and multiple proportion in combination, and indeed did make them undiscoverable for long enough.

* * *

The new epoch begins in chemistry with atomistics (hence Dalton, not Lavoisier, is the father of modern chemistry), and correspondingly in physics with the molecular theory (in a different form, but essentially representing only the other side of this process, with the discovery of the transformation of the forms of motion). The new atomistics is distinguished from all

GANDHI SMARAKA GRANTHALAY
BANGALORE-1,

previous to it by the fact that it does not maintain (idiots excepted) that matter is *merely* discrete, but that the discrete parts at various stages (ether atoms, chemical atoms, masses, heavenly bodies) are various *nodal points* which determine the various *qualitative* modes of existence of matter in general—right down to weightlessness and repulsion.

* * *

*Transformation of quantity into quality*: the simplest example *oxygen* and *ozone*, where 2:3 produces quite different properties, even in regard to smell. Chemistry likewise explains the other allotropic bodies merely by a difference in the number of atoms in the molecule.

* * *

The significance of *names*. In organic chemistry the significance of a body, hence also its name, is no longer determined merely by its composition, but rather by its position in the *series* to which it belongs. If we find, therefore, that a body belongs to such a series, its old name becomes an obstacle to understanding it and must be replaced by a *series name* (paraffins, etc.).

## [BIOLOGY]

* * *

*Reaction.* Mechanical, physical (alias heat, etc.) reaction is exhausted with each occurrence of reaction. Chemical reaction alters the composition of the reacting body and is only renewed if a further quantity of the latter is added. Only the *organic* body reacts *independently*—of course within its sphere of power (sleep), and assuming the supply of nourishment—but this supply of nourishment is effective only after it has been assimilated, not immediately as at lower stages, so that here the organic body has an *independent* power of reaction, the new reaction must be *mediated* by it.

* * *

*Life and death.* Already no physiology is held to be scientific if it does not consider death as an essential element of life (note, Hegel, *Enzyklopädie*, I, pp. 152-53), the *negation* of life as being essentially contained in life itself, so that life is always thought of in relation to its necessary result, death, which is always contained in it in germ. The dialectical conception of life is nothing more than this. But for anyone who has once understood this, all talk of the immortality of the soul is done away with. Death is either the dissolution of the organic body, leaving nothing behind but the chemical constituents that formed its substance, or it leaves behind a vital principle, more or less the soul, that then survives *all* living organisms, and not only human beings. Here, therefore, by means of dialectics, simply becoming clear about the nature of life and death suffices to abolish an ancient superstition. Living means dying.

* * *

*Generatio aequivoca.** All investigations hitherto amount to the following: in fluids containing organic matter in decomposition and accessible to the air, lower organisms arise, Protista, Fungi, Infusoria. Where do they come from? Have they arisen by *generatio aequivoca*, or from germs brought in from the atmosphere? Consequently the investigation is limited to a quite narrow field, to the question of plasmogony.[235]

The assumption that new living organisms can arise by the decomposition of others belongs essentially to the epoch of immutable species. At that time men found themselves compelled to assume the origin of all organisms, even the most complicated, by original generation from non-living materials, and if they did not want to resort to the aid of an act of creation, they easily arrived at the view that this process is more readily explicable given a formative material already derived from the organic world; no one any longer believed in the production of a mammal directly from inorganic matter by chemical means.

This assumption, however, directly conflicts with the present state of science. By the analysis of the process of decomposition in dead organic bodies chemistry proves that at each successive step this process necessarily produces products that are more and more dead, that are more and more close to the inorganic world, products that are less and less capable of being used by the organic world, and that this process can be given another direction, such utilization being able to occur only when these products of decomposition are absorbed early enough in an appropriate, already existing, organism. It is precisely the most essential vehicle of cell-formation, protein, that decomposes first of all, and so far it has never been built up again.

---

* Spontaneous generation.—*Ed.*

Still more. The organisms whose original generation from organic fluids is the question at issue in these investigations, while being of a comparatively low order, are nevertheless definitely differentiated, bacteria, yeasts, etc., with a life-cycle composed of various phases and in part, as in the case of the Infusoria, equipped with fairly well developed organs. They are all at least unicellular. But ever since we have been acquainted with the structureless Monera, it has become foolish to desire to explain the origin of even a single cell directly from dead matter instead of from structureless living protein, to believe it is possible by means of a little stinking water to force nature to accomplish in twenty-four hours what it has cost her thousands of years to bring about.

Pasteur's experiments[236] in this direction are useless; for those who believe in this possibility he will never be able to prove the impossibility by these experiments alone, but they are important because they furnish much enlightenment on these organisms, their life, their germs, etc.

* * *

## MORIZ WAGNER, *NATURWISSENSCHAFTLICHE STREITFRAGEN, I*

(*Augsburger Allgemeine Zeitung, Beilage,*
October 6, 7, 8, 1874.)

Liebig's statement to Wagner towards the end of his life (1868): "We may only assume that life is just as old and just as eternal as matter itself, and the whole controversial point about the origin of life seems to me to be disposed of by this simple assumption. In point of fact, why should not organic life be thought of as present from the very beginning just as much as carbon and *its compounds* (!),* or as the whole of uncreatable and indestructible matter in general, and the forces that are eternally bound up with the motion of matter in space?"

Liebig said further (Wagner believes November, 1868) that he, too, regards the hypothesis that organic life has been "imported" on to our planet from universal space as "acceptable."

Helmholtz (Preface to Thomson's *Handbuch der theoretischen Physik*, German edition, part II)[237]: "It appears to me to be a fully correct procedure, *if all our efforts fail to cause the production of organisms from non-living matter*, to raise the question whether life has ever arisen, whether it is not just as old as matter, and whether its germs have not been transported from one heavenly body to another and have developed wherever they have found favourable soil."

---

* Italics and exclamation mark by Engels. The same applies to all italics and bracketed question and exclamation marks in the extracts from Wagner's article.—*Ed.*

Wagner: "The fact that matter is indestructible and imperishable, that it . . . can by no force be reduced to nothing, *suffices for the chemist to regard it also as 'uncreatable'* . . . But, according to the now prevailing view (?), life is regarded merely as a 'property' inherent in certain simple elements, of which the lowest organisms consist, and which, as a matter of course, must be as old, i.e., as originally existing, as these basic stuffs *and their compounds* (!!) themselves." In this sense one could also speak of vital force, as Liebig does (*Chemische Briefe*,[238] 4th edition) "namely as 'a formative principle in and together with the physical forces,' hence not acting outside of matter. This vital force as a 'property of matter,' however, manifests itself . . . only under appropriate conditions which have existed since eternity at innumerable points in infinite space, but which in the course of the different periods of time must often enough have changed their place in space." Hence no life is possible on the ancient fluid earth or the present-day sun, but the glowing bodies have enormously expanded atmospheres, consisting, according to recent views, of the same materials that fill all space in extremely rarefied form and are attracted by bodies. The rotating nebular mass from which the solar system developed, reaching beyond the orbit of Neptune, contained "also all water (!) dissolved in vaporous form in an atmosphere richly impregnated with carbonic acid (!) up to immeasurable heights, and with that also the basic materials for the existence (?) of the lowest organic germs"; in it there prevailed "most varied degrees of temperature in most varied regions, and hence the assumption is *fully justified* that at all times the conditions necessary for organic life were somewhere to be found. According to this the atmospheres of the heavenly bodies like those of the rotating cosmic nebular masses, would have to be regarded as the permanent repositories of the living form, as the eternal breeding grounds of organic germs."

In the Andes, below the equator, the smallest living Protista with their invisible germs are still present in masses in the atmosphere up to 16,000 feet. Perty says that they are "almost omnipresent." They are only absent where the glowing heat kills them. For them (*Vibrionidæ*, etc.) existence is conceivable "also in the vapour belt of *all* heavenly bodies, wherever the appropriate conditions are to be found."

"According to Cohn, bacteria are . . .so extremely minute that 633 million can find room in a cubic millimetre, and 636,000 million weigh only a gram. The micrococci are even smaller," and perhaps they are not the smallest. But being very varied in shape, "the *Vibrionidæ* . . . sometimes globular, sometimes ovoid, sometimes rod-shaped or spiral" (already possess, therefore, a form that is of considerable importance). "Hitherto no valid objection has been raised against the well-founded hypothesis that all the multifarious, more highly organized living beings of both natural kingdoms *could* have developed and *must* have developed in the course of very long periods of time from such, *or similar*, extremely simple (!!), neutral, primordial beings, hovering between plants and animals . . . on the basis of individual variability and the capacity for hereditary transmission of newly acquired characters to the offspring on alteration of the physical conditions of the heavenly bodies and on spatial separation of the individual varieties produced."

Worth noting is the proof how much of a dilettante Liebig was in biology, although the latter is a science bordering on chemistry. He read Darwin for the first time in 1861, and only much later the important biological and palæontological-geological works subsequent to Darwin. Lamarck he had "never read." "Similarly the important palæontological special researches which appeared even before 1859, of L. v. Buch, d'Orbigny, Münster, Klipstein, Hauer, and Quenstadt on the fossil Cephalodos, that throw such remarkable light on the genetic connection of the various creations, remained completely unknown to him. All the above-mentioned scientists were . . . driven by the force of facts, almost against their will to the Lamarckian hypothesis of descent," and this indeed *before* Darwin's book. "The theory of descent, therefore, had already quietly struck roots in the views of those scientists who had concerned themselves more closely with the comparative study of fossil organisms. . . . As early as 1832, in *Über die Ammoniten und ihre Sonderung in Familien*, and in 1848 in a paper read before the Berlin Academy, L. v. Buch very definitely introduced in the science of petrifacts (!) 'the Lamarckian idea of the typical relationship of organic forms as a sign of their common descent.'" In 1848 he based himself on his investigation of the ammonites for the declaration: "that the disappearance of old forms and the appearance of new ones is not a consequence of the total destruction of organic creations, but *that the formation of new species out of older forms has most probably only resulted from altered conditions of life.*"[239]

---

*Comments.* The above hypothesis of "eternal life" and of importation presupposes:

1. The eternal existence of protein.

2. The eternal existence of the original forms from which everything organic can develop. Both are inadmissible.

*Ad.* 1.—Liebig's assertion that carbon compounds are just as eternal as carbon itself, is doubtful, if not false.

(*a*) Is carbon simple? If not, it is as such not eternal.

(*b*) The compounds of carbon are eternal in the sense that under the same conditions of mixture, temperature, pressure, electric potential, etc., they are always reproduced. But that, for instance, only the simplest carbon compounds, $CO_2$ or $CH_4$, should be eternal in the sense that they exist at all times and more or less in all places, and not rather that they are continually produced anew and pass out of existence again—in fact, out of the elements and into the elements—has hitherto not been asserted. If living protein is eternal in the same sense as other carbon compounds, then it must not only continually be dissolved into its elements, as is well known to happen, but it must also continually be produced anew from the elements and without the collaboration of previously existing protein—and that is the exact opposite of the result at which Liebig arrives.

(*c*) Protein is the most unstable carbon compound known to us. It decomposes as soon as it loses the capacity of carrying out the functions peculiar to it, which we call life, and it is inherent in its nature that this incapacity should sooner or later make its appearance. And it is just this compound which is supposed to be eternal and able to endure all the changes of temperature, pressure, lack of nourishment, and air, etc., in space, although even its upper temperature limit is so low—less than 100° *C*! The conditions for the existence of protein are infinitely more complicated than those of any other known carbon compound, because not only physical and chemical functions, but in addition nutritive and respiratory functions, enter, requiring a medium which is narrowly delimited, physically and chemically—and is it this medium that one must suppose has maintained itself from eternity under all possible changes? Liebig "prefers, *ceteris paribus*, the simpler of two hypotheses," but a thing may appear very simple and yet be very complicated.

The assumption of innumerable continuous series of living protein bodies, tracing their descent from one another through all eternity, and which under all circumstances always leave sufficient over for the stock to remain well assorted, is the most complicated assumption possible.

Moreover, the atmospheres of the heavenly bodies, and especially nebular atmospheres, were originally glowing hot and therefore no place for protein bodies; hence in the last resort space must serve as the great reservoir—a reservoir in which there is neither air nor nourishment, and with a temperature at which certainly no protein can function or maintain itself!

*Ad.* 2.—The vibrios, micrococci, etc., which are referred to here, are beings already considerably differentiated—protein granules that have excreted an outer membrane, but *no nucleus.* The series of protein bodies capable of development, however, forms *a nucleus first of all* and becomes a cell—the cell membrane is then a further advance (*Amœba Sphærococcus*). Hence the organisms under consideration here belong to a series which, by all previous analogy, proceeds barrenly into a blind alley, and they cannot be numbered among the ancestors of the higher organisms.

What Helmholtz says of the sterility of attempts to produce life artificially is pure childishness. Life is the mode of existence of protein bodies, the essential element of which consists in *continual metabolic interchange with the natural environment outside them*, and which ceases with the cessation of this metabolism, bringing about the decomposition of the protein.* If success is ever attained in preparing protein bodies chemically, they will undoubtedly exhibit the phenomena of life and carry out metabolism, however weak and short-lived they may be. But it is certain that such bodies could *at most* have the form of the very crudest Monera, and probably much lower forms, but by no means the form of organisms that have become differentiated by an evolution lasting thousands of years, and in which the cell membrane has become separated from the contents and a definite inherited form assumed. So long, however, as we know no more of the chemical composition of protein than we do at present, and therefore for probably another hundred years to come cannot think of its artificial preparation, it is ridiculous to complain that all our efforts, etc., have failed!

---

* Such metabolism can also occur in the case of inorganic bodies and in the long run it occurs everywhere, since chemical reactions take place, even if extremely slowly, everywhere. The difference, however, is that inorganic bodies are destroyed by this metabolism, while in organic bodies it is the necessary condition for their existence. [*Note by Engels.*]

Against the above assertion that metabolism is the characteristic activity of protein bodies may be put the objection of the growth of Traube's "artificial cells." But here there is merely unaltered absorption of a liquid by endosmosis, while metabolism consists in the absorption of substances, the chemical composition of which is altered, which are assimilated by the organism, and the residua of which are excreted together with the decomposition products of the organism itself resulting from the life process.* The significance of Traube's "cells" lies in the fact that they show endosmosis and growth as two things which can be produced also in inorganic nature and without any carbon.

The newly arisen protein granule must have had the capacity of nourishing itself from oxygen, carbon dioxide, ammonia, and some of the salts dissolved in the surrounding water. Organic nutritive substances were not present, for the granules surely could not devour one another. This proves how high above them are the present-day Monera, even without nuclei, living on diatoms, etc., and therefore presupposing a whole series of differentiated organisms.

---

* *N.B.*—Just as we have to speak of invertebrate vertebrates, so also here the unorganized, formless, undifferentiated granule of protein is termed an organism—*dialectically* this is permissible because just as the vertebral column is implicit in the notochord so in the protein granule on its first origin the whole infinite series of higher organisms lies included "*in itself*" as if in embryo. [*Note by Engels.*]

* * *

*Dialectics of Nature*—references.

*Nature* No. 294 *et seq.* Allman on Infusoria.[240] Unicellular character, important.

Croll on Ice Periods and Geological Time.[241]

*Nature* No. 326, Tyndall on *Generatio.*[242] Specific decay and fermentation experiments.

* * *

*Protista.* 1. Non-cellular, begin with a simple granule of protein which extends and withdraws pseudopodia in one form or another, including the Monera. The Monera of the present day are certainly very different from the original forms, since for the most part they live on organic matter, swallowing diatoms and Infusoria (i.e., bodies higher than themselves and which only arose after them), and, as Hæckel's plate I[243] [shows], have a developmental history and pass through the form of non-cellular ciliate swarm-spores.

The tendency towards form which characterizes all protein bodies is already evident here. This tendency is more prominent in the non-cellular *Foraminifera*, which excrete highly artistic shells (anticipating colonies? corals, etc.) and anticipate the higher molluscs in form just as the tubular Algæ (*Siphoneæ*) anticipate the trunk, stem, root, and leaf form of higher plants, although they are merely structureless protein. Hence *Protamœba* is to be separated from *Amœba.**

2. On the one hand there arises the distinction of skin (ectosarc) and medullary layer (endosarc) in the sun animalcule *Actinophrys sol* (Nicholson,[244] p. 49). The epidermal layer puts out pseudopodia (in *Protomyxa aurantiaca*, this stage is already a transitional one, see Hæckel, plate I). Along this line of evolution protein does not appear to have got very far.

3. On the other hand, the *nucleus* and *nucleolus* become differentiated in the protein—naked *Amœbæ*. From now on the development of form proceeds apace. Similarly, the development of the young cell in the organism, *cf. Wundt*[245] on this (at the beginning). In *Amœba Sphærococcus*, as [in] *Protomyxa*, the formation of the cell membrane is only a transitional phase, but even here there is already the beginning of the circulation in the contractile vacuole.[246] Sometimes we find either a shell of sand grains stuck together (*Difflugia*, Nicholson,[247] p. 47) as in worms and insect larvæ, sometimes a genuinely excreted shell. Finally,

4. *The cell with a permanent cell membrane.* According to Hæckel (p. 382), out of this has arisen, depending on the hardness of the cell membrane, either plant, or in the case of a soft membrane, animal (? it certainly cannot be conceived so generally). With the cell membrane, definite and at the same time plastic form makes its appearance. Here again a distinction between simple

---

* In the margin of the manuscript, opposite this paragraph, Engels subsequently added: "Individualization small, they divide and also fuse."—*Ed.*

cell membrane and excreted shell. But (in contrast to No. 3) the *putting out of pseudopodia* stops with this cell membrane and this shell. Repetition of earlier forms (ciliate swarm-spores) and diversity of form. The transition is provided by the *Labyrinthuleæ* (Hæckel, p. 385), which deposit their pseudopodia outside and creep about in this network with alteration of the normal spindle shape* kept within definite limits.

The *Gregarinæ* anticipate the mode of life of higher *parasites*—some are already no longer single cells but *chains* of cells (Hæckel, p. 451), but only containing 2-3 cells—a weak beginning. The highest development of unicellular organisms is in the Infusoria, in so far as these are *really* unicellular. Here a considerable differentiation (see Nicholson). Once again colonies and zoophytes[248] (*Epistylis*). Among unicellular plants likewise a high development of form (*Desmidiaceæ*, Hæckel, p. 410).

5. The next advance is the union of several cells into *one* body, no longer colony. First of all, the *Katallaktæ* of Hæckel, *Magosphæra Planula* (Hæckel, p. 384), where the union of the cells is only a phase in development. But here also there are already no pseudopodia (whether there are any as a transitional phase Hæckel does not state exactly). On the other hand, the *Radiolaria*, also undifferentiated masses of cells, have retained their pseudopodia and have developed to the highest extent the geometric regularity of the shell, which plays a part

---

* In the margin of the manuscript opposite this passage, Engels subsequently added: "Rudiment of higher differentiation." —*Ed.*

even among the genuinely non-cellular rhizopods. The protein surrounds itself, so to speak, with its crystalline form.

6. *Magosphæra Planula* forms the transition to the true *Planula* and *Gastrula*, etc. Further details in Hæckel (p. 452 *et seq.*).[249]

* * *

*Bathybius.*[250] The stones in its flesh are proof that the original form of protein, still lacking any differentiation of form, already bears within it the germ of and capacity for skeletal formation.

* * *

*The individual.* This concept also has been dissolved into something purely relative. Cormus,[251] colony, tapeworm—on the other hand, cell and metamere[252] as individuals in a certain sense (anthropogeny[253] and morphology[254]).

* * *

The whole of organic nature is one continuous proof of the identity or inseparability of form and content. Morphological and physiological phenomena, form and function, mutually determine one another. The differentiation of form (the cell) determines differentiation of substance into muscle, skin, bone, epithelium, etc., and the differentiation of substance in turn determines difference of form.

* * *

Repetition of morphological forms at all stages of evolution: cell forms (the two essential ones already in *Gastrula*[255])—metamere formation at a certain stage:

annelids, arthropods, vertebrates. In the tadpoles of amphibians the primitive form of ascidian larvæ is repeated.—Various forms of marsupials, which recur among placentals (even counting only existing marsupials).

* * *

For the entire evolution of organisms the law of acceleration according to the square of the distance in time from the point of departure is to be accepted. *Cf.* Hæckel, *Schöpfungsgeschichte* and *Anthropogenie*, the organic forms corresponding to the various geological periods. The higher, the more rapid the process.

* * *

The Darwinian theory to be demonstrated as the practical proof of Hegel's account of the inner connection between necessity and chance.[256]

* * *

*The struggle for existence.* Above all this must be strictly limited to the struggles resulting from plant and animal *over-population,* which do in fact occur at certain stages of plant and lower animal life. But one must keep sharply distinct from it the conditions in which species alter, old ones die out and newly evolved ones take their place, *without* this over-population: e.g., on the migration of animals and plants into new regions where new conditions of climate, soil, etc., bring about the alteration. If *there* the individuals which become adapted survive and develop into a new species by continually increasing adaptation, while the other more stable individuals die away and finally die out, and with them the imperfect intermediate stages, then this can and does proceed *without any Malthusianism,* and if the latter should occur here at all it makes no change to the process, at most it can accelerate it.

Similarly with the gradual alteration of the geographical, climatic, etc., conditions in a given region (drying up of Central Asia for instance). Whether the members of the animal or plant population there exert pressure on one another is a matter of indifference; the process of evolution of the organisms that is determined by it proceeds all the same.—It is the same for sexual selection, in which case, too, Malthusianism is quite unconcerned.

Hence also Hæckel's "adaptation and heredity" can bring about the whole process of evolution, without need for selection and Malthusianism.

Darwin's mistake lies precisely in lumping together in "natural selection" *or* the "survival of the fittest" two absolutely separate things:

1. Selection by the pressure of over-population, where perhaps the strongest survive in the first place, but can also be the weakest in many respects.

2. Selection by greater capacity of adaptation to altered circumstances, where the survivors are better suited to these *circumstances,* but where this adaptation as a whole can mean regress just as well as progress (for instance adaptation to parasitic life is *always* regress).

The main thing: that each advance in organic evolution is at the same time a regression, fixing *one-sided* evolution and excluding the possibility of evolution in many other directions.

This, however, *a basic law.*

* * *

*The struggle for life.*[257] Until Darwin, what was stressed by his present adherents was precisely the harmonious co-operative working of organic nature, how the plant kingdom supplies animals with nourishment and oxygen, and animals supply plants with manure, ammonia, and carbonic acid. Hardly was Darwin recognized before these same people saw everywhere nothing but *struggle*. Both views are justified within narrow limits, but both are equally one-sided and prejudiced. The interaction of bodies in non-living nature includes both harmony and collisions, that of living bodies conscious and unconscious co-operation as well as conscious and unconscious struggle. Hence, even in regard to nature, it is not permissible one-sidedly to inscribe only "struggle" on one's banners. But it is absolutely childish to desire to sum up the whole manifold wealth of historical evolution and complexity in the meagre and one-sided phrase "struggle for existence." That says less than nothing.

The whole Darwinian theory of the struggle for existence is simply the transference from society to organic nature of Hobbes' theory of *bellum omnium contra omnes*, and of the bourgeois economic theory of competition, as well as the Malthusian theory of population. When once this feat has been accomplished (the unconditional justification for which, especially as regards the Malthusian theory, is still very questionable), it is very easy to transfer these theories back again from natural history to the history of society, and altogether too naïve to maintain that thereby these assertions have been proved as eternal natural laws of society.

Let us accept for a moment the phrase "struggle for existence," for argument's sake. The most that the animal can achieve is to *collect*; man *produces*, he prepares the means of life, in the widest sense of the words, which without him nature would not have produced. This makes impossible any unqualified transference of the laws of life in animal societies to human society. Production soon brings it about that the so-called struggle for existence no longer turns on pure means of existence, but on means of enjoyment and development. Here—where the means of development are socially produced—the categories taken from the animal kingdom are already totally inapplicable. Finally, under the capitalist mode of production, production reaches such a high level that society can no longer consume the means of life, enjoyment and development that have been produced, because for the great mass of producers access to these means is artificially and forcibly barred; and therefore every ten years a crisis restores the equilibrium by destroying not only the means of life, enjoyment and development that have been produced, but also a great part of the productive forces themselves. Hence the so-called struggle for existence assumes the form: to *protect* the products and productive forces produced by bourgeois capitalist society against the destructive, ravaging effect of this capitalist social order, by taking control of social production and distribution out of the hands of the ruling capitalist class, which has become incapable of this function, and transferring it to the producing masses—and that is the socialist revolution.

The conception of history as a series of class struggles is already much richer in content and deeper than merely reducing it to weakly distinguished phases of the struggle for existence.

* * *

*Vertebrates.* Their essential character: *the grouping of the whole body about the nervous system.* Thereby the development of self-consciousness, etc., becomes possible. In all other animals the nervous system is a secondary affair, here it is the basis of the whole organization; the nervous system, when developed to a certain extent —by posterior elongation of the head ganglion of the worms—takes possession of the whole body and organizes it according to its needs.

* * *

When Hegel makes the transition from life to cognition by means of propagation (reproduction), there is to be found in this the germ of the theory of evolution, that, organic life once given, it must evolve by the development of the generations to a genus of thinking beings.

* * *

What Hegel calls reciprocal action is the *organic body*, which, therefore, also forms the transition to consciousness, i.e., from necessity to freedom, to the idea. See *Logic*, II, conclusion.

* * *

*Rudiments in nature.* Insect states (the ordinary ones do not go beyond purely natural conditions), here even a social rudiment. Ditto productive animals with tools (bees, etc., beavers), but still only subsidiary things and without total effect.—Even earlier: colonies of corals and Hydrozoa, where the individual is at most an intermediate stage and the fleshy community mostly a stage of the full development. See Nicholson.[258]—Similarly, the Infusoria, the highest, and in part very much differentiated, form which a *single* cell can achieve.

* * *

*Work.*—The mechanical theory of heat has transferred this category from economics into physics (for *physiologically* it is still a long way from having been scientifically determined), but in so doing it becomes defined in quite a different way, as seen even from the fact that only a very slight, subordinate part of economic work (lifting of loads, etc.) can be expressed in kilogram-metres. Nevertheless, there is an inclination to re-transfer the thermodynamical definition of work to the sciences from which the category was derived, with a different determination. For instance, without further ado, to identify it crudely with physiological work, as in Fick and Wislicenus' Faulhorn experiment, in which the lifting of a human body, of say 60 kgs., to a height of [say] 2,000 metres, i.e., 120,000 kilogram-metres, is supposed to express the *physiological* work done. In the physiological work done, however, it makes an enormous difference *how* this lifting is effected: whether by positive lifting of the load, by mounting vertical ladders, or whether along a road or stair with 45° slope (=militarily impracticable terrain), or along a road with a slope of 1/18, hence a length of about 36 kms. (but this is questionable, if the same time is allowed in all cases). At any rate, however, in all practicable cases a forward motion also is combined with the lifting, and indeed where the road is quite level this is fairly considerable and as physiological work it cannot be put equal to zero. In some places there even appears to be not a little desire to re-import the thermodynamical category of work back into economics (as with the Darwinists and the struggle for existence), the result of which would be nothing but nonsense. Let someone try to convert any skilled labour into kilogram-metres and then to determine wages on this basis! Physiologically considered, the human body contains organs which in their totality, *from one aspect*, can be regarded as a thermodynamical machine, where heat is supplied and converted into motion. But even if one presupposes constant conditions as regards the other bodily organs, it is questionable whether physiological work done, even lifting, can be at once fully expressed in kilogram-metres, since within the body *internal* work is performed at the same time which does not appear in the result. For the body is not a steam-engine, which only undergoes friction and wear and tear. Physiological work is only possible with continued chemical changes in the body itself, depending also on the process of respiration and the work of the heart. Along with every muscular contraction or relaxation, chemical changes occur in the nerves and muscles, and these changes cannot be treated as parallel to those of coal in a steam-engine. One can, of course, compare two instances of physiological work that have taken place under otherwise identical conditions, but one cannot measure the physical work of a man according to the work of a steam-engine, etc.; their external results, yes, but not the processes themselves without considerable reservations.

(All this has to be thoroughly revised.)

# NOTES
# *and*
# INDEXES

# NOTES

## [*Plan outlines*]

1 This plan was compiled *after* June 1878—since it mentions the old preface to *Anti-Dühring* written in May-June, 1878—and *before* 1880, since there is no mention in it of such chapters of *Dialectics of Nature* as "Basic Forms of Motion," "Heat," and "Electricity," which were written in 1880-82. A comparison of the reference to the German bourgeois Darwinists Hæckel and Schmidt contained in point 11 of this plan with Engels's letter to Lavrov dated August 10, 1878, gives grounds for assuming that the present outline was written in August 1878. p. 27

2 This refers to the old preface to *Anti-Dühring* (see this volume, pp. 55-67). p. 27

3 Plastidules was the name Hæckel gave to the smallest particles of living protoplasm, each of which, according to his theory, is a protein molecule of highly complex structure and possesses a kind of elementary "soul." p. 28

4 Engels has in mind Virchow's speech at the Munich Congress of German Natural Scientists and Physicians in September 1877. In this speech Virchow proposed that restrictions be put on the teaching of science. His speech was published as a separate pamphlet entitled *Die Freiheit der Wissenschaft im modernen Staat* (*Freedom of Science in the Modern State*). Hæckel opposed Virchow and in 1878 published his pamphlet *Freie Wissenschaft und Freie Lehre* (*Free Science and Free Teaching*). p. 28

5 This refers to the zoologist Oskar Schmidt, who opposed socialism. In July-August 1878 Engels planned to make a criticism of Schmidt's lecture "On the Relation of Darwinism to Social-Democracy." Hæckel also opposed socialism, trying to remove from Darwinism the reproach of being con-

nected with the socialist movement. Engels has in mind here primarily Hæckel's pamphlet *Free Science and Free Teaching* (1878) which he mentions in a letter to Lavrov dated August 10, 1878 and in which Oskar Schmidt's statements are also quoted. p. 28

6 Helmholtz, *Populäre wissenschaftliche Vorträge* (*Popular Scientific, Lectures*), Zweites Heft, Braunschweig 1871. Helmholtz speaks about the physical concept of "work" chiefly on pp. 142-79. Engels examines the category of "work" in his "The Measure of Motion.—Work" (see this volume, pp. 116-36). p. 28

7 This outline was apparently written after the plan of *Dialectics of Nature* set out above, since it makes mention of questions which Engels examines in the chapter "Basic Forms of Motion," written in 1880 or 1881. The main part of this outline is a preliminary plan for the chapter "Basic Forms of Motion." From this the conclusion can be drawn that this outline was written before the chapter "Basic Forms of Motion"—approximately in 1880. p. 28

8 This passage from Helmholtz's book *Populäre wissenschaftliche Vorträge* is quoted and critically analyzed by Engels in the chapter "Basic Forms of Motion" (see this volume, pp. 92-115). p. 28

9 Engels examines Helmholtz's statements about "forces" in the chapter "Basic Forms of Motion" (see this volume, pp. 92-115). p. 28

## [ARTICLES]

### *Introduction*

10 In Engels's list of contents to the third folder this "Introduction" is called the "Old Introduction." The explanation for this name is evidently that this article was written earlier than the other articles of *Dialectics of Nature* and earlier than *Anti-Dühring*. The text of this "Introduction" contains two passages which make it possible to fix the date at which it was written. On page 43 Engels says that the cell "is a discovery not yet forty years old." Bearing in mind that in a letter to Marx dated July 14, 1858, Engels mentions

1836 as the approximate date of the discovery of the cell, by adding 39 years ("less than 40 years") to this date we get 1875 as the year in which the "Introduction" was written. On the other hand, on page 46 Engels writes that "it is only about ten years ago that the fact became known that completely structureless protein exercises all the essential functions of life," having in mind, probably, Ernst Hæckel's *General Morphology of Organisms*, which was published in 1866. Adding ten years to this date, we get 1876. Thus, there are grounds for the conclusion that the "Introduction" was written in 1875 or 1876. The original outline of this "Introduction," written by Engels in 1874, is given in this volume on pp. 259-62. p. 29

11 The Peasant War in Germany took place in 1524-25. p. 29

12 The theory that prevailed in chemistry during the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries, which considered that the process of combustion was determined by the presence in bodies of a special substance, phlogiston, which was without weight. The investigations of M. V. Lomonosov (1711-65) and Lavoisier (1743-94) proved the untenability of the phlogistic theory. Engels speaks on pages 66-67 of the positive part that the phlogistic theory played in its day. p. 33

13 Hypothesis of the origin of the heavenly bodies from incandescent nebulæ. p. 38

14 Priority in establishing the general principle of the conservation of matter and motion belongs to the brilliant Russian scientist M. V. Lomonosov. His views on "the universal natural law" of the conservation of matter and motion, embracing "all changes taking place in nature," were expounded by Lomonosov in a letter to L. Euler (1748) and in his *Reflections on the Solidity and Fluidity of Bodies* (1760). The law of the conservation and transformation of energy in the form in which it was formulated in 1842-46 by Mayer, Joule and Grove constitutes one of the stages in the further development and concretization of Lomonosov's universal law. p. 40

15 Grove's book *The Correlation of Physical Forces* was first published in 1846. It is based on a lecture which Grove read in the London Institute in January 1842 and which was published shortly afterwards. p. 40

[16] *Amphioxus* (the lancet fish), a small fish-like animal (about 5 centimetres in length), which occurs in a number of seas and oceans (the Indian Ocean, Pacific Ocean off the shores of the Malayan Archipelago and Japan, the Mediterranean, Black Sea, etc.) and which is a transitional form between invertebrates and vertebrates. *Lepidosiren* (an Amazon mudfish) belongs to the order of the lung fishes, or Dipnoi, which have both lungs and gills; it occurs in South America. p. 42

[17] *Ceratodus* (the barramunda), a fish having lungs and gills, occurs in Australia. *Archæopteryx*, an extinct animal, is the most ancient representative of the birds, at the same time possessing certain features of the reptiles. p. 42

[18] This paragraph in Engels's manuscript is separated from the paragraphs which precede and follow it by horizontal strokes and is deleted slantwise, as Engels usually did with paragraphs in his manuscripts which he had used in other works of his. p. 43

[19] Engels most probably has in mind Hæckel's assertion (which was not confirmed later) that the simplest living beings he investigated and which he called "Monera" are completely structureless particles of protein and nevertheless carry out all the essential functions of life. See Hæckel, *Generelle Morphologie der Organismen*, Band I, Berlin 1866, S. 133-36. p. 46

[20] *Eozoon canadense*, a fossil found in Canada, which was regarded as the remains of ancient primitive organisms. In 1878 Möbius refuted the view of the organic origin of this fossil. p. 46

[21] Mephistopheles's words in Goethe's *Faust*: "Alles was entsteht, ist wert, daß es zugrunde geht" (Part I, Scene 3). p. 49

[22] Here Engels is quoting the words of the Italian astronomer A. Secchi taken from his book *Die Sonne* (*The Sun*), Autorisierte deutsche Ausgabe, Braunschweig 1872. p. 50

### *Old Preface to [Anti]-Dühring. On Dialectics*

[23] This is the heading of this article in the list of contents of the second folder, where it was put by Engels when grouping the materials for *Dialectics of Nature*. The actual manu-

script of the article has only the one word "Preface" as a heading, but in the right-hand top corner of the first page there is in addition a note in brackets "Dühring, Revolution in Science." The article was written in May or in the early part of June 1878 as a preface to the first edition of *Anti-Dühring* which was to appear in the summer of 1878 as a separate book (from January 1877 it was printed in chapter instalments in the newspaper *Vorwärts*). At the last minute, however, Engels decided to replace this long preface by a shorter one, for which purpose he used the first two pages of the manuscript of the original preface (and the first five lines of the third page). The pages he used he deleted, as was his custom, with a vertical stroke. The new preface was dated June 11, 1878. Its content is in the main almost identical with the deleted pages of the "Old Preface" (with the exception of the last paragraph, which is absent from the "Old Preface"). p. 55

24 In September 1877. p. 57

25 Virchow, *Die Freiheit der Wissenschaft im modernen Staat*, Berlin 1877, S. 13-14. p. 57

26 This is where the part of Engels's manuscript which is deleted by a vertical line in pencil ends. p. 58

27 See the note on the ancient Greek atomists (pp. 254-55). p. 60

28 Marx's Afterword to the Second German Edition of *Capital*, Vol. I. p. 65

29 *Ibid.* p. 66

30 Engels has in mind the mathematician Jean Baptiste Joseph Fourier, the author of the treatise *Théorie analytique de la chaleur* (*Analytical Theory of Heat*), Paris 1822. p. 66

## *Natural Science in the Spirit World*

31 The above was the heading given to this article on the first page of the manuscript. In the list of contents to the third folder, in which Engels put it, it reads: "Natural Science and the Spirit World." The article was probably written in

the first half or in the middle of 1878. This can be concluded from a comparison of what Engels says on Zöllner's attitude to spiritualism and on the "latest reports" about Zöllner's "experiments" with the tying of knots on a string that had both ends sealed to the table (p.79) and what Zöllner himself has to say about it in Volume 1 of his *Wissenschaftliche Abhandlungen*, 1. Bd., Leipzig, S. 726, published in the second half of 1878.

Engels's article remained unpublished during his lifetime. In 1898 it was published in the *Illustrierter Neue Welt-Kalender für das Jahr 1898*, Hamburg 1898, S. 56-59. p. 68

32 *Barataria*—the name of a non-existent island, in Cervantes's novel *Don Quixote*. p. 70

33 The radiometer was invented by Crookes in 1874. The German word *Lichtmühle* literally means "light mill," a revolving apparatus which works by light- or heat-rays. Thallium was discovered by Crookes in 1861. p. 75

34 Wallace, *loc. cit.*, p. 181. p. 75

35 The quotation is taken from Crookes's article published in the London weekly *The Spiritualist* and headed "The Last of Katie King," p. 270. p. 76

36 This refers to the "Commission for the Investigation of Spiritualist Phenomena," set up by the Physical Society at St. Petersburg University on May 6, 1875; it completed its work on March 21, 1876. The Commission proposed to the persons disseminating spiritualism in Russia—Aksakov, Butlerov and Wagner—that they provide information on "genuine" spiritualist phenomena. The Commission consisted of the scientists Bobylyov, Borgman, Gesekhus, Krayevich, Mendeleyev and others. It came to the conclusion that "spiritualist phenomena arise from unconscious movements or deliberate deception," and that "the spiritualist doctrine is superstition," and it published its conclusions in the newspaper *Golos* (*Voice*) on March 25, 1876. D. I. Mendeleyev published the materials of the Commission under the heading *Materials for a Judgement about Spiritualism* (St. Petersburg, 1876). p. 78

37 From the libretto of Mozart's opera *The Magic Flute*. p. 80

38 Engels is hinting at the reactionary attacks against Darwinism which were particularly widespread in Germany after the Paris Commune of 1871. Even an important scientist like Virchow, who had previously supported Darwinism, proposed in 1877 that the teaching of Darwinism be banned, asserting that Darwinism was closely connected with the socialist movement and therefore dangerous for the existing social order. p. 80

39 In 1870 the Dogma of the Infallibility of the Pope was proclaimed in Rome. The German Catholic theologian Döllinger refused to accept this dogma. Ketteler, Bishop of Mainz, was also at first against proclaiming the new dogma, but very quickly reconciled himself to it and became its zealous defender. p. 82

40 These words are taken from the letter written by the biologist Thomas Huxley to the London Dialectical Society, which had invited him to take part in the work of the committee to study spiritualist phenomena. Huxley declined the invitation, making a number of ironical remarks about spiritualism. Huxley's letter, dated January 29, 1869, was printed in the *Daily News* on October 17, 1871. It is also given on page 389 of Davies's book *Mystic London* (1875) mentioned above. p. 82

## *Dialectics*

41 The above was the original heading of this article as given on the first page of the manuscript. On the fifth and ninth pages of the manuscript the words "Dialectical Laws" are written in the top margins. In previous editions of *Dialectics of Nature* this article was given under the heading "The General Nature of Dialectics as a Science." The article remained unfinished. It was probably written in 1879 (it quotes the second volume of Roscoe and Schorlemmer's *Chemistry*, which was published in 1879, but there is no mention of the discovery of scandium, which Engels could not have failed to mention in connection with the discovery of gallium if he had written the article after 1879, the year scandium was discovered). p. 83

42 In the preface to the third part of Heine's *Salons* entitled "Über den Denunzianten" (About the Denouncers). p. 85

43 The word "change" is deleted in the manuscript. p. 87

44 To indicate the missing members of the periodic system of the elements, Mendeleyev proposed using the Sanskrit numerals *eka*, *dvi*, *tri*, *chatur*, prefixed to the name of the element preceding the missing member of the series. p. 90

45 In the comedy *Le Bourgeois Gentilhomme*. p. 91

### *Basic Forms of Motion*

46 This article was apparently written in 1880 or 1881. p. 92

47 Engels most probably has in mind Vol. 1 of Kant's *Collected Works*, edited by Hartenstein. (I. Kant, *Sämtliche Werke*, in chronologischer Reihenfolge herausgegeben von G. Hartenstein, Band I, Leipzig 1867.) On page 22 of this edition is paragraph 10 of Kant's youthful work *Gedanken von der wahren Schätzung der lebendigen Kräfte* (*Thoughts on the Correct Appraisal of Live Forces*). The basic thesis of this paragraph states: "The threefold measurement is apparently based on the fact that substances in the existing world act on one another in such a way that the strength of the action is inversely proportional to the square of the distance." p. 95

48 This refers to the general amount of motion, of motion in its quantitative determination in general. "Quantity of motion" in the special sense of $mv$ is indicated in German by the words "Bewegungsgrösse" or "Quantität der Bewegung." However, here and in the text that follows Engels uses the expression "Bewegungsmenge," which we give in round brackets to avoid confusion with the magnitude $mv$. Instead of the expression "Bewegungsmenge," Engels sometimes uses the expression "die Masse der Bewegung," also in the sense of the general amount of every kind of motion (see for example this volume, p. 374). p. 95

49 In the sense of mutual equalization and neutralization. p. 96

50 This refers to the book already cited: *Populäre wissenschaftliche Vorträge*. p. 105

51 Engels most probably has in mind Hegel's "Observation" to the paragraph on the "Formal Ground" in the *Science of Logic*. In this "Observation," Hegel ridicules the "formal method of explanation from tautological grounds." "This manner of explaining," Hegel writes, "is favoured because it is so easy to see and understand; nothing is easier to see and understand, for instance, than that a plant has its ground in vegetative—that is, in plant-productive—force." "If the question why somebody goes to town is answered by the ground that there is an attractive force in the town which draws him there," this style of answer is not less senseless than the explanation by means of a "vegetative force." Moreover, Hegel remarks, "every science, and especially physical science, is full of tautologies of this kind, which in a manner constitute a prerogative of science." p. 108

52 The lecture is entitled "On the Interaction of the Forces of Nature." p. 111

### *The Measure of Motion.—Work*

53 Engels gives this heading on the first page of the manuscript of this article. In Engels's list of contents to the third folder, this article is entitled "Two Measures of Motion." It was apparently written in 1880 or 1881. p. 116

54 The periodical *Scientific Notes*, published in Leipzig. p. 118

55 In 1686-87, the French abbé Catelan published two articles in the magazine *Nouvelles de la République des Lettres* in which he defended Descartes's measure of motion ($mv$) against Leibniz. p. 122

56 This refers to an anecdote about an uneducated Prussian non-commissioned officer who could never understand when to use the dative case "mir" and when the accusative case "mich." In order not to have to worry about this question, he adopted the decision: when on duty always use "mir," when off duty always use "mich." p. 123

57 Helmholtz, *Ueber die Erhaltung der Kraft* (*On the Conservation of Energy*), Berlin 1847, S. 9. p. 124

58 *Ibid.*, S. 21. p. 124

59 Engels calculates the velocity of a falling body according to the formula $v=\sqrt{2gh}$, where v is the velocity, g—the acceleration due to gravity and h—the height from which the body falls. p. 126

60 This refers to the German pound—500 grams. p. 129

61 *Rolf Krake*—the Danish battleship which on the night of June 28-29, 1864, lay off the coast of Alsen Island, its assignment being to prevent the Prussian troops from crossing to the island. p. 129

62 Engels is here referring to Tait's article "Force," published in the magazine *Nature* on September 21, 1876. p. 132

63 Kirchhoff, *Vorlesungen über mathematische Physik. Mechanik* (*Lectures on Mathematical Physics. Mechanics*), Leipzig 1876. p. 132

### *Tidal Friction. Kant and Thomson—Tait*

64 The first line of the heading figures on Engels's title-page, preceding this article; the second line on the first page of the article itself. The article was written apparently in 1880 or 1881. p. 137

65 Previous to this Thomson and Tait were speaking of the direct resistances to the motion of bodies, such as that which air offers to the flight of a rifle bullet. p. 137

66 Engels is quoting Kant's work: "Investigation of the question whether the earth in its rotation about its axis has suffered any change from the first period of its origin," evidently from the Hartenstein edition (Kant's *Sämtliche Werke*, published by Hartenstein, Bd. I, Leipzig 1867, S. 185). p. 141

67 *Ibid.*, S. 182-83. p. 141

### *Heat*

68 The article is unfinished. It was written in 1881 or in the beginning of 1882, as is seen from the reference (p. 149) to *Leibniz's Correspondence with Papin*, published by Gerland in Berlin in 1881. p. 145

69 In *Anti-Dühring* (chapter VII of the first part) and in this book in the articles "Dialectics" and "Basic Forms of Motion." p. 146

[70] *Cf.* Engels's letter to Marx dated November 23, 1882, in which Engels speaks of units for measuring electrical energy (MEGA, Abt. 3, Bd. 4, S. 374-75). p. 147

[71] *Leibnizens und Huyghens' Briefwechsel mit Papin, nebst der Biographie Papin's und einigen zugehörigen Briefen und Aktenstücken*, bearbeitet von E. Gerland, Berlin 1881 (*The Correspondence of Leibniz and Huyghens with Papin, together with the Biography of Papin and Some Letters and Documents Connected With It.* Compiled by E. Gerland). p. 149

## *Electricity*

[72] The first paragraph of this note was deleted by Engels. The reference to *Nature* of June 15, 1882, shows that the article was written by Engels in 1882. The third edition of Wiedemann's treatise *Die Lehre von Galvanismus und Elektromagnetismus* (*The Theory of Galvanism and Electromagnetism*) appeared in 1882-85, i.e., after Engels had written this article. In Engels's list of contents to the third folder this article is headed "Electricity and Magnetism." p. 151

[73] This refers to the second edition of this book (the first edition was published in 1830). p. 153

[74] Thomson gives this quotation from Faraday on page 400 of the second edition of his book. The quotation is taken from Faraday's work *Experimental Researches in Electricity*, 12th Series, published in the journal of the Royal Society, *Philosophical Transactions*, 1838, p. 105. Thomson does not quote the passage accurately. Instead of "as if a metallic wire had been put. . ." Thomson writes "as if a metallic particle had been put..." p. 154

[75] Later it was established that the velocity of light is identical with that of the radiation of electro-magnetic waves. p. 158

[76] The quotation is taken from p. 472 of the second part of Volume II. p. 162

[77] Engels describes the experiments of Favre according to Wiedemann's book (Volume II, Part 2, pp. 521-22). p. 163

78 On the basis of more exact investigations, the mechanical equivalent of heat is nowadays taken as 426.9 kilogram-metres. p. 163

79 Wiedemann, *loc. cit.*, Vol. I, pp. 49-51. p. 177

80 In a number of places Wiedemann speaks of "atoms of hydrochloric acid," meaning molecules of this acid. p. 179

81 Wiedemann, *loc. cit.*, Vol. I, p. 482. p. 194

82 Refers to an anecdote about an old Major in the army, who having heard from one of the "one-year" conscripts that he was a Doctor of Philosophy and not wanting to trouble himself with distinguishing between a doctor of philosophy and a doctor of medicine, declared: "It is all the same to me, sawbones is sawbones." p. 195

83 Here Engels uses the word "Gewichtsteil" ("part by weight") but as before he is referring to equivalents. p. 199

81 This refers to the difference between the internal diameter of the barrel and the diameter of the shot. p. 207

85 The words "*iterum Crispinus*," given in brackets, are Engels's. They mean "again Crispin!" and are the words with which Juvenal begins his IV Satire in which (in the first part) he scourges Crispin, one of the courtiers of the Roman Emperor Domitian. In a figurative sense the words mean: "again the same person!" or "again the same theme!" p. 213

86 *Experimentum crucis*, literally "experiment of the cross," from the Baconian *instantia crusis*; a decisive experiment, which definitely confirms the correctness of one of the proposed explanations of a particular phenomenon and excludes all other explanations. p. 213

87 Wiedemann, *loc. cit.*, Vol. I, p. 104. p. 216

88 *Ibid.*, p. 62. p. 217

89 The words "third in the alliance ("der dritte im Bunde") are taken from Schiller's ballad "Die Bürgschaft," Verse 20. The tyrant Dionysius asks to be admitted to the alliance of the two faithful friends. p. 220

90 Poggendorff's experiments are quoted by Wiedemann in Volume I on pp. 368-72. p. 221

### *The Part Played by Labour in the Transition From Ape to Man*

91 The article was originally written by Engels as the introduction to a more extensive work entitled *The Three Basic Forms of Slavery*. Later Engels altered this title to *The Enslavement of the Worker*. Since, however, this work remained unfinished, Engels finally gave to its introductory portion the heading *The Part Played by Labour in the Transition from Ape to Man*, which is in conformity with the first 8-9 pages of the manuscript of this work (the last 2-3 pages of the manuscript are a transition to a more immediate treatment of the theme of the enslavement of toiling humanity). The article was apparently written in 1876. Evidence for this assumption is the letter of W. Liebknecht to Engels, dated June 10, 1876, in which Liebknecht writes, among other things, that he is impatiently awaiting Engels's work on *The Three Basic Forms of Slavery*, promised by him for the newspaper *Volksstaat*. Only in 1896 the article was published in the magazine *Die Neue Zeit* (Jahrgang XIV, Bd. 2, S. 545-54). p. 228

92 Engels is referring to the economic crisis of 1873-74. p. 246

93 Here the manuscript breaks off. p. 246

## [NOTES AND FRAGMENTS]

### [*From the History of Science*]

94 Engels quotes the first volume of Hegel's *History of Philosophy* from the first German edition (Berlin 1833). p. 249

95 Regarding the work *De placitis philosophorum*, it was subsequently proved that it did not come from Plutarch (the so-called "Pseudo-Plutarch"). It derives from Aetius who lived in about the year 100 of our era. p. 251

96 This note is written in Marx's handwriting and consists of quotations (from Tauchnitz editions) in Greek from Aristotle's *Metaphysics* and from the IXth and Xth books of Diogenes Laertius. The note dates from before June 1878

since it contains quotations about Epicurus which were used by Engels in the Old Preface to *Anti-Dühring* (see this volume, p. 60). All the italicized words in the quotations and all the explanatory insertions (in round brackets) are Marx's.
p. 254

97 The compilatory work of Diogenes Laertius is entitled *On the Life, Opinions and Sayings of Famous Philosophers*. It was written in the beginning of the third century of our era.
p. 254

98 Mädler, *Der Wunderbau des Weltalls, oder Populäre Astronomie* (*The Marvellous Structure of the Universe, or Popular Astronomy*), 5-te Auflage, Berlin 1861. p. 255

99 Wolf R., *Geschichte der Astronomie* (*History of Astronomy*), München 1877. p. 255

100 Engels is referring to the eleventh sheet of his notes. It is given below. p. 257

101 This fragment constitutes the original outline of the "Introduction" (see this volume, pp. 29-54). p. 259

102 The sentence remained uncompleted. p. 261

103 Until here the whole text of the fragment in the manuscript has been deleted with a vertical stroke as having been used by Engels in the first part of the "Introduction" (see this volume, pp. 29-43). Two further paragraphs follow, which were partially used in the second part of the "Introduction" (pp. 43-54), but were not deleted in the manuscript.
p. 262

104 This is the heading of the fragment given in the list of contents of the second folder of materials for *Dialectics of Nature*, the folder in which it was put by Engels himself. The fragment consists of four pages of the original manuscript of *L. Feuerbach*, numbered 16, 17, 18 and 19. At the top of page 16 is written in Engels's handwriting "Aus Ludwig Feuerbach." This fragment was part of the second chapter of *L. Feuerbach* and was intended to follow immediately after the description of the three principal "limitations" of the French materialists of the eighteenth century (see F. Engels, *Ludwig Feuerbach and the End of Classical German Philosophy*, Moscow 1950, p. 38). On finally revising the manuscript of *L. Feuerbach*, Engels removed these four pages and

replaced them by another text, but the basic contents of these pages left out of the second chapter (on the three great discoveries in natural science of the nineteenth century) were reproduced in an abbreviated form in the fourth chapter of *L. Feuerbach* (see Eng. ed., pp. 67-68). Since Engels's *L. Feuerbach* was originally printed in the April and May issues of the magazine *Die Neue Zeit* for 1886, it can be considered that this fragment dates from the first quarter of 1886. On the first page of the fragment the text begins in the middle of a sentence. The beginning of the sentence, restored according to the text of *L. Feuerbach* printed in *Die Neue Zeit*, is given in square brackets. p. 262

105 i.e., the French materialists of the eighteenth century. p. 262

106 This quotation is given in Starcke's book *Ludwig Feuerbach*, Stuttgart 1885, on pp. 154-55. It is taken from Feuerbach's work *Die Unsterblichkeitsfrage vom Standpunkt der Anthropologie* (*The Question of Immortality from the Standpoint of Anthropology*) which was written in 1846. (See Ludwig Feuerbach's *Sämtliche Werke*, Bd. III, Leipzig 1847, S. 331.) p. 267

107 This sentence, given by us in angular brackets, was deleted by Engels. It has had to be restored in the English text because without it the beginning of the following sentence becomes unintelligible. p. 268

108 Page 19 of the original manuscript of *L. Feuerbach* ends here. The end of this sentence occurs on the following page, which has not come down to us. On the basis of the printed text of *L.Feuerbach* it may be supposed that this sentence reads approximately as follows: "In the sphere of human history he is an idealist" (see *Ludwig Feuerbach and the End of Classical German Philosophy*, Moscow 1950, p. 42.) p. 268

109 "*Sire, je n'avais pas besoin de cette hypothèse*"—the words of Laplace in answer to Napoleon's question why he had made no mention of God in his work on celestial mechanics. p. 268

110 Engels is referring to Tyndall's speech at the meeting of the British Association for the Advancement of Science in Belfast, August 19, 1874 (published in *Nature* of August 20,

1874). In a letter to Marx dated September 21, 1874, Engels gives a more detailed characterization of this speech.
p. 269

111 Spinoza speaks of the appeal to ignorance as being the sole argument used by the representatives of the clerical-theological outlook on nature, in the appendix to the first part of his *Ethics*. p. 269

### [*Natural Science and Philosophy*]

112 The fragment headed "Büchner" is the opening note of the first folder of *Dialectics of Nature*. It is followed immediately on the same first sheet of the manuscript by the fragment on the Dialectics of Natural Science, dating from May 1873 (see this volume, p. 329. Note 173 to it). Further, at the end of the manuscript page, are outlined some additional remarks on "Büchner's claim to pronounce judgement on socialism and political economy." In the present edition these remarks are given immediately after the first fragment from which they are separated by a space and a thin line. The fragment on Büchner, together with the additional remarks mentioned, evidently form a synopsis of a work planned by Engels against Büchner and other representatives of vulgar materialism. Judging by the fact that the synopsis is written on the same sheet as the fragment on Dialectics of Natural Science and part of it comes after this fragment, it can be assumed that it was written in the first half of 1873.
p. 270

113 Engels has in mind the following passage from Hegel: "Lessing in his day said that people treated Spinoza like a dead dog." Hegel deals in detail with the French materialists in the third volume of his *History of Philosophy*.
p. 270

114 Engels obviously has in mind Büchner's book *Kraft und Stoff* (*Force and Matter*), seventh edition, Leipzig 1862. On page 170 of this edition, the following arguments are to be found: "We would have no conception of darkness without light, no notion of high without low, of heat without cold, etc."
p. 271

[115] Engels has in mind the limitation of Newton's philosophical views, his one-sided over-estimation of the method of induction and his negative attitude to hypotheses, expressed by him in the well-known words "*hypotheses non fingo*" (I do not invent hypotheses). p. 273

[116] At the present time it is considered to be beyond doubt that Newton arrived at the discovery of the differential and integral calculus independently of and earlier than Leibniz, but Leibniz, who made this discovery also independently, gave it a more perfect form. Already within two years of writing the present fragment Engels expressed a more accurate view on this question (see this volume, p. 342). p. 273

[117] The word has not been deciphered since it is covered in the manuscript by an ink blot. p. 273

[118] Engels has in mind the following passage from Hegel's *Logic* in *Enzyklopädie der Philosophischen Wissenschaften*, Part I: "Everybody allows that to know any other science you must have first studied it, and that you can only claim to express a judgement upon it in virtue of such knowledge. Everybody allows that to make a shoe you must have learnt and practised the craft of the shoemaker. . . . For philosophy alone, it seems to be imagined, such study, care, and application are not in the least requisite." p. 273

[119] This refers to the note to paragraph six of the Hegel's *Logic* (*Enzyklopädie*) where Hegel speaks of abstract understanding and its relation to the category of the imperative; "as if the world had waited on it (this understanding) to learn how it (the world) *ought* to be." p. 273

[120] A "mathematical poem" is the term applied by W. Thomson to the book of the French mathematician Jean Baptiste Joseph Fourier *Theórie analytique de la chaleur* (*Analytical Theory of Heat*), Paris 1822. See the appendix to the book of Thomson and Tait *A Treatise on Natural Philosophy*, Vol. I, Oxford 1867, pp. 713 and 718. In the synopsis of this book made by Engels, this passage is copied out and underlined. p. 274

[121] This refers to *Science of Logic*. p. 274

[122] Here Hegel is polemizing with those physicists who explained the differences of the specific gravity of bodies by saying

that "a body, with a specific gravity twice that of another, contains within the same space twice as many material parts (atoms) as the other." p. 274

123 Hæckel, *Natürliche Schöpfungsgeschichte*. Engels apparently used the fourth edition of this book (Berlin 1873). On page 59 of this edition Hæckel, not without irony, outlines "Agassiz's views on the plan of the creation." p. 275

124 Hæckel, *Natürliche Schöpfungsgeschichte*. p. 275

125 On page 26 of his book Hofmann gives the following quotation from Rosenkranz's book *System der Wissenschaft. Ein philosophisches Encheiridion*, Königsberg 1850: ". . . Platinum is . . . basically only a paradox of silver, wishing to occupy already the highest stage of metallicity. This belongs only to gold. . . ." p. 276

126 Hofman speaks of the "services" of the Prussian King Frederick-William III in organizing the sugar-beet industry on pages 5-6 of his book. p. 276

127 In Engels's manuscript the surname Cassini is given in the plural (die Cassinis). Four astronomers named Cassini are known in the history of French science: 1) Giovanni Domenico Cassini (1625-1712) who emigrated from Italy; 2) his son Jacques Cassini (1677-1756); 3) the son of the last-named, Cesar François Cassini (1714-1784), and 4) his son, Jacques Dominique Cassini (1747-1845). Engels probably refers to the second and third Cassini. p. 276

128 Thomson T., *An Outline of the Sciences of Heat and Electricity*, 2nd edition, London 1840. p. 276

129 Hæckel, *Natürliche Schöpfungsgeschichte*. p. 277

130 Hæckel (*ibid.*, pp. 89-94) stresses the contradiction in Kant's *Critique of the Teleological Faculty of Judgement* between the "mechanical methods of explanation" and teleology, Hæckel depicting the latter, in opposition to Kant, as the doctrine of external aims, of external expediency. Hegel, however, who examines this same *Critique of the Teleological Faculty of Judgement*, put in the foreground Kant's conception of "inner expediency," according to which in organic beings "everything is purpose and reciprocally also means." (Quotation from Kant, given by Hegel.)

p. 277

131 The word "another" refers to the note on "Polarity," which was written immediately before the present note on the same sheet (see this volume, p. 287). p. 277

132 i.e., not in the sense in which the phrase is used by Newton, who by this warning expressed his negative attitude to philosophical thought in general (see this volume, p. 37). p. 279

### [*Dialectics*]

[*a) General Questions of Dialectics. The Fundamental Laws of Dialectics.*]

133 *Compsognathus*—an extinct animal of the order of dinosaurs, belonging to the class of reptiles, but according to the structure of the pelvis and hind extremities closely related to the birds. On *Archæopteryx* see note 17 to page 42. p. 282

134 Engels is referring to multiplication by budding or division among cœlenterates. p. 282

135 In the manuscript: "die beiden Hauptgegensätze" (the two main opposites). Engels has in mind: 1) the antithesis of identity and difference, and 2) the antithesis of cause and effect. The words "necessity and chance" were written later between the lines. p. 287

136 This refers in all probability to the book by Clausius: *Die mechanische Wärmetheorie*, 2-te umgearbeitete Auflage, I. Band, Braunschweig 1876.
Pages 87-88 of this book speak of the "positive and negative quantities of heat." p. 287

137 Engels deals with the Frankish dialect in more detail in the special work *The Frankish Dialect* written by him about 1881-82. The present note, which illustrates the unity of opposites from the example of the German dialects, was written by Engels on the same sheet as the preceding fragment on polarity. p. 288

138 A quotation from Heine's satirical poem *Disputation* (*Romanzero*, Vol. III, 1851), which depicts a mediæval dispute between a Catholic Capuchin monk and a learned Jewish Rabbi, who in the course of the dispute appeals to the Jewish

religious book *Tausves Jontof.* The Capuchin's reply is to send the *Tausves Jontof* to the devil. Thereupon the indignant Rabbi cries out in a frenzy: "Gilt nichts mehr der Tausves Jontof. Was soll gelten? Zeter! Zeter!" ("If the Tausves Jontof has no longer authority, then what shall prevail? Help! Help!") p. 293

139 Engels refers to the first part of Hegel's *Science of Logic*, quoting it from the German edition of 1841. p. 294

140 Engels used this quotation in the fragment on zero (see this volume, p. 346). p. 294

### [b) *Dialectical Logic and the Theory of Knowledge. On the "Limits of Knowledge."*]

141 Dido, the name of a dog, mentioned by Engels in a letter to Marx dated April 16, 1865. p. 295

142 The last sentence is written supplementarily in the margin. p. 296

143 The word "singulär" here denotes individual in the sense of formal logic, as distinct from the dialectical concept "Einzelnes" (individual). p. 297

144 The word "partikulär" here denotes particular in the sense of formal logic as distinct from the dialectical concept "Besonderes" (special). p. 297

145 The word "universell" here denotes universal in the sense of formal logic as distinct from the dialectical concept "Allgemeines" (general). p. 297

146 Engels is referring to the large note on the classification of judgements that occupies the second and third pages of the sheet on the fourth page of which (at the end) this short note is written. See above, pp. 296-99. p. 299

147 The note breaks off here. Taking into account the content of the fragment on the classification of judgements which precedes it, it can be presumed that in the unfinished end of this note Engels desired to contrast the thesis on the *empirical* basis of all our knowledge to Kant's apriorism (see this volume, pp. 298-99). p. 299

148 i.e., the whole of the third part of Hegel's *Science of Logic*. p. 300

149 Hæckel, *Natürliche Schöpfungsgeschichte* (*Natural History of Creation*). p. 300

150 On these pages of the fourth edition of his *Natural History of Creation* (Berlin 1873), Hæckel relates how Goethe discovered the existence of the intermaxillary bone in man. In Hæckel's opinion, Goethe arrived first of all at the inductive proposition: "All mammals have an intermaxillary bone," from which he drew the deductive conclusion: "Therefore man also has such a bone," following which this conclusion was confirmed by experimental data (by the discovery of the intermaxillary bone in the human embryo and in occasional atavistic cases in adults). p. 301

151 Engels is obviously referring to the two main works of Whewell: *History of the Inductive Sciences* (three volumes, London 1837) and *Philosophy of the Inductive Sciences*, two volumes, London 1840). p. 301

152 The manuscript has "die bloss mathematisch[en] umfass[en]d." The word "umfassend" is used here obviously in the sense of "comprising" the purely mathematical sciences, which, according to Whewell, are sciences of pure reason that investigate the "conditions of all theory" and in this sense occupy, as it were, a central position in the "geography of the intellectual world." In his *History of the Inductive Sciences* Whewell counterposes the "inductive sciences" (mechanics, astronomy, physics, chemistry, mineralogy, botany, zoology, physiology, geology) to the "deductive" sciences (geometry, arithmetic, algebra). p. 301

153 In the formula U—I—P, U denotes the Universal, I the Individual, P the Particular. This formula is used by Hegel in analyzing the logical essence of inductive conclusions. p. 301

154 Hegel, *Werke*, Bd. 5, 2. Aufl., Berlin 1841, S. 149. p. 302

155 Grove, *The Correlation of Physical Forces*. The page references are, most probably, to the third edition (London 1855). p. 307

156 This heading is given in the list of contents drawn up by Engels for the second folder of materials for *Dialectics of Nature*, where this note follows immediately after the two "Notes"

to *Anti-Dühring* (see editorial notes to pp. 332 and 352). This note is devoted to a critical analysis of the basic theses put forward by the botanist Nägeli in his lecture to the Munich Congress of German Natural Scientists and Physicians on September 20, 1877. Nägeli's lecture was entitled "Die Schranken der naturwissenschaftlichen Erkenntnis ("The Limits of Natural-Scientific Knowledge"). Engels quotes it according to the "appendix" to the Congress report (*Tageblatt der 50. Versammlung deutscher Naturforscher und Aerzte in München 1877*. Beilage, September 1877). p. 308

157 Engels is referring to the discovery of oxygen by Joseph Priestley, who did not even guess that he had discovered a new chemical element and that this discovery would lead to a revolution in chemistry. Engels speaks in more detail about this discovery in his preface to the second volume of Marx's *Capital*. p. 311

158 According to Nägeli. p. 313

159 Hegel, *Werke*, Bd. 6, 2. Aufl., Berlin 1843, S. 21. p. 313

160 This reference is to Hegel's *Science of Logic*, in the section on Quantity (volume 3 of the second German edition of Hegel's *Works*). Hegel mentions astronomy and says it is admirable not because of the bad infinity of immeasurable distances and the immeasurable multitude of stars, but "rather because of those *relations* of measure and those *laws* which reason recognizes in these objects; for they are the infinity of reason and those others the infinity of unreason." p. 315

161 This is a quotation, slightly modified by Engels, from the treatise *Della Moneta* (*On Money*) of the Italian economist Galiani. Engels used the Custodi edition: *Scrittori Classici Italiani di Economia Politica*. Parte moderna, Tomo III, Milano 1803, p. 156. p. 315

162 The words "so also $\frac{1}{r^2}$" were added subsequently by Engels. It is possible that Engels has in mind the number $\pi$, which has a quite definite meaning, but which cannot be expressed by a finite decimal or an ordinary fraction. If the area of a circle is taken as 1, the formula $\pi r^2 = 1$ gives: $\pi = \frac{1}{r^2}$ (where $r$ is the radius of the circle). p. 315

163 Engels is referring to the following passage in *Philosophy of Nature*: "The sun serves the planet, just as in general sun, moon, comets, stars are merely significations of the earth." p. 317

164 Here the photo-copy of the manuscript is indecipherable. The words in square brackets "Es genügt" ["it suffices"] have been restored to suit the meaning and on the basis of the upper parts of certain letters in the photo-copy. The words "takes place" have been added to suit the meaning. p. 317

165 Engels is referring to George Romanes's review of Sir John Lubbock's book *Ants, Bees and Wasps*, London 1882. The review appeared in the British journal *Nature* of June 8, 1882. The passage which interested Engels, that ants are "very sensitive to the ultra-violet rays" occurs on page 122 of Vol. XXVI of *Nature*. p. 317

166 Engels is referring to A. von Haller's poem "Falschheit der menschlichen Tugenden," in which Haller asserted: "No mortal mind can Nature's inner secrets tell, too happy only if he knows the outer shell." Goethe, in his poems "Allerdings" (1820) and "Ultimatum" (1821) opposed Haller's assertion, pointing out that nature is a single unity and cannot be divided, as Haller does, into an unknowable inner kernel and an outer shell accessible to man. p. 319

### [*Forms of Motion of Matter. Classification of the Sciences*]

167 See also the note on "cohesion" (to p. 376). p. 323

168 A reference to the sheet and page of Engels's manuscript. The note on Clausius (in connection with the kinetic theory of gases and the hypothesis of the ether) mentioned by Engels is given below, among the notes on physics (p. 377). p. 324

169 Grove, *The Correlation of Physical Forces*. On pp. 20-29 Grove speaks of the "indestructibility of force" when mechanical motion is converted into a "state of tension" and into heat. p. 325.

170 This "either" is not followed by any corresponding "or." It can be assumed that Engels intended to mention at the

end of the sentence the reverse transformation of repulsion into attraction, but did not do so. The suggested ending of the sentence is given in square brackets. p. 327

171 The ideas outlined in this note were developed by Engels in the chapter "Basic Forms of Motion" (see above, pp. 92-115). p. 328

172 Grove, *The Correlation of Physical Forces.* By "affections of matter" Grove means "heat, light, electricity, magnetism, chemical affinity, and motion" (p. 15) and by "motion" he means mechanical motion or displacement. p. 328

173 This outline, as regards its contents, coincides with Engels's letter to Marx dated May 30, 1873. This letter begins with the words "This morning in bed the following dialectical ideas about natural science came into my head." The exposition of these ideas is more definite in the letter than in the present outline. It may be inferred that the outline was written before the letter, on the same day, May 30, 1873. Not counting the fragment on Büchner (see this volume, pp. 270-73), which was written shortly before this outline, all the other chapters and fragments of *Dialectics of Nature* were written later, i.e., after May 30, 1873. p. 329

174 The words in square brackets are added from Engels's letter to Marx, May 30, 1873. p. 329

175 Engels is referring to the third part of Hegel's *Science of Logic.* In his *Philosophy of Nature*, Hegel denotes these three main divisions of natural science by the terms "mechanics," "physics" and "organics." p. 331

176 This note is one of those three larger notes ("Noten") which Engels put in the second folder of materials for *Dialectics of Nature* (the smaller notes were put in the first and fourth folders). In previous editions of *Dialectics of Nature* all these three notes were grouped under the heading "Notes to *Anti-Dühring.*" Engels has no such heading. Only the first two notes have relation to *Anti-Dühring*, but they are not commenting notes in the usual sense of the word, being rather a further development of some very important ideas which are incidentally touched upon in individual passages of *Anti-Dühring.* These two notes were most probably written in the beginning of 1885, when Engels was about to prepare for the

press a second *enlarged* edition of *Anti-Dühring*. As is evident from his letters to Bernstein, Kautsky and Schlüter, Engels intended to write a series of addenda ("Zusätze" or "Anhänge") to separate passages of *Anti-Dühring*, to be put at the end of the second edition of this work. But owing to being extremely busy with other matters (above all with his work on the second and third volumes of Marx's *Capital*), Engels was prevented from carrying out his intention. He only managed to make a rough outline of two "notes" or "addenda," to pp. 17-18 and p. 46 of the text of *Anti-Dühring*. The present notice is the second of these "notes." The heading "On the 'Mechanical' Conception of Nature" was given by Engels in his list of contents of the second folder of *Dialectics of Nature*. The sub-heading "Note 2 to p. 46": "the various forms of motion and the sciences dealing with them" occurs at the beginning of this notice. p. 332

177 The page reference is to the first edition of *Anti-Dühring*. It is the first page of Chapter VII of Part I: "Natural Philosophy. The Organic World." p. 332

178 Engels refers to the issue of the newspaper *Vorwärts* in which chapter VII of *Anti-Dühring*, which was published as a series of articles, first appeared. p. 332

179 Under this title, Kekulé in 1878 published as a separate pamphlet the speech which he delivered at Bonn University on October 18, 1877. p. 332

180 Kekulé, *loc. cit.*, p. 12. p. 333

181 i.e., in the text of *Anti-Dühring*, at the beginning of Chapter VII of Part I. p. 333

182 i.e., in the Note on the Mathematical Infinite which is given later in this volume, on pp. 352-360. p. 333

183 Engels is referring to the notice printed in the journal *Nature* of November 15, 1877, which gives a short report of Kekulé's speech. p. 333

184 Hæckel, *Die Perigenesis der Plastidule oder die Wellenzeugung der Lebensteilchen. Ein Versuch zur mechanischen Erklärung der elementaren Entwickelungs-Vorgänge*, Berlin 1876, S. 13. p. 333

185 *The Lothar Meyer curve* is the curve showing the relation between the atomic weights of the elements and their atomic

volumes. L. Meyer's article "Die Natur der chemischen Elemente als Funktion ihrer Atomgewichte" appeared in 1870. The discovery of the correlation between the atomic weights of the elements and their physical and chemical properties was made by the great Russian scientist D. I. Mendeleyev, who was the first to formulate the periodic law of the chemical elements in his article "The Correlation of the Properties of the Elements and their Atomic Weights," published in 1869, i.e., a year prior to L. Meyer's article. Mendeleyev went much farther than Meyer in his conclusions. On the basis of the periodic law discovered by him, Mendeleyev predicted the existence and specific properties of chemical elements still unknown at that time; whereas L. Meyer in his subsequent works revealed a lack of understanding of the nature of the periodic law. p. 335

[186] Engels is referring to the third part of Hegel's *Science of Logic* (the Doctrine of the Notion), section II, Chapter III. p. 336

[187] Engels is referring to Kekulé's statements that chemistry is the science of atoms and physics the science of molecules. These statements (from Kekulé's speech in Bonn University, October 18, 1877), Engels analyzes in the second "Note" to *Anti-Dühring* (see above pp. 332-35). It is possible that this fragment is the first sketch of the above-mentioned "Note." p. 338

## [*Mathematics*]

[188] Engels is referring to the following passage from the first part of Hegel's *Science of Logic*: in arithmetic "thought . . . moves in absence of thought." p. 342

[189] The reference to the section on "Measure" (*Science of Logic*) was added later. Engels is referring to Hegel's statement: "Already the natural numerical system exemplifies such a *Nodal Line* of qualitative moments, which manifest themselves in the merely external progression, etc. p. 342

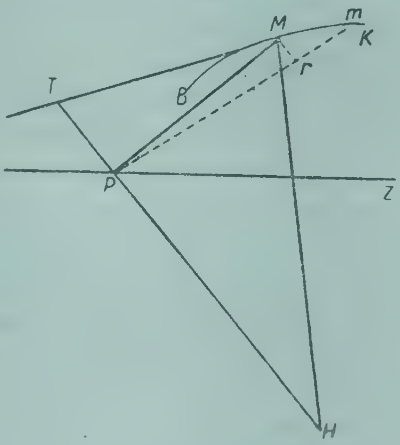
[190] i. e., in the mathematics of the infinite. p. 343

[191] This expression occurs in the book by Bossut, referred to by Engels in the fragment "Straight and curved." In the chapter on "Integral Calculation with Finite Differences," Bossut

examines first of all the following problem: "To integrate or sum the whole-number steps of a variable magnitude $x$." Bossut assumes that the difference $\Delta x$ is constant and he denotes it by the Greek letter $\omega$. Since the sum of $\Delta x$ or of $\omega$ is equal to $x$, the sum of $\omega\times 1$ or of $\omega x^0$ is also equal to $x$. Bossut writes this equation in the form $\Sigma\omega x^0=x$. Bossut then takes out the constant $\omega$ and puts it before the summation sign, obtaining the expression $\omega\Sigma x^0=x$, from which he obtains the equation $\Sigma x^0=\frac{x}{\omega}$. This last equation is then used by Bossut to find the magnitudes $\Sigma x$, $\Sigma x^2$, $\Sigma x^3$, etc., for solving other problems. See Bossut, *Traités de calcul différentiel et de calcul intégral*, Vol. I, Paris 1798, p. 38. p. 348.

192 This refers to the curves considered in the system of polar co-ordinates. p. 350

193 Engels has in mind Fig. 17 of the first volume of Bossut's *Treatise*. This figure has the following form: BMK is the curve. MT is its tangent. P is the pole or origin of the co-ordinates. PZ is the polar axis. PM is the ordinate of the point M (so Bossut calls it; nowadays it would be called the radius-vector). Pm is the ordinate of point m lying infinitely close to M. (Engels calls this radius-vector the "differential imaginary abscissa"). The triangles Mrm and TPM (as also the triangles Mrm and MPH) are regarded as similar. p. 350



194 Wiedemann, *Die Lehre vom Galvanismus und Elektromagnetismus*, II. Band, 2-te Abteilung, 2-te Auflage, Braunschweig 1874. p. 352

195 This Note is one of the three larger notes (Noten) which Engels put in the second folder of materials for *Dialectics of Nature*. It was written originally as the first sketch of a

commentary note (or addition) to pp. 17-18 of *Anti-Dühring*. The date of writing, like that of the note "On the 'Mechanical' Conception of Nature," was most probably the beginning of 1885 (see note 176 to p. 332). The heading "On the Prototypes of the Mathematical Infinite in the Real World" was given by Engels in the list of contents of the second folder of *Dialectics of Nature*. The sub-heading "To pp. 17-18: Concordance of Thought and Being.—The Infinite in Mathematics" stands at the beginning of the note. p. 352

[196] The page references are to the first edition of *Anti-Dühring* published in the summer of 1878. These are the second and third pages of chapter III of the first part, which deal with the relation between thinking and being in connection with the criticism of Dühring's apriorism. p. 352

[197] The reference is to *Anti-Dühring*. p. 353

[198] Dühring's expression. p. 354

[199] This figure is given in an article by William Thomson, entitled "The Size of Atoms," which was first published in the journal *Nature* of March 31, 1870 (Vol. I, p. 553), and afterwards reprinted as an appendix in the second edition, 1883, of *Treatise on Natural Philosophy* by Thomson and Tait. p. 355

[200] One of the dwarf states forming part of the second German Empire. p. 358

[201] Engels is obviously referring to the psycho-physical monism of Hæckel, as expounded, for instance, in latter's book *The Perigenesis of the Plastidule*, Berlin 1876, which is quoted by Engels in another passage (see this volume, p. 333 and note 184 to it). On pp. 38-40 of this booklet Hæckel asserts that not only plastidules (i.e., molecules of protoplasm) possess an elementary soul, but also atoms, and that all atoms are "equipped with a soul" and possess "sensation" and "will." p. 360

[202] It is possible that here, too, Engels is referring to the views of Hæckel, who in the booklet *The Perigenesis of the Plastidule* cited in the previous note, speaks of atoms as of something absolutely discrete, absolutely indivisible, absolutely unalterable, while along with discrete atoms he recognizes the existence of the ether as something absolutely continuous. p. 360

## [*Mechanics and Astronomy*]

203 This notice consists of extracts from the ninth section of the book by Mädler: *Der Wunderbau des Weltalls, oder Populäre Astronomie*, 5-te Auflage, Berlin 1861. The ninth section of the book is headed "Die Fixsterne" and occupies pp. 408-84. p. 362

204 Secchi, *Die Sonne*, Autorisierte deutsche Ausgabe, Braunschweig 1872. The periodic partial eclipses of the star Algol are explained by Secchi as due to its having a dark companion. p. 363

205 The extracts from Secchi's book *Die Sonne* continue. p. 365

206 The note consists of extracts from Secchi's book *Die Sonne*. p. 366

207 The addition in brackets is Engels's, who refers here to the above-mentioned book by Mädler. p. 366

208 This passage is quoted by Engels in the "Introduction." See this volume, p. 50. p. 367

209 Engels is referring to Rudolf Wolf's book *Geschichte der Astronomie*, München 1877. On p. 325 of this book Wolf asserts that the law of the refraction of light was discovered not by Descartes but by Snell who formulated it in his unpublished works, from which Descartes subsequently (after Snell's death) took it. p. 367

210 Engels is referring to Julius Robert Mayer's book *Die Mechanik der Wärme in gesammelten Schriften*, zweite, umgearbeitete und vermehrte Auflage, Stuttgart 1874. p. 367

211 Mayer mentions the calculations of the English astronomer Adams in the same book, p. 330. p. 367

## [*Physics*]

212 This refers to the following works of Mayer: 1) *Bemerkungen über die Kräfte der unbelebten Natur* (*Remarks on the Forces of Inorganic Nature*), 2) *Die organische Bewegung in ihrem Zusammehange mit dem Stoffwechsel* (*Organic Motion in its Connection with Metabolism*). Both these works were included in a collection of Mayer's writings *Die Mechanik der Wärme*, which was published in a first edition in 1867 and in a second edition in 1874. p. 369

213 The quotation from Hegel given in this note was used by Engels in the chapter "Basic Forms of Motion" (see this volume, p. 108). p. 369

214 i.e., the various forms of motion: mechanical motion, heat, electricity, etc. p. 371

215 In Engels's manuscript this passage is partially deleted in connection with the fact that he added to the original version of the second sentence the words: "so 'force' here reaches its limit. It is, however, still measurable by the heat production, but so far without much result," while the phrase beginning with the words "*invents* a so-called force for their explanation" was left unaltered and not brought into accord with what had been added. In order to preserve the full meaning and grammatical structure of the latter phrase, the words "Here it becomes a phrase, as everywhere, where, instead of investigating the uninvestigated forms of motion," which were deleted by Engels, have been restored and completed by addition of the subject "it" at the beginning. p. 372

216 Engels is referring to Lavrov's book Опыт истории мысли (*Attempt at a History of Thought*), Vol. 1 (St. Petersburg 1875). On page 109 of this book Lavrov writes: "Dead suns with their dead systems of planets and satellites continue their motion in space as long as they do not fall into a new nebula in process of formation. Then the remains of the dead world become material for hastening the process of formation of the new world." In a footnote Lavrov quotes the opinion of Zöllner that the state of torpor of extinct heavenly bodies "can be ended only by external influences, e.g., by the heat evolved on collision with some other body." p. 374

217 Engels is referring to Clausius's lecture "On the Second Law of the Mechanical Theory of Heat," delivered in Frankfurt-on-Main on September 23, 1867, and published as a separate pamphlet in Braunschweig in the same year. p. 374

218 i.e., until heat can again perform work and pass into other forms of motion. p. 375

219 Clausius, *Über den zweiten Hauptsatz der mechanischen Wärmetheorie*, Braunschweig 1867. p. 377

220 Engels is evidently referring also to page 16 of the above pamphlet, where Clausius incidentally mentions the ether as exist-

ing *outside* the heavenly bodies. Here it is a question of the same ether, though not outside bodies but in the interstices between the most minute constituent particles of the bodies. p. 377

221 Engels is most probably referring to the passage in Mädler's *Der Wunderbau des Weltalls, oder Populäre Astronomie* where Mädler touches on the so-called absorption of light and why it is that, in spite of the innumerable stars radiating light, the sky at night is dark (pp. 465-66). p. 378

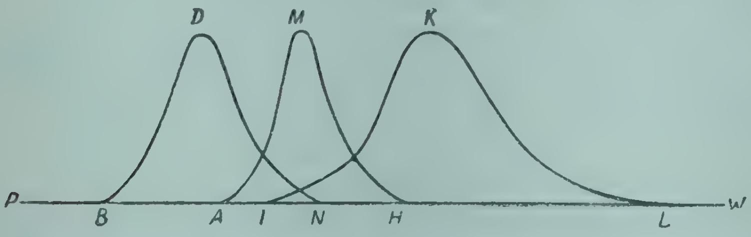
222 Engels wrote Lavrov's name in Russian characters. Engels is referring to Lavrov's book Опыт истории мысли, Vol. 1, published anonymously in St. Petersburg in 1875. In the chapter "The Cosmic Basis of the History of Thought," Lavrov mentions the views of various scientists on the extinction of light coming from very great distances (pp. 103-04). p. 378

223 Fick, *Die Naturkräfte in ihrer Wechselbeziehung* (*The Interaction of Natural Forces*), Popular lectures, Würzburg 1869. p. 378

224 Maxwell, *Theory of Heat*, Fourth edition, London 1875. p. 378

225 Secchi, *Die Sonne.* p. 379

226 Engels is referring to the diagram on page 632 of Secchi's book, the main portion of which is reproduced below:



The curve BDN represents the intensity of heat radiation, from the longest wave heat-rays (at point B) to the shortest wave rays (at point N). The curve AMH represents the intensity of light radiation, from the longest wave rays (at point A) to the shortest wave rays (at point H). The curve IKL represents the intensity of chemical rays, from the longest wave rays (at point I) to the shortest wave rays (at point L). In all three cases the intensity of the rays is shown by the distance of the point on the curve from the line PW. p. 379

[227] Engels is referring to Hegel's *Philosophy of Nature*, Berlin edition, 1842. p. 379

[228] Engels is referring to Hegel's *Philosophy of Nature*, Berlin edition, 1842. p. 379

[229] T. Thomson, *An Outline of the Sciences of Heat and Electricity*, 2nd edition, London 1840. Coulomb's statements on "particles of electricity," quoted by Thomson, were made in 1786. p. 380

[230] In the chapter on "Electricity" (see this volume, p. 154) Engels reproduces these statements of Faraday's on the electric spark, quoting them from Thomson's book. They are taken from Faraday's work *Experimental Researches in Electricity*, 12th series, published in the Journal of the Royal Society, *Philosophical Transactions*, 1838, p. 105. Thomson's quotation of Faraday is not accurate (see note 74). p. 381

[231] T. Thomson, *An Outline of the Sciences of Heat and Electricity*, p. 454. p. 382

[232] Engels is referring to the book of the British physicist Frederick Guthrie *Magnetism and Electricity*, London and Glasgow, 1876. On page 210 Guthrie writes: "The strength of the current is proportional to the amount of zinc dissolved in the battery that is oxidized, and is proportional to the heat which the oxidation of that zinc would liberate." p. 383

[233] See Wiedemann, *Die Lehre von Galvanismus und Elektromagnetismus*, II. Bd., 2-te Abteilung, 2-te Auflage, Braunschweig 1874, S. 418. p. 384

## [*Chemistry*]

[234] Kopp, *Die Entwickelung der Chemie in der neueren Zeit*, Erste Abteilung: "Die Entwickelung der Chemie vor und durch Lavoisier," München 1871. p. 385

## [*Biology*]

[235] *Plasmogony* was the term Hæckel used to denote the hypothetical origin of organisms when the organism arises within some organic liquid, in contrast to *autogeny*, i.e., the direct origin of living protoplasm from inorganic matter. p. 388

[236] Engels is referring to the experiments on spontaneous generation carried out by Pasteur in 1862. By these experiments Pasteur proved that micro-organisms in any medium develop only from germs already present in the medium or which reach it from outside. Pasteur concluded that the spontaneous generation of micro-organisms is not possible. p. 389

[237] The full title of the book is: W. Thomson and P. G. Tait, *Handbuch der theoretischen Physik*, autorisierte deutsche übersetzung von Dr. H. Helmholtz und G. Wertheim, 1. Band, 2. Teil, Braunschweig 1874. The passage from Helmholtz's preface, quoted by Wagner and used by Engels, occurs on p. XI of this book. Engels quotes from Wagner's article, as is evident from the slight departures from Helmholtz's text. p. 390

[238] See Liebig, *Chemische Briefe*, 4-te umgearbeitete und vermehrte Auflage, I. Band, Leipzig und Heidelberg 1859, S.373. p. 391

[239] The extracts from Wagner's article end here. They are taken from pp. 4333, 4334, 4351, and 4370 of the Augsburg *Allgemeine Zeitung* of 1874. p. 394

[240] Engels is referring to Allman's paper p. 394 on "Recent Progress in our Knowledge of the Ciliate Infusoria," printed in Nos. 294, 295 and 296 of the British journal *Nature* (of June 17 and 24 and July 1, 1875). p. 398

[241] Engels is referring to the review of Croll's book *Climate and Time in their Geological Relations; a Theory of Secular Changes of the Earth's Climate*, London 1875, printed in *Nature*, Nos. 294, 295 (of June 17 and 24, 1875). p. 398

[242] Engels is referring to Tyndall's article "On Germs," published in Nos. 326 and 327 of *Nature* (of January 27 and February 3, 1876). p. 398

[243] Hæckel, *Natürliche Schöpfungsgeschichte*, 4-te Auflage. Plate I occurs between pp. 168 and 169 of this edition and the letterpress to it on p. 664. p. 398

[244] Engels is most probably referring to one of the early editions of the book *A Manual of Zoology* by Nicholson. p. 399

[245] Engels is most probably referring to Wilhelm Wundt's *Lehrbuch der Physiologie des Menschen*. p. 399

[246] Hæckel speaks of *Amœba Sphærococcus* on p. 380 of the fourth edition of *Natürliche Schöpfungsgeschichte* (Berlin 1873). p. 399

[247] Nicholson, *A Manual of Zoology.* p. 399

[248] *Zoophytes* (plant-animals) was the name given by Hæckel to the cœlenterates, among which he included the sponges, which are now classed in a separate group. p. 400

[249] Hæckel speaks of the *Planula* and *Gastrula* forms on p. 452 of the fourth edition of his *Natürliche Schöpfungsgeschichte.* In the fifth edition of this book, Berlin 1874, Hæckel altered this passage; he deleted from p. 452 and following all mention of the *Planula* and left only the reference to the *Gastrula*. Hence it can be concluded that Engels used the fourth edition of the book (Berlin 1873), in which Hæckel enumerates the following first five stages of development of the embryo in multi-cellular animals: *Monerula, Ovulum, Morula, Planula* and *Gastrula.* In the later editions of the book, Hæckel substantially altered this scheme, but his basic idea, to which Engels gave a positive appraisal, the idea of the parallelism between the individual development of an organism (*autogeny*) and the development of a particular form in the course of evolution (*phylogeny*) has become firmly established in science. p. 401

[250] The word *bathybius* means "living in the depths." In 1868 Huxley described a sticky slime, dredged from the bottom of the ocean, which he regarded as primitive, structureless living matter—protoplasm. In honour of Hæckel, he named this—as he thought—simplest living organism *Bathybius Hæckelii.* Subsequently it was proved that *bathybius* has nothing to do with protoplasm. Hæckel speaks of *bathybius* and the small calcareous modules enclosed in it on pp. 165-66 of the fourth edition of his *Näturliche Schöpfungsgeschichte.* p.401

[251] This is the term used by Hæckel (in Vol. 1 of *Generelle Morphologie der Organismen*, Berlin 1866) for colonies or associations of organisms consisting of "morphological individuals of the fifth order," e. g., chains of sea glow-worms. p. 401

[252] *Metamera* is the name given to parts (segments) of the body of various animals (e. g., worms) which repeat one another in structure. p. 401

[253] Hæckel, *Anthropogenie oder Entwickelungsgeschichte des Menschen* (Leipzig 1874). p. 401

[254] Hæckel, *Generelle Morphologie der Organismen.* In Vol. 1 of this work, in four large chapters (VIII-XI) Hæckel deals with

the concept of the organic individual, the morphological and physiological individuality of organisms, colonies, metamera, etc. p. 401

[255] *Gastrula*—two-layered embryo, a stage in the development of the embryo observed in the majority of multi-cellular animals. p. 401

[256] On chance and necessity see this volume, pp. 288-93. p. 402

[257] The contents of this note are almost identical with those of Engels's letter to Lavrov of November 12, 1875. p. 404

[258] Engels is evidently referring to one of two books by Nicholson: 1) *A Manual of Zoology* or 2) *Introduction to the Study of Biology.* p. 407

# CHRONOLOGICAL LIST OF FRAGMENTS AND ARTICLES*

## *1873*

1) Büchner (pp. 270-73).
2) Dialectics of natural science (pp. 329-30).
3) Divisibility (p. 325).
4) Cohesion (p. 376).
5) States of aggregation (p. 376).
6) Secchi and the Pope (p. 367).
7) Newtonian attraction and centrifugal force (p. 361).
8) Laplace's theory (p. 362).
9) Friction and impact produce an *internal* motion (p. 384).
10) *Causa finalis*—matter and its inherent motion (p. 322).

## *1874*

11) The form of development of natural science, in so far as it thinks, is the *hypothesis* (pp. 318-20).
12) The transformation of attraction into repulsion and *vice versa* (p. 324).
13) The character of mutual opposites belonging to the thought determinations of reason (p. 283).
14) For one who denies causality every natural law is a hypothesis (pp. 307-08).
15) The thing-in-itself (pp. 320-21).
16) The true nature of the determinations of "essence" is expressed by Hegel himself (p. 283).

---

* The list includes those fragments and articles the dates of which have been established more or less accurately. The dates of the remaining 62 fragments could not be established because of insufficient data.

17) The so-called axioms of mathematics (p. 340).
18) Part and whole, for instance . . . (p. 283).
19) Abstract identity (pp. 284-85).
20) Positive and negative (p. 287).
21) Life and death (pp. 387-88).
22) Bad infinity (p. 314).
23) Simple and compound (pp. 283-84).
24) Primordial matter (p. 322).
25) The incorrect *theory of porosity* . . . is presented by Hegel as a pure *figment of the mind* (p. 274).
26) Force (pp. 370-73).
27) The indestructibility of motion in *Descartes'* principle (p. 325).
28) Its essence (of motion) is to be the immediate unity of space and time (p. 325).
29) Force (see above), (p. 373).
30) Motion and equilibrium (pp. 326-27).
31) Causality (pp. 304-06).
32) Newtonian gravitation (pp. 361-62).
33) Force (p. 374).
34) Reciprocal action (pp. 306-07).
35) The indestructibility of motion (p. 325).
36) Mechanical motion (p. 328).
37) The divisibility of matter (p. 324).
38) Natural-scientific thought (p. 275).
39) Induction and deduction (p. 300).
40) In *Oken* . . . the nonsense . . . is evident (p. 275).
41) *Causae finales* and *efficientes* (p. 277).
42) God is nowhere treated worse than by the natural scientists who believe in him (pp. 268-69).
43) Rudiments in nature (pp. 406-07).
44) Unity of nature and mind (p. 294).
45) Classification of the sciences (pp. 330-31).
46) Protista (pp. 398-401).
47) The individual (p. 401).
48) Repetition of morphological forms at all stages of evolution (pp. 401-02).
49) For the entire evolution of organisms (p. 402).
50) The whole of organic nature is one continuous proof of the identity or inseparability of form and content (p. 401).

51) The kinetic theory of gases (p. 377).
52) The law of identity (pp. 285-86).
53) Natural scientists believe that they free themselves from philosophy by ignoring it or abusing it (pp. 278-79).
54) Historical (pp. 259-62).
55) The character of mutual opposites belonging to theoretical development (p. 377).
56) *Generatio aequivoca* (pp. 388-89).
57) Force (p. 369).
58) Hæckel, *Anthropogenie*, p. 707 (pp. 276-77).
59) Mayer, *Mechanische Theorie der Wärme* (p. 367).
60) An example of the necessity of dialectical thought . . . the law of falling (p. 361).
61) Moriz Wagner, *Naturwissenschaftliche Streitfragen* (pp. 390-94).

### *1875*

62) Reaction (p. 387).
63) Identity and difference (p. 351).
64) Mathematics (pp. 340-42).
65) Asymptotes (p. 349).
66) Zero powers (pp. 347-48).
67) Straight and curved (pp. 350-51).
68) Ether (p. 378).
69) Vertebrates (p. 406).
70) Radiation of heat into universal space (pp. 374-75).
71) Newton's parallelogram of forces (p. 362).
72) Bathybius (p. 401).
73) Understanding and reason (pp. 295-96).
74) To the Pan-Inductionists (pp. 302-03).
75) The kinetic theory (p. 377).
76) Clausius—if correct—proves . . . (p. 375).
77) The notion of an actual *chemically uniform matter* (p. 385).
78) Hard and fast lines (p. 282).
79) Dialectics, so called *objective* dialectics, prevails throughout nature (pp. 280-81).
80) The struggle for life (pp. 404-05).
81) Light and darkness (pp. 378-79).
82) Work (pp. 407-08).

83) Induction and analysis (pp. 303-04).
84) *The successive development* of the separate branches of natural science should be studied (pp. 247-49).
85) *Clausius's second law. . .* however it may be formulated (p. 375).
86) Difference between the situation at the end of the ancient world and at the end of the Middle Ages (pp. 256-57).
87) Historical material.—Inventions (pp. 257-59).

*1876*

88) Dialectics of Nature—references (p. 398).
89) Mädler, *The Fixed Stars* (pp. 362-64).
90) Nebulæ (pp. 365-66).
91) Secchi: *Sirius* (pp. 366-67).
92) Introduction (the first part seems to be written in 1875), (pp. 29-54).
93) The Part Played by Labour in the Transition from Ape to Man (pp. 228-46).
94) The eternal laws of nature (pp. 315-17).

*1878*

95) Old Preface to *Anti-Dühring* (pp. 55-67).
96) Natural Science in the Spirit World (pp. 68-82).
97) [Outline of the General Plan] (pp. 27-28).

*1879*

98) Dialectics (pp. 83-91).

*1880-1881*

99) [Outline of Part of the Plan] (p. 28).
100) Conclusion for Thomson, Clausius, Loschmidt (p. 376).
101) Motion of the heavenly bodies. Approximate equilibrium of attraction and repulsion (pp. 327-28).
102) Basic forms of motion (pp. 92-115).
103) The Measure of Motion.—Work (pp. 116-36).
104) Tidal Friction (pp. 137-44).
105) Polarization (p. 288).

106) Polarity (pp. 287-88).
107) Another example of polarity in Hæckel (pp. 277-78).
108) Valuable self-criticism of the Kantian *thing-in-itself* (p. 321).
109) When Hegel makes the transition from life to cognition . . . (p. 406).

### *1881-1882*

110) Heat (pp. 145-50).

### *1882*

111) Cognition (pp. 317-18).
112) [On the Classification of Judgements] (pp. 296-99).
113) Individuality, particularity, universality (pp. 299-300).
114) Above, however, it has also been proved . . . (p. 299).
115) Hofmann . . . cites the philosophy of nature (p. 276).
116) Electricity (pp. 151-227).

### *1885*

117) On the Prototypes of the Mathematical Infinite in the Real World (pp. 352-60).
118) On the "Mechanical" Conception of Nature (pp. 332-38).

### *1886*

119) Omitted from "Feuerbach" (pp. 262-68).

# BIBLIOGRAPHY

A

*Alembert, d', Traité de dynamique, dans lequel les lois de l'équilibre et du mouvement des corps sont réduites au plus petit nombre possible, et démontrées d'une manière nouvelle, et où l'on donne un principe général pour trouver le mouvement de plusieurs corps qui agissent les uns sur les autres, d'une manière quelconque.* Paris, David l'aîné, 1743.—118-23.

*Allman, G. J., Recent Progress in Our Knowledge of the Ciliate Infusoria. Nature,* June 17, 1875 (Vol. XII, No. 294), June 24, 1875 (Vol. XII, No. 295) and July 1, 1875 (Vol. XII, No. 296).—398.

*Aristoteles, Metaphysica.* (Text quoted in Greek.) All quotations taken from Tauchnitz edition: *Aristotelis opera omnia graece.* Vol. II: Metaphysica. Ad optimorum librorum fidem accurate edita. Editio stereotypa C. Tauchnitii. Lipsiae 1831.—254-55.

B

*Bossut, Charles, Traités de calcul différentiel et de calcul intégral.* 2 vols. Tome premier. Paris, de l'imprimerie de la République, An VI [1798].—348-50.

*Büchner, Louis, Kraft und Stoff.* Empirisch-naturphilosophische Studien in allgemeinverständlicher Darstellung, 7-te Auflage. Leipzig, Theodor Thomas, 1862.—271.

C

*Carnot, S., Réflexions sur la puissance motrice du feu et sur les machines propres à développer cette puissance,* Paris, Bachelier, 1824.—66, 150, 303-04.

*Clausius, R., Die mechanische Wärmetheorie.* 2-te Auflage, I Bd.: Entwickelung der Theorie, soweit sie sich aus den beiden Hauptsätzen ableiten lässt, nebst Anwendungen. Braunschweig, Friedrich Vieweg und Sohn, 1876.—135, 146, 287.

*Clausius, R., Ueber den zweiten Hauptsatz der mechanischen Wärmetheorie.* Ein Vortrag, gehalten in einer allgemeinen Sitzung der 41. Versammlung deutscher Naturforscher und Aerzte zu Frankfurt a. M. am 23. September 1867. Braunschweig, Friedrich Vieweg und Sohn, 1867.—361, 374-77.

*Croll, James, Climate and Time in Their Geological Relations; a Theory of Secular Changes of the Earth's Climate.* London, Daldy, Isbister, and Co., 1875. Reviewed by J. F. B. in *Nature*, vol. XII, Nos. 294 and 295, June 17 and 24, 1875.—398.

*Crookes, William, The Last of "Katie King."* Printed in the London weekly *The Spiritualist Newspaper* on June 5, 1874.—77.

## D

*D'Alembert* see *Alembert.*

*Darwin, Charles, The Origin of Species by Means of Natural Selection, or the Preservation of Favoured Races in the Struggle for Life.* London 1859.—42, 293, 402-04.

*Davies, Charles Maurice, Mystic London, or Phases of Occult Life in the Metropolis.* London, Tinsley Brothers, 1875. —77-78, 82.

*Diogenes Laertius, De vitis, dogmatibus et apophthegmatibus clarorum philosophorum libri decem* (text quoted in Greek). All quotations taken from the Tauchnitz edition: "Diogenis Laertii de vitis philosophorum libri decem cum indice rerum." Ad optimorum librorum fidem accurate editi. Editio stereotypa C. Tauchnitii. Tomus I-II. Lipsiae 1833. (English translation: *Diogenes, Laertius, Lives of Eminent Philosophers.* Two volumes. London Classical Library, London 1925.—60, 255.

*Draper, John William, History of the Intellectual Development of Europe.* In two volumes. London, Bell and Daldy, 1864.—53, 306.

## E

*"Echo"* (London) June 8, 1871.—75.

*Engels, Friedrich, Herrn Eugen Dühring's Umwälzung der Philosophie.* In the newspaper *Vorwärts* (Leipzig, Druck und Verlag der Genossenschaftsbuchdruckerei) for 1877.—55, 332.

*Engels, Friedrich, Herrn Eugen Dühring's Umwälzung der Wissenschaft. Philosophie. Politische Oekonomie. Sozialismus.* Leipzig, Druck und Verlag der Genossenschaftsbuchdruckerei, 1878.—332, 352, 353.

F

*Feuerbach, Ludwig, Die Unsterblichkeitsfrage vom Standpunkt der Anthropologie* (1846). Ludwig Feuerbach's *Sämmtliche Werke.* III. Band. Leipzig, Otto Wigand, 1847. —267.

*Fick, Adolf, Die Naturkräfte in ihrer Wechselbeziehung.* Populäre Vorträge. Würzburg, Stahel, 1869.—378.

*Fourier, Jean Baptiste Joseph, Théorie analytique de la chaleur.* Paris 1822.—66, 274.

G

*Galiani, Ferdinando, Della moneta* (1750). Quoted from the edition of Custodi: Scrittori classici italiani di economia politica. Parte moderna. Tomo III. Milano, Destefanis, 1803.—315.

*Grove, W. R., The Correlation of Physical Forces.* 3rd edition. London, Longman, Brown, Green, and Longmans, 1855.—40, 307, 325, 328.

*Guthrie, Frederick, Magnetism and Electricity.* London and Glasgow, William Collins, Sons, and Company, 1876. —383.

H

*Hæckel, Ernst, Anthropogenie oder Entwickelungsgeschichte des Menschen.* Gemeinverständliche wissenschaftliche Vorträge über die Grundzüge der menschlichen Keimes-und Stammes-Geschichte, Leipzig, Wilh. Engelmann, 1874.—276-77, 401.

*Hæckel, Ernst, Freie Wissenschaft und freie Lehre.* Eine Entgegnung auf Rud. Virchow's Münchener Rede über "Die Freiheit der Wissenschaft im modernen Staat." Stuttgart, Schweizerbart, 1878.—28.

*Hæckel, Ernst, Generelle Morphologie der Organismen.* Allgemeine Grundzüge der organischen Formenwissenschaft, mechanisch begründet durch die von Charles Darwin reformierte Deszendenz-Theorie. Zwei Bände. Berlin, Georg Reimer, 1866. —46, 388, 401.

*Hæckel, Ernst, Natürliche Schöpfungsgeschichte.* Gemeinverständliche wissenschaftliche Vorträge über die Entwickelungslehre im All-

gemeinen und diejenige von Darwin, Goethe und Lamarck im Besonderen. 4-te verbesserte Auflage. Berlin, Georg Reimer, 1873.—275, 277, 300-01, 398-401.

*Hæckel, Ernst, Die Perigenesis der Plastidule oder die Wellenzeugung der Lebensteilchen.* Ein Versuch zur mechanischen Erklärung der elementaren Entwickelungs-Vorgänge. Berlin, Georg Reimer, 1876.—333, 360.

*Hegel, G. W. F., Werke.* Vollständige Ausgabe durch einen Verein von Freunden des Verewigten: Ph. Marheineke, J. Schulze, Ed. Gans, Lp. v. Henning, H. Hotho, K. Michelet, F. Förster. Berlin, Duncker und Humblot.

Bd. II: *Phänomenologie des Geistes.* Hrsg. v. Johann Schulze. 2-te unveränderte Auflage. Berlin 1841.—294.

Bd. III: *Wissenschaft der Logik.* Hrsg. v. Leopold v. Henning. 1. Teil. Die objektive Logik. 1. Abt. Die Lehre vom Sein. 2-te unveränderte Auflage. Berlin 1841.—88, 294, 314-15, 325, 342, 346.

Bd. IV: *Wissenschaft der Logik.* 1. Teil. Die objektive Logik. 2. Abt. Die Lehre vom Wesen. 2-te unveränderte Auflage, Berlin 1841.—108, 274, 320, 406.

Bd. V: *Wissenschaft der Logik*: 2. Teil. Die subjektive Logik, oder: Die Lehre vom Begriff. 2-te unveränderte Auflage, Berlin 1841.—278, 296-302, 321, 331, 336, 406.

English translation: *Science of Logic*, 2 volumes, London, Allen and Unwin, 1929.

Bd. VI: *Enzyklopädie der philosophischen Wissenschaften im Grundrisse.* 1. Teil. Die Logik. Hrsg. v. Leopold v. Henning. 2-te Auflage, Berlin 1843.—87, 270, 273, 274, 283, 284, 304, 313, 319-20, 322, 338, 387.

English translation: *The Logic of Hegel.* Translated by W. Wallace, 2nd edition, Oxford, Clarendon Press, 1892.

Bd. VII: *Erste Abteilung*: *Vorlesungen über die Naturphilosophie*, als der Enzyklopädie der philosophischen Wissenschaften im Grundrisse zweiter Teil. Hrsg. v. K. L. Michelet. Berlin 1842.—153, 154 317, 325, 363, 373, 379-80.

Bd. XIII: *Vorlesungen über die Geschichte der Philosophie.* Hrsg. v. K. L. Michelet. Erster Band. Berlin 1833.—108, 249-55.

Bd. XV: *Vorlesungen über die Geschichte der Philosophie.* Hrsg. v. K. L. Michelet. Dritter Band. Berlin 1836.—277.

*Helmholtz, H., Populäre wissenschaftliche Vorträge.* Zweites Heft. Braunschweig, Friedrich Vieweg und Sohn, 1871.—28, 100-15, 116, 133-34.

*Helmholtz, H., Ueber die Erhaltung der Kraft.* Eine physikalische Abhandlung, vorgetragen in der Sitzung der physikalischen Gesellschaft zu Berlin am 23. Juli 1847. Berlin, Georg Reimer, 1847.—95, 105, 124, 133, 134.

*Hofmann, August Wilhelm, Ein Jahrhundert chemischer Forschung unter dem Schirme der Hohenzollern.* Rede zur Gedächtnisfeier des Stifters der Kgl. FriedrichWilhelms Universität zu Berlin am 3. August 1881 in der Aula der Universität gehalten. Berlin, G. Vogt, 1881.—276.

*Huxley, T. H., A Letter to the Council of the London Dialectical Society.* First published in the newspaper *Daily News*, October 17, 1871. Reprinted in Davies, *Mystic London* (London 1875), p. 389. —82.

K

*Kant, I., Allgemeine Naturgeschichte und Theorie des Himmels, oder Versuch von der Verfassung und dem mechanischen Ursprunge des ganzen Weltgebäudes, nach Newton'schen Grundsätzen abgehandelt.* 1755. In Immanuel Kant's *Sämmtliche Werke.* In chronologischer Reihenfolge hrsg. v. G. Hartenstein. Erster Band. Leipzig, Leopold Voss, 1867.—37.

*Kant, I., Gedanken von der wahren Schätzung der lebendigen Kräfte und Beurteilung der Beweise, deren sich Herr von Leibnitz und andere Mechaniker in dieser Streitsache bedienet haben, nebst einigen vorhergehenden Betrachtungen, welche die Kraft der Körper überhaupt betreffen.* In Immanuel Kant's *Sämmtliche Werke.* In chronologischer Reihenfolge hrsg. v. G. Hartenstein. Erster Band. Leipzig, Leopold Voss, 1867. —95, 118.

*Kant, I., Untersuchung der Frage, ob die Erde in ihrer Umdrehung um die Achse, wodurch sie die Abwechselung des Tages und der Nacht hervorbringt, einige Veränderung seit den ersten Zeiten ihres Ursprunges erlitten habe und woraus man sich ihrer versichern könne.* 1754. In Immanuel Kant's *Sämmtliche Werke.* In chronologischer Reihenfolge hrsg. v. G. Hartenstein. Erster Band. Leipzig, Leopold Voss, 1867.—140-42.

*Kekulé, August, Die wissenschaftlichen Ziele und Leistungen der Chemie.* Rede gehalten beim Antritt des Rectorats der Rheinischen Friedrich-Wilhelms-Universität am 18. October 1877. Bonn, Max Cohen und Sohn (Fr. Cohen), 1878.—60, 332.

*Kirchhoff, Gustav, Vorlesungen über mathematische Physik. Mechanik.* Leipzig, B.G.Teubner, 1876.—124, 132, 135.

*Kohlrausch, F., Das elektrische Leitungsvermögen der wässerigen Lösungen von den Hydraten und Salzen der leichten Metalle, sowie von Kupfervitriol, Zinkvitriol und Silbersalpeter.* In *Annalen der Physik und Chemie*, Neue Folge, Band VI, Heft 1 und 2. Hrsg. v. G. Wiedemann. Leipzig, J. A. Barth, 1879 (January and February issues).—184.

*Kopp, Hermann, Die Entwickelung der Chemie in der neueren Zeit.* Erste Abteilung: Die Entwickelung der Chemie vor und durch Lavoisier. München, R. Oldenbourg, 1871.—385.

L

[*Лавров, П. Л.*] *Опыт истории мысли.* Том первый. С.-Петербург 1875.—374, 378.

*Laplace, P. S., Traité de Méchanique Celeste.* 5 vols. Paris, I. B. M. Duprat, 1796.—44, 322.

*Leibnizens* und *Huyghens' Briefwechsel mit Papin*, nebst der Biographie Papin's und einigen zugehörigen Briefen und Actenstücken. Bearbeitet und auf Kosten der Preussischen Akademie der Wissenschaften herausgegeben von Dr. Ernst Gerland. Berlin, Verlag der Akademie der Wissenschaften, 1881.—149.

*Lubbock, John, Ants, Bees, and Wasps; a record of observations on the social hymenoptera.* London, Kegan Paul, Trench, and Co., 1882. Reviewed by George J. Romanes in *Nature*, vol. XXVI, No. 658, June 8, 1882.—317.

M

*Mädler, J. H., Der Wunderbau des Weltalls, oder populäre Astronomie.* 5-te, gänzlich neu bearbeitete Auflage. Berlin, Carl Heymann, 1861.—37, 255, 362-66, 378.

*Marx, Karl, Das Kapital.* Kritik der politischen Oekonomie. I. Band. Buch I: Der Produktionsprozess des Kapitals. 2-te Auflage. Hamburg, Otto Meissner. 1872.—65-66.

*Maxwell, J. Clerk, Theory of Heat.* 4th edition. London, Longmans, Green, and Co., 1875.—133, 135, 378.

*Mayer, J. R., Die Mechanik der Wärme*, in *Gesammelten Schriften.* 2-te umgearbeitete und vermehrte Auflage. Stuttgart, Cotta, 1874.—105, 298, 367, 369.

*Meyer, Lothar, Die Natur der chemischen Elemente als Funktion ihrer Atomgewichte.* In *Annalen der Chemie und Pharmacie*, hrsg. und redigiert von Friedrich Wöhler, Justus Liebig und Hermann Kopp. VII. Supplementband, 3. Heft. Leipzig und Heidelberg, C. F. Winter, 1870.—335.

N

*Nägeli, C. v., Die Schranken der naturwissenschaftlichen Erkenntnis.* In "Tageblatt der 50. Versammlung deutscher Naturforscher und Aerzte in München 1877." Beilage, September 1877. Zweite allgemeine Sitzung am 20. September 1877. Druck der Akademischen Buchdruckerei von F. Straub in München. — 57, 308-14.

*Nature*, A weekly illustrated journal of science. Macmillan and Co., London and New York.

*Vol. XVII*, No. 420, November 15, 1877, p. 55.— a notice of Kekulé's speech in Bonn University.—333.

*Vol. XXVI*, No. 659, June 15, 1882, p. 148—a footnote about Wiedemann's book in the review by G. C. of *Leçons sur l'électricité et le magnétisme* by Mascart et Joubert, Paris 1882.—151.

*Naumann, Alexander, Handbuch der allgemeinen und physikalischen Chemie.* Heidelberg, Carl Winter's Universitätsbuchhandlung, 1877. —135, 169, 213.

*Nicholson, Henry Alleyne, A Manual of Zoology.* Edinburgh and London, Blackwood, 1870. 2nd edition, 1871.—399.

O

*Owen, Richard, On the Nature of Limbs.* A discourse delivered on Friday, February 9, at an evening meeting of the Royal Institution of Great Britain. London, John van Voorst, 1849.—274-75.

R

*Roscoe, H. E.* und *Schorlemmer, C., Ausführliches Lehrbuch der Chemie.* Bd. II: Die Metalle und Spectralanalyse.

Braunschweig, Friedrich Vieweg und Sohn, 1879.—90.

S

*Secchi, P. A., Die Sonne.* Die wichtigeren neuen Entdeckungen über ihren Bau, ihre Strahlungen, ihre Stellung im Weltall und ihr Verhältnis zu den übrigen Himmelskörpern. Autorisierte deutsche Ausgabe. Hrsg. durch Dr. H. Schellen. Braunschweig, George Westermann, 1872.—50, 363-67, 379.

*Starcke, C. N., Ludwig Feuerbach.* Stuttgart, Ferd. Enke, 1885.—267.

*Suter, Heinrich, Geschichte der mathematischen Wissenschaften.* Zweiter Teil:Vom Anfange des XVII. bis gegen das Ende des XVIII. Jahrhunderts. Zürich, Orell Füssli und Co., 1875.—118-23, 127.

T

*Tait, P. G., Force.* Evening lecture at the Glasgow meeting of the British Association, Sept. 8. In *Nature*, September 21, 1876 (vol. XIV, No. 360).—132.

*Thomson, Thomas, An Outline of the Sciences of Heat and Electricity.* 2nd edition, remodelled and much enlarged. London, H. Baillière, 1840. —150, 153, 154, 276, 379-82.

*Thomson, William, On the Secular Cooling of the Earth.* First published in *Transactions of the Royal Society of Edinburgh*, vol. XXIII, Edinburgh 1862. Reprinted in *Thomson* and *Tait, Treatise on Natural Philosophy*, vol. I, Oxford 1867, Appendix D, pp. 711-727.—234.

*Thomson, William, The Size of Atoms.* First published in *Nature* March 31, 1870 (vol. I, No. 22). Reprinted in *Thomson* and *Tait, Treatise on Natural Philosophy*, vol. I, 2nd edition, 1883, Appendix F.—354-55.

*Thomson, Sir William* and *Tait, Peter Guthrie, Treatise on Natural Philosophy.* Vol. I, Oxford, Clarendon Press, 1867.—123, 135, 137-44.

*Tyndall, John*, "Inaugural address, delivered at the forty-fourth annual meeting of the British Association for the Advancement of Science at Belfast. In *Nature*, August 20, 1874 (vol. X, No. 251). —269.

*Tyndall, John, On the Optical Deportment of the Atmosphere in Reference to the Phenomena of Putrefaction and Infection.* Abstract of a paper read before the Royal Society, January 13th, by Prof. Tyndall, F.R.S. (Communicated by the author). In *Nature*, January 27, 1876 (vol. XIII, No. 326) and February 3, 1876 (vol. XIII, No. 327).—398.

V

*Virchow, Rudolf, Die Freiheit der Wissenschaft im modernen Staat.* Rede gehalten in der dritten allgemeinen Sitzung der fünfzigsten Versammlung deutscher Naturforscher und Aerzte zu München am 22. September 1877. Berlin, Wiegandt, Hempel und Parey (Paul Parey), 1877. —28, 57.

*Virchow, Rudolf, Die Zellularpathologie in ihrer Begründung auf physiologische und pathologische Gewebelehre.* 4-te Auflage. Berlin, Hirschwald, 1871. — 272.

W

*Wagner, Moriz, Naturwissenschaftliche Streitfragen,* I: Justus v. Liebigs Ansichten über den Lebensursprung und die Deszendenztheorie. In: Beilage zur *Allgemeinen Zeitung*, Augsburg, J. G. Cotta'sche Buchhandlung, 1874, Nr. 279, 6. Oktober, S. 4333-4335; Nr. 280, 7. Oktober, S. 4351-4352; Nr. 281, 8. Oktober, S. 4370-4372. — 390-94.

*Wallace, Alfred Russel, On Miracles and Modern Spiritualism.* Three essays. London, James Burns, 1875. —69-75, 77.

*Whewell, William, History of the Inductive Sciences, from the Earliest to the Present Times.* 3 vols. London 1837.—301.

*Whewell, William, The Philosophy of the Inductive Sciences, Founded Upon Their History.* 2 vols. London, John W. Parker, 1840.—301.

*Wiedemann, Gustav, Die Lehre vom Galvanismus und Elektromagnetismus.* 2-te Auflage, 2 B-de. Braunschweig, Friedrich Vieweg und Sohn, 1872, 1873, 1874. Bd. I: Galvanismus. Bd. II, Abt. 1: Elektrodynamik, Elektromagnetismus und Diamagnetismus. Bd. II, Abt. 2: Induktion und Schlusskapitel.—151-227, 352, 384.

*Wolf, Rudolf, Geschichte der Astronomie*, München, Oldenbourg, 1877.—255, 367.

*Wundt, Wilhelm, Lehrbuch der Physiologie des Menschen.* Dritte völlig umgearbeitete Auflage. Erlangen, Ferdinand Enke, 1873.—399.

# NAME INDEX

A

Adams, John (1819-1892)—367.
Agassiz, Louis John Rudolph (1807-1873)—262, 269, 275.
Aksakov, Alexander Nikolayevich (1832-1903)—78.
Alembert, d', Jean le Rond (1717-1783)—118-23, 131.
Allman, George James (1812-1898)—398.
Anaximander of Miletos (c. 611-547 B. C. )—250-51.
Anaximenes of Miletos (c. 588-524 B. C.)—251, 253.
Archimedes of Siracusa (c. 287-212 B. C.)—247.
Aristarchus of Samos (320-250 B. C.)—255.
Aristotle (384-322 B. C.)—59, 249-55, 271, 276, 318.
Augustinus Aurelius (354-430)—290.
Auwers, Arthur (1838-1915)—366.

B

Bacon, Francis (1561-1626)—62, 63, 68, 368.
Baer, Karl Ernst von (1792-1876)—42, 262.
Bauer, Bruno (1809-1882)—185.
Becquerel, Antoine Cesar (1788-1878)—210, 213.
Beetz, Wilhelm (1822-1886)—212.
Berthelot, Pierre Eugène Marcelin (1827-1907)—204.
Bessel, Friedrich Wilhelm (1784-1846)—363,366.
Boltzmann, Ludwig (1844-1906)—160.
Bossut, Charles (1730-1814)—350.
Boyle, Robert (1627-1691)—249, 368-69.
Bradley, James (1693-1762)—362.
Bruno, Giordano (1548-1600)—32,260.
Buch, Christian Leopold von (1774-1853)—393.
Büchner, Ludwig (1824-1899)—60, 61, 270, 273.
Butlerov, Alexander Mikhailovich (1828-1886)—78.

C

Calvin, Jean (1509-1564)—32, 290.
Carnot, Nicolas Leonard Sadi (1796-1832)—66, 150, 303.
Cassini, Jacques (1677-1756)—276.

Cassini, Cesar François (1714-1784)—276.

Catelan (second half of XVII century)—122.

Charles the Great (742-814)—257.

Cicero, Marcus Tullius (106-43 B. C.)—250.

Clapeyron, Benois Paul Emile (1799-1864)—150.

Clausius, Rudolf (1822-1888)—28, 128, 135, 136, 145, 146, 150, 287, 324, 361, 369, 374-77.

Cohn, Ferdinand Julius (1828-1898)—392.

Colding, Ludwig August (1815-1888)—105, 130, 264, 298.

Columbus, Christopher (c.1446-1506)—243.

Comte, Auguste (1798-1857)—27, 331.

Copernicus, Nikolaus(1473-1543)—32, 36, 260.

Coulomb, Charles Augustin (1736-1806)—380.

Croll, James (1821-1890)—398.

Crookes, William (1832-1919)—75-82.

Cuvier, Georges (1769-1832)—39, 249, 262.

D

Dalton, John (1766-1844)—40, 60, 152, 385.

Daniell, John Frederic (1790-1845)—199, 212, 216, 221.

Darwin, Charles (1809-1882)—42, 49, 69, 228, 231, 239, 262, 265, 292, 293, 337, 393, 402, 403, 404.

Davies, Charles Maurice (1828-1910)—78.

Davy, Humpfrey (1778-1829)—276.

Democritus (c. 460-370 B.C.)—60, 254, 255.

Descartes, René (1596-1650)—33, 40, 60, 94, 105, 117, 118, 159, 325, 341, 367, 369.

Dessaignes, Victor (1800-1885)—153, 381.

Diogenes Laertius (approximately the first half of the III century)—60, 251, 253-55.

Döllinger, Ignaz (1799-1890)—82.

Draper, John William (1811-1882)—53, 306.

Du Bois-Reymond, Emil Heinrich (1818-1896)—28, 210.

Dühring, Eugen (1833-1921)—55, 56, 57, 64.

Dürer, Albrecht (1471-1528)—31.

E

Euclid (beginning of the III century B.C.)—32.

Edlund, Eric (1819-1888)—158.

Epicurus (c. 341-270 B. C.)—60, 255.

F

Fabroni, Giovanni Valentino (1752-1822)—382.

Faraday, Michael (1791-1867

—153, 154, 158, 159, 196, 199, 276, 380, 382.
Favre, Pierre Antoine (1813-1880)—158, 163, 165, 202, 203.
Fechner, Gustav Theodor (1801-1887)—155, 166, 167, 210, 213.
Feuerbach, Ludwig (1804-1872) —64, 263, 267, 268.
Fichte, Johann Gottlieb (1762-1814)—320.
Fick, Adolf (1829-1901)—378, 407.
Flamsteed, John (1646-1719) —362.
Fourier, Jean Baptiste Joseph (1768-1830)—66, 274.
Frederick William III (1770-1840)—269.

G

Galilei, Galileo (1564-1642)—116, 249, 260, 361.
Gall, Franz Joseph (1758-1828) —69, 70, 71, 72.
Gassiot John Peter (1797-1877) —169.
Gerland, Ernst (1838-1910)—149.
Goethe, Johann Wolfgang von (1749-1832)—300, 319.
Gramme, Zénobe Théophile (1826-1901)—161.
Grimm, Jakob Ludwig Karl (1785-1863)—288.
Grove, William Robert (1811-1896)—40, 169, 203, 216, 262, 307, 325, 328.
Guido Aretino (d'Arezzo) (990-1050)—258.
Guthrie, Frederick (1833-1886) —383.

H

Hall, Spencer (1812-1885)—69, 70.
Haller, Albrecht (1708-1777)—319.
Halley, Edmund (1656-1742)—362.
Hæckel, Ernst (1834-1919)—28, 275, 276, 277, 300, 301, 303, 333, 336, 338, 360, 398-402.
Hankel, Wilhelm Gottlieb (1814-1899)—158.
Hartmann, Eduard (1842-1906) —61.
Harvey, William (1578-1657) —249.
Hauer, Franz (1822-1899)—393.
Hegel, Georg Friedrich Wilhelm (1770-1831)—27, 37, 59, 63-67, 83-90, 107, 108, 153, 154, 158, 201, 249-53, 271-78, 283-85, 292, 294-300, 307, 313-15, 317-25, 331, 336-38, 342, 346, 352, 359, 360, 363, 369, 373, 379, 387, 402, 406.
Heine, Heinrich (1797-1856)—85.
Helmholtz, Hermann (1821-1894)—28, 94, 95, 99-115, 116, 118, 124, 128, 133, 134, 156, 207, 318, 369, 374, 390, 396.
Henrici, Friedrich Christoph (1795-1885)—210.

Heraclitus (c. 535-475 B.C.) —251.

Hero of Alexandria (2nd century B.C.)—148.

Herschel I, William (1738-1822) —38, 363, 365-67.

Herschel II, John (1792-1871) —365.

Hipparchus of Nicaea (2nd century B.C.)—362.

Hobbes, Thomas (1588-1679) —404.

Hofmann, August-Wilhelm (1818-1892)—276.

Huggins, William (1824-1910) —366.

Humboldt, Alexander (1769-1859)—262.

Hume, David (1711-1776)—28, 305.

Huxley Thomas Henri (1825-1895)—82.

Huyghens, Christian (1629-1695)—117.

I

Iamblichus (died about 333)—73.

J

Joule, James, Prescott (1818-1889)—40, 105, 130, 158, 165, 212, 263, 298.

K

Kant, Immanuel (1724-1804) —28, 36-38, 41, 42, 61, 63, 64, 95-97, 116, 118, 119, 137, 140-42, 261, 273, 277, 299, 318, 320, 321, 367.

Kekulé von Stradonitz, Friedrich August (1829-1896)—60, 227, 332, 338.

Kepler, Johann (1571-1630)—33, 260.

Ketteler, Wilhelm Emmanuel (1811-1877)—82.

Kinnersley Ebenezer (1711-1778)—381.

Kirchhoff, Gustav Robert (1824-1887)—124, 132, 135.

Klipstein, Philipp Engel (1747-1808)—393.

Kohlrausch, Friedrich Wilhelm (1840-1910)—184, 213, 215-16, 227.

Kopp, Hermann (1817-1892)—385.

L

Lalande, Joseph (1732-1807)—362.

Lamarck, Jean Baptiste (1744-1829)—42, 262, 278, 393.

Laplace, Pierre Simon (1749-1827)—36, 38, 44, 63, 97, 261, 268, 273, 322, 362.

Lavoisier, Antoine Laurent (1743-1794)—40, 67, 385.

Lavrov, Pyotr Lavrovich (1823-1900)—374, 378.

Lecoq de Boisbaudran, Paul Emile (1838-1912)—90.

Leibniz, Gottfried Wilhelm (1646-1716)—33, 116, 117, 119-22, 131, 149, 273, 342.

Leonardo da Vinci (1452-1519)—31.
Le Roux, François (1832-1907)—169.
Lessing, Gotthold Ephraim (1729-1781)—270.
Leucippus of Abdera (V century B. C.)—60, 254.
Leverrier, Urbain Jean Joseph (1811-1877)—91.
Liebig, Justus (1803-1873)—390, 391, 393-95.
Liebknecht, Wilhelm (1826-1900)—55.
Linnaeus, Carolus (1707-1778)—33, 35, 330.
Locke, John (1632-1704)—62.
Loschmidt, Joseph (1821-1895)—28, 376.
Lubbock, John (1834-1913)—317.
Luther, Martin (1483-1546)—31, 32, 260.
Lyell, Charles (1797-1875)—39, 261.

M

Machiavelli, Niccolo (1469-1527)—31.
Mädler, Johann Heinrich (1794-1874)—37, 44, 51, 255, 362-66, 378.
Malthus, Thomas Robert (1766-1834)—403, 404.
Manteuffel, Otto Theodor (1805-1882)—281.
Marggraf, Andreas Sigismund (1709-1782)—276.
Marx, Karl (1818-1883)—65.
Maskelyne, Nevil (1732-1811)—362.
Maxwell, Clerk (1831-1879)—133, 135, 150, 158-60, 249, 378.
Mayer, Julius Robert (1814-1878)—40, 105, 263, 298, 367, 369.
Meyer, Lothar (1830-1895)—227, 335.
Mendeleyev, Dmitri Ivanovich (1834-1907)—90.
Moleschott, Jakob (1822-1893)—270.
Molière, Jean Baptiste (1622-1673)—91.
Montalembert, Marc René (1714-1800)—31.
Münster, Georg (1776-1844)—393.
Murray, Lindley (1745-1826)—73.

N

Nägeli, Karl Wilhelm (1817-1891)—28, 57, 308-14.
Naumann, Alexander (1837-1922)—135, 169, 213.
Napier, John (1550-1617)—33.
Neumann, Carl Gottfried (1832-1925)—156.
Newcomen, Thomas (1663-1729)—149.
Newton, Isaac (1642-1727)—33, 35-37, 68, 97, 260, 269, 273, 276, 330, 342, 361, 362, 368, 379.
Nicolai, Christoph Friedrich (1733-1811)—270.

Nicholson, Henry Alleyne (1844-1899)—399, 400, 407.

O

Ohm, Georg Simon (1787-1854)—166, 167.
Oken, Lorenz (1779-1851)—42, 273, 275.
Olbers, Heinrich Wilhelm (1758-1840)—364.
Orbigny, d', Alcide Dessalin (1802-1857)—393.
Owen, Richard (1804-1892)—275.

P

Paganini, Niccolo (1784-1840)—230.
Papin, Denis (1647-1714)—149.
Pasteur, Louis (1822-1895)—389.
Perty, Joseph Anton Maximilian (1804-1884)—392.
Pliny the Elder (Gaius Plinius Secundus) (about 24-79 A.D.)—276.
Plutarch (about 48-120 A.D.)—251.
Poggendorff, Johann Christian (1796-1877)—199, 220, 221.
Polo, Marco (1254-1324)—257.
Priestley, Joseph (1733-1804)—66, 311.
Ptolemy, Claudius (about 150 A. D.)—33.
Pythagoras of Samos (about 571-497 B. C.)—250, 252, 253, 338.

Q

Quenstedt, Friedrich August (1809-1889)—393.

R

Raphael, Santi (1483-1520)—230.
Raoult, François Marie (1830-1901)—158, 165, 212.
Renault, Bernard (1836-1904)—198, 199.
Reynard, François (born in 1805)—159.
Ritter, Johann Wilhelm (1776-1810)—165.
Roscoe, Henry Enfield (1833-1915)—90.
Rosenkranz, Johann Karl Friedrich (1805-1879)—276.
Rosse, William (1800-1867)—365, 367.
Ruhmkorff, Heinrich Daniel (1803-1877)—384.

S

Saint-Simon, Claude Henri (1760-1825)—27, 37, 331.
Savery, Thomas (c. 1650-1715)—149.
Schleiden, Mattias Jakob (1804-1881)—264.
Schmidt, Eduard Oskar (1823-1886)—28.
Schopenhauer, Arthur (1788-1860)—61.
Schorlemmer, Karl (1834-1892)—90, 272.

GANDHI SMARAKA GRANTHALAYA
BANGALORE-1.

Schwann, Theodor (1810-1882) —264.
Secchi, Angelo (1818-1878)—44, 50, 52, 269, 363, 365-67, 379.
Servetus, Michael (1511-1553) —32, 259.
Siemens, Werner (1816-1892)—161.
Silbermann, Johann (1806-1865) —203.
Smee, Alfred (1818-1877)—163.
Snell van Roijen, Willebrord (1591-1626)—367.
Solon (VI century B. C.)—273.
Spencer, Herbert (1820-1903)—**340.**
Spinoza, Baruch or Benedict, de (1632-1677)—36, 269,270, 307.
Starcke, Carl Nikolaus (1858-1926)—268.
Strauss, David Friedrich (1808-1874)—185.
Suter, Heinrich (1848-1922)—118-19, 122, 127, 131.

T

Tait, Peter Guthrie (1831-1901) —123, 124, 132, 135, 137, 141, 142.
Thales of Miletos (about 624-534 B. C.)—108, 250, 253.
Thomsen, Julius (1826-1909)—176, 191, 200.
Thomson, Thomas (1773-1852) —150, 153, 154, 276, 379-82.
Thomson, William (1824-1907) —123, 135, 137, 141, 142, 354, 376, 390.
Thorwaldsen, Bertel (1768-1844) —230.
Torricelli, Evangelista (1608-1647)—33.
Traube, Moriz (1826-1894)—397.
Tyndall, John (1820-1893)—269, 398.

V

Varley Cromwell Fleetwood (1828-1883)—76.
Virchow, Rudolf (1821-1902)—28, 57, 80, 272.
Volta, Alessandro (1745-1827) —164, 165, 218.
Voltaire, François Marie Arouet (1694-1778)—270.
Vogt, Karl (1817-1895)—60, 61, 270.
Volckman —75-77.

W

Wagner, Moriz (1813-1887)—390-94.
Wallace, Alfred Russel (1823-1913)—69-75, 77, 79-82.
Watt, James (1736-1819)—149.
Weber, Wilhelm Eduard (1804-1891)—155, 156.
Whewell, William (1794-1866) —301.
Wheatstone, Charles (1802-1875) —212.
Whitworth, Joseph (1803-1887) —129.

Wiedemann, Gustav (1826-1899) —151, 156, 162, 165-67, 169-77, 180, 182-92, 195-99, 203, 206, 208-11, 214, 216, 218, 220, 225, 226, 352, 384.
Wilke, Christian Gottlieb (1788-1854)—185.
Winterl, Jakob Joseph (1732-1809)—381.
Wislicenus, Johann (1835-1902) —407.
Wöhler, Friedrich (1800-1882) —266.
Wolf, Rudolf (1816-1893)—255, 367.
Wolff, Caspar Friedrich (1733-1794)—42.
Wolff, Christian (1679-1754) —36, 62, 292.
Wollaston, William Hyde (1766-1828)—382.
Worm-Müller, Jakob (1834-1889)—210, 211.
Wundt, Wilhelm Max (1832-1920)—399.

Z

Zöllner, Johann Karl Friedrich (1834-1882)—78,79.

# SUBJECT INDEX

A

*Abstraction*:
—Development of power of abstraction and labour—234.
—Power of abstraction among animals and men—295-96.
—Abstract and concrete—295.
—Mathematical abstractions—304, 349, 355-56, 359.
—Impossibility of knowing abstractions through the senses—312.
—Significance of abstract thought—307.
*Action and reaction*—107, 110-11.
*Adaptation*:
—of organisms to the changing environment—39.
—Conflict between heredity and adaptation—280, 402, 403.
*Aggregation*, states of—85, 86, 99, 202, 307, 376.
*Alchemy*—33-34, 248.
*Algebra*—33, 346, 348, 354.
*Amœba*—396, 399.
*Amphibia*—282, 297, 301, 401-02.
*Amphioxus*—42, 303.
*Analysis*:
—among animals—295, 296.
—Analysis and synthesis—295, 296, 302.
—Induction and analysis—303.
*Anatomy*:
—Elements of comparative method in anatomy—41, 262-64, 293.
*Animal*:
—Sense in which animals have a history—48.
—Production among animals—47, 406.
—Social rudiments among animals—406.
—Ability for planned activity among animals—240.
—Activity of the understanding among animals—295.
—Domestication of animals—147, 237.
*Anthropology*—249.
*Ascidia*—301, 402.
*Astronomy*: 28, 33, 43, 52, 249, 260, 261, 317, 329, 358.
—Ordinary school astronomy—97.
—Indispensability for pastoral and agricultural peoples—247.

*Asymptotes*: 349, 350.
—Cognition of infinite can only take place in an infinite asymptotic progress—311.
*Atheism*—270.
*Atom*:
—Atoms have quite different properties from those of the molecule—85-86.
—Atomic weights—60, 90, 191, 334, 357.
—Atoms are in no wise regarded as simple—357.
—Ether atoms—386.
—Chemical atoms—357, 386.
—In chemistry there is a definite limit to divisibility, beyond which bodies can no longer act chemically—the atom; several atoms are always in combination—the molecule—324.
—Atoms and molecules cannot be observed under the microscope, but only by the process of thought—272.
—Ancient Greek philosophers on atoms—60, 254, 255.
*Atomistics*:
—The new atomistics does not maintain that matter is merely discrete—385-86.
*Attraction*:
—an essential property of matter—35.
—Inseparable from repulsion—323.
—Attraction and repulsion as basic forms of motion—95-114.
—Attraction and repulsion as essence of matter—323.
—Attraction and repulsion not to be regarded as "forces"—95.
—Categories of attraction and repulsion as applied in physics—372.
—On the earth today attraction has already become altogether passive owing to its decisive preponderance over repulsion—107.
—As the passive aspect of motion—376.
—Mechanical attraction—113, 327.
—Physical attraction—113.
—Chemical attraction—112, 113, 280.
—Electro-dynamic attraction—161-162.
—Transformation of attraction into repulsion and *vice versa*—323.
*Axioms*, mathematical—340, 353.

B

*Bacteria*—389, 392.
*Being and thought*—352, 360.
*Biology*:
—Biology as chemistry of proteins—333.
—Biology and French materialism of the 18th century—336.
—Notion of force in biology—115.
—Dialectics in biology—62.

—Transformation of quantity into quality in biology—91.
—Biology and concept of species—293.
—Application of mathematics in biology—360.
*Botany*—34, 42, 247-49, 291, 293.
*Brain*: 54, 238, 278, 335.
—in the ape and human beings —233.
—Meat diet and brain—236-37.
—Evolution of human brain—47.
—Sense organs as most immediate instruments of the brain —233.
—Prehistory of the thinking human brain—265.
—Feuerbach's barren speculations on the relation of thought to the brain—268.

C

*Capitalist mode of production*—245-46, 405.
*Carbon*:
—as essential bearer of organic life—335.
—Sense in which eternity of carbon compounds can be asserted—394.
—Endosmosis and growth possible without carbon—397.
—Homologous series of carbon compounds—88-89.
*Carlovingian period*—288.
*Cartesians*—118, 121, 131.
*Categories*:
—Thought determinations necessary for thought—279.
—Investigation of thought determinations necessary—318.
—Fixed categories of metaphysics, fluid categories of dialectics—271, 272.
—Identity of the forces of nature and their mutual convertibility put an end to all fixity of categories—272.
— of quantity and quality—309-10.
— of positive and negative—280-81.
— of whole and part—283.
— of simple and compound—283.
— of necessity and chance—288-89.
— as an abbreviated expression—371.
—Measurability of motion gives the category of force its value—370.
—Categories from animal kingdom are totally inapplicable to social relations—405.
— of work in thermodynamics, physiology and political economy—407-08.
*Causae finales and causae efficientes*—277, 307, 322, 337.
*Causality*:
—For one who denies causality natural law is a hypothesis—307.

—Activity of human beings establishes the idea of causality and furnishes proof of its necessity—305.
—Dialectical relation between cause and effect—271, 307.
—Identity of cause and effect—369.
—*Cessante causa cessat effectus*—384.
—Substance is *causa sui*—307.
See also *Causae finales and causae efficientes*
*Cell*: 41, 42, 261, 262, 265, 272, 280, 284, 358, 389, 399-401.
—as basic form of almost all organic development—43.
—produced out of shapeless protein—46.
—First cell provided the foundation for the morphological development of the whole organic world—46.
—By means of thought Oken discovered protoplasm and the cell—275.
—Role of the organic cell discovered by Schwann and Schleiden—264.
—Egg-cell—46.
—Development of morphology and physiology made possible by discovery of the cell—249.
—Every cell at every moment of its life identical with itself and yet becoming distinct from itself—284-85.
—Cell with permanent cell membrane—399.
—Union of several cells into one body—400.
—Traube's "artificial cells"—397.
*Chance*:
—summed up in necessity—295.
—Mechanism does not get away from abstract necessity, and hence not from chance either—277-78.
—Two metaphysical conceptions about mutual relation of necessity and chance—288-93.
—Hegel on necessity and chance—292.
—Darwinism and the problem of chance—293, 402.
—Inner connection between necessity and chance—287, 402.
—Necessity is also inherent in chance—52.
—Inconsequent, fortuitous development of earth in Lyell—39.
See also *Necessity.*
*Change*:
—in general—328.
—Continual change, i.e., sublation of abstract identity with itself—285.
—Quantitative and qualitative changes—86-89, 334, 335.
*Chemistry*:
—as physics of atoms—86, 92, 333, 384.
—as science of qualitative changes of bodies resulting

from changed quantitative composition—87-88.
—All chemical equations which express the molecular composition of bodies are in their form differential equations—357.
—In chemistry there is a definite limit to divisibility, beyond which bodies can no longer act chemically—324.
—Reduction of chemical processes to merely mechanical ones unduly restricts the field of chemistry—333.
—Chemistry in which analysis is the predominant form of investigation is nothing without its opposite pole, synthesis—296.
—Geocentric character of our chemistry—314-17.
—Emancipation from alchemy through phlogistic theory—33-34.
—New epoch in chemistry begins with atomistics—385.
—Significance of names in organic chemistry—386.
—Chemistry is approaching closer and closer to the explanation of the origin of life from inorganic nature—266, 330, 339.

*Classes, social*—245, 405.

*Classification of organisms*—41-42, 282, 301-30.

*Classification of sciences*: 27, 92, 329-39.
—Classification of sciences, each of which analyzes a single form of motion, or a series of forms of motion that belong together and pass into one another, is therefore classification of these forms of motion themselves—330.

*Communal ownership of land*—244.

*Competition*—49, 404.

*Concept*:
—Evolution of concepts in history of thought and in the mind of an individual dialectician—295.
—Dialectical thought presupposes investigation of the nature of concepts—296.
—Hegel's "Doctrine of the Notion"—299-300.

*Conclusion*:
—Forms of conclusion—296-301.
—Conclusion polarized into induction and deduction—300-01.

*Concrete*:
—General law of change of form of motion much more concrete than any single "concrete" example of it—295.

*Connection*:
—Whole of nature accessible to us forms an interconnected totality of bodies—93.
—Inter-connection of individual motions of separate bodies—304.

—Universal connection of natural phenomena—62, 306-07.
—General evolutionary connection in nature—331.
—Dialectics as science of universal inter-connection—27, 83.
—In theoretical natural science inter-connections are not to be built into facts but to be discovered in them—64-65.
—Systematization of natural science can be found only in inter-connections of phenomena themselves—338.
*Consciousness*—46, 47, 51, 234, 278, 406.
*Continuity*:
— and discreteness of matter—324, 360, 386.
— and discreteness in mutual relation of sciences—333.
*Contradiction*—38, 98, 186, 203, 225, 272, 360, 362.
—Development through contradiction, or negation of the negation—27.
*Contradictio in adjecto*—219.
*Cosmogony*:
—Kant-Laplace theory of cosmogony—36-38, 44, 63-64, 97-98, 261, 273, 322, 362.
*Critical points*— See *Nodal points*.

D

*Darwinism*—28, 42, 265, 337.
— coming into fashion—270.
— and concept of chance—293, 402.
—Darwin on ancestors of man—228.
See also: *Adaptation*, *Evolution*, *Heredity*, *Natural selection*, *Struggle for existence*.
*Deduction*—295, 300, 301, 302.
—Conclusion polarized into induction and deduction—300.
—Classification as basis of deductive conclusion—301.
*Determinism*—290.
—Mechanical determinism—292.
*Dialectics*:
—as the science of the most general laws of all motion—353.
— as the science of universal inter-connection—27, 83.
—Objective dialectics and subjective dialectics—280.
—Dialectics of the mind is only the reflection of the forms of motion of the real world—271.
—Rational dialectics—67, 272.
—Dialectics divested of mysticism becomes an absolute necessity for natural science—272.
—and the dilemma: "either—or"—281, 282.
—and experience—96.
—as the sole method of thought appropriate in the highest degree to the present stage in the outlook on nature—282.

—Dialectical character of natural processes—61.
—in history—148.
—cannot be despised with impunity—81.
—that has found its way into popular consciousness is expressed in the old saying that "extremes meet"—68.
—reconciles the opposites—282.
—comprehends things in their inter-connection instead of in isolation—351.
—investigated by Aristotle and Hegel—59.
—In *Capital* Marx applied the dialectical method to the facts of political economy—65.
—Fundamental laws of dialectics—27, 83-91, 280-93.
—Dialectical thought is only possible for man—296.
—Dialectics among the ancient Greeks—43, 62, 63, 296.
—Dialectics in German philosophy of the end of the 18th and the beginning of the 19th century—63-67.
*Differential and integral calculus*—33, 273, 341-42, 350-60.
—for the first time makes it possible for natural science to represent motion mathematically—360.
*Discreteness*:
—Discrete parts at various stages—386.
See also *Continuity.*
*Divisibility*:
—Matter is both divisible and continuous—324.
—Every body divisible, in practice, within certain limits—325.

E

*Economics*—See *Political Economy.*
*Electricity*—102, 151-227, 379-84.
—Electricity and magnetism—a twin pair like heat and light—147.
—Static and dynamic electricity—161, 382, 383.
—Ether theory of electricity (Maxwell)—146, 158-60.
See also *Magnetism.*
*Electrolysis*:
—active and passive—189, 195.
*Electro-chemistry*—384.
—Chemico-electric and electro-chemical process—189.
—Interaction between chemism and electricity—224, 226.
—Close connection between chemical and electric action—227.
*Element* (chemical):
—Concept of chemical element absent in antiquity—247.
—Quality of chemical elements determined by quantity of their atomic weights—90.
—Properties of an element not

exhaustively expressed by its position in the Lothar Meyer curve—34-35.
—In nebulæ perhaps there do not exist even those of the 65 elements which are possibly themselves of compound nature—316.
*Embryology*—41, 262, 263, 274, 293.
*Empiricism*:
—English empiricists fall a victim to spiritualism—68-69.
—Methods of empiricism ineffective in the field of theory—58.
—Theory and empiricism—276.
—Empiricists reproduce the blind groping of the ancients in the field of electricity—276.
—Grossest empiricism of home-bred philistine experience in Hegel—379.
—Shallowest empiricism that spurns all theory and distrusts all thought is the most certain path to mysticism—80.
—Mere empiricism is incapable of refuting the spiritualists—82.
—One-sided empiricism which not only thinks incorrectly but is incapable of faithfully pursuing the facts, becomes transformed into the opposite of true empiricism—152.
—Exclusive empiricism operates with obsolete products of thought—185.
—Theory of the absolute qualitative identity of matter can neither be refuted nor proved empirically—335.
—Empiricism of observation alone can never adequately prove necessity—304.
—Empiricist becomes so steeped in the habit of empirical experience, that he believes that he is still in the field of sensuous experience when he is operating with abstractions—312.
*Energy*:
—Law of conservation and transformation of energy—59, 60, 94, 96, 105, 166, 182, 183, 187, 199, 209, 213-15, 226, 263-64, 291, 298-99, 316-17, 368, 369, 374.
—Kinetic energy—135, 142-44, 368.
—Potential energy—86, 128-32, 142-44, 145.
—Dynamic energy—142.
—Molecular energy—143.
—Heat energy—180-83.
—Chemical energy—162-66, 180-82, 186, 202, 206-08, 214-15, 219, 225, 226.
—All energy now active on the earth is transformed heat from the sun—328.
—Inadequacy of the term "energy"—107.

—Identification of energy and motion—84, 132, 264.

—Energy another term for repulsion—98-104, 106, 114.
See also *Vis viva*.

*Entropy*—375.

*Equilibrium*—52, 86, 326-27, 329.

—All equilibrium is only relative and temporary—327.

—Possibility of temporary states of equilibrium is essential condition for differentiation of matter and hence for life—326.

*Essence*:

—and appearance—271.

—Determinations of essence according to Hegel—283.

—Untenability of the idea of unknowable essence of things—319.

—Attraction and repulsion are essence of matter—323.

"*Eternal truth*"—59, 271.

—Eternal laws of nature—See *Law*.

*Ether*:

—only a hypothesis—93, 323, 377.

—its material nature—323.

—Particles of ether—93, 146, 357.

—Atoms of ether—386.

—Continuity of ether—325, 377.

—Ether offers resistance to light—378.

—Mechanics of ether—146.

—Ether theory of electricity—146, 158-60.

*Evolution*:

—Evolution of species—284.

—Theory of evolution for the first time comprehensively worked out and substantiated by Darwin—265.

—Hard and fast lines incompatible with the theory of evolution—282.

—Repetition of morphological forms at all stages of evolution—401.

—Theory of evolution and induction—301, 302, 303.

*Experience*—68, 96, 274, 301, 305, 337, 352, 353, 359. See also *Experiment*, *Empiricism*.

*Experiment*—213, 214, 248, 295, 301, 304.

—*Experimentum crucis*—213.

F

*Falling, law of*—116-18, 354, 361.

*Force*:

—Notion of force is derived from the activity of human organism within its environment—107, 373.

—as active side of motion—107, 370.

—is measured by its manifestation—370.

—When using concept of force, we express not our knowledge,

but our lack of knowledge of the nature of the law and its mode of action—110.
—Terrestrial mechanics—the only science in which one really knows what is meant by a force—111.
—In all branches of investigation which go beyond the mathematical mechanics, notion of force is not susceptible of scientific use—115.
—Vital force—372.
—Wiedemann's confusion about "electric force of separation" and "electromotive force"—206-09, 225-26.
—In every natural science, even in mechanics, it is always an advance if the word "force" can be got rid of—209.
—Inaccuracy of the term "indestructibility of force"—53.
—Forces as immutable "species" of physics, according to the metaphysicians—40.
*Form*:
—Tendency towards form characterizes all protein bodies—398.
—Repetition of morphological forms at all stages of evolution—401.
—Identity or inseparability of form and content in organic nature—401.
*Friction*:
—Friction and impact—126-27, 143, 145, 338, 368, 384.
—Tidal friction—28, 38, 64, 137-44, 367.

G

*Galvanism*—102-03, 161, 164-65, 227.
*Gases:*
—Cohesion in gases—376.
—A permanent gas is an impossibility—376.
—Kinetic theory of gases—377.
*Geocentric standpoint*—314, 316-17.
*Geography*—41, 262.
*Geology*—38-39, 249, 261, 263, 285.
*Geometry*—349, 354.
—Synthetic geometry—351.
—Analytical geometry—33, 287, 346, 348.
*German philosophy of the end of 18th and beginning of 19th century*—63-67, 270, 271, 352.
*Gravitation, gravity*—35, 98, 99, 100, 111, 113, 266, 316, 320, 323, 327, 361.
*Greek philosophy*—30, 35, 43, 60, 62-63, 249-55, 266-67, 294.

H

*Hand*:
—Human hand and that of an ape—229.

—Hand not only the organ of labour but also its product —230.
—All human culture depends on the hand—47.

*Heat*:
—as a form of motion of matter—40, 85, 145-50, 158, 298, 299, 303-07, 370-71.
—as a form of repulsion—101, 113, 323.
—Mechanical equivalent of heat—40, 130, 158, 163-64, 263.
—Mechanical theory of heat—59, 66, 316-17, 407.
—Inadequacy of assertion that heat is a certain displacement of molecules—334.
—Radiant heat—146, 264.
—Untenability of the theory of heat death of the universe—50-54.

*Hegelianism*:
—Not only Hegelianism but dialectics too was thrown overboard—61.
—Helpless degeneration of Berlin Hegelianism—64.

*Heredity*:
—Conflict between heredity and adaptation—280, 402-03.
—Inheritance of acquired characters—353.
—"Self-evidence" of mathematical axioms is inherited —340.
—Heredity and evolution of labour—230.

*History*:
—History of mankind and history of nature—35, 38-39, 83.
—History of animals and history of man—46-49.
—Whole of nature is now merged in history and history is only differentiated from natural history as the evolutionary process of self-conscious organisms—314.
—History of the solar system and earth—real pre-condition for organic nature—330.
—Dialectics in history—148.
—Conception of history as a series of class struggles is much richer in content and deeper than merely reducing it to weakly distinguished phases of the struggle for existence—405.
—Motion through opposites in history—280, 282.
—Untenability of naturalist conception of history—306.

*Hohenzollerns*—276.

*Hypothesis*:
—as form of development of natural science—318-19, 339.
—Hypothesis and law—307-08.
—Two brilliant hypotheses of Kant—63.

I

*Idealism*:
- —Criticism of Hegelian idealism—64-66, 83-84, 271.
- —Between ancient Greeks and us lie more than two thousand years of an essentially idealist outlook on the world—266-67.
- —Origin of the idealist outlook on the world—238-39.
- —Idealism and thing-in-itself—320.

*Identity*:
- —Identity of the forces of nature and their mutual convertibility—272.
- —Identity of thinking and being—360.
- —Identity or inseparability of form and content—401.
- —Dialectical relation of identity and difference—271, 284-87, 351.
- —Untenability of the metaphisical category of abstract identity—284-87.
- —The law of identity in the old metaphysical sense is the fundamental law of the old outlook—285.
- —True, concrete identity includes difference—286.

*Individual*:
- —Notion of the individual in biology is relative—282, 401.
- —Experience of the individual and experience of the genus—353.
- —Parallelism between the human individual and history—274.

*Individuality*—275, 296-301,310.

*Induction*:
- —in men and animals—295.
- —Induction and deduction—300-03.
- —Induction and deduction belong together as necessarily as synthesis and analysis—302.
- —Inductive conclusion is essentially a problematic one—302.
- —With all the induction in the world we would never have got to the point of becoming clear about the process of induction—302.
- —The whole swindle of induction is derived from the Englishmen—301.
- —Bacon's inductive method—68.
- —Induction according to Newton—273.
- —Induction and classification—301-02.
- —Induction and analysis—302.

*Inertia*:
- —only the negative expression of the indestructibility of motion—27.
- —Inertia and rest—373.

*Infinity*:
- —Bad infinity—271-72,311, 314.
- —Infinite progress according to Hegel—314, 315.
- —Infinitely large and infinitely small in mathematics—342.
- —Prototypes of mathematical infinite in the real world—352-60.
- —Finite and infinite in their mutual relation—310-12, 315.
- —Infinite just as much knowable as unknowable—311.

*Infusoria*—388, 398, 400, 407.

*Interaction*—See *Reciprocal Action.*

*Inventions*—256-59.

J

*Judgement*—296-99.
- —Development of power of judgement in man reacted on labour and speech—234.
- —Forms of judgement—296-99, 300, 301.
- —Polarization into induction and deduction—300-301.

K

*Kinetic energy* — See *Vis viva* and *Energy.*

*Kinetic theory of gases*—324,377. See also *Gases.*

*Knowledge, cognition*:
- —All human knowledge develops in a much twisted curve—319.
- —There are no absolute barriers to human knowledge—308-21.
- —We do not need the infinitely numerous universes outside our universe to have knowledge of nature—314.
- —All true knowledge of nature is knowledge of the eternal, the infinite, and hence essentially absolute—310.
- —We can only know under the conditions of our epoch and as far as these allow—320.
- —If we know the forms of motion of matter, we know matter itself, and therewith our knowledge is complete—307.
- —Historical development of knowledge—296-99.
- —All real, exhaustive knowledge consists solely in raising the individual thing in thought from individuality into particularity and from this into universality—310.

L

*Labour*:
- —Differentiation of man through labour—28.
- —Part played by labour in transition from ape to man—228-41.
- —Labour created man himself—228.
- —Labour begins with the making of tools—236.

—Labour as category of political economy—136, 408.
—Division of labour—31, 39.
*Lamarckianism*—278, 393.
*Language*:
—Origin of language from labour—232, 233.
*Law*:
—From hypothesis to law—319.
—For one who denies causality every natural law is a hypothesis—307.
—Law as form of universality—310.
—Law of indestructibility and uncreatability of motion—95.
—Law of conservation and transformation of energy as an absolute law of nature—299.
—Nothing is eternal but eternally changing, eternally moving matter and the laws according to which it moves and changes—54.
—Eternal laws of nature become transformed into historical ones—315-17.
—Law of falling becomes incorrect already in the case of a period of fall of some minutes—361.
—Natural laws according to Helmholtz—108-11.
—In the organic world chemical processes take place according to the same laws, although under different conditions, as in the inorganic world—339.
—Impermissibility of transferring laws of life of animal societies to human society—404-05.
—Laws of thought—58-59, 83, 296-99.
*Law of mutual penetration of opposites*—27, 81, 83, 201, 283-93.
—Conflict of opposites—280.
*Law of negation of negation*—27, 83, 257, 294.
—Development through contradiction, or negation of the negation—27.
*Law of transformation of quantity into quality and vice versa*—27, 83-91, 282, 334, 335, 342-43, 376, 386.
*Leaps*:
—There are no leaps in nature precisely because nature is composed entirely of leaps—358.
*Lepidosiren*—42, 297.
*Life*:
—Organic life as a form of motion of matter—93, 299.
—Life as the mode of existence of protein bodies—396.
—Origin of life from inorganic nature—265.
—Untenability of the theory of "vital force"—272.
—Untenability of the hypothesis of eternal life—394-98.
—Development of organic life to a genus of thinking beings—406.

—Life and death—387.
—Organic life impossible without mechanical, molecular, chemical, etc., changes—328.
*Light*—40, 108-11, 146, 147, 155, 264, 305-07, 329, 338, 357, 364, 367, 378, 379.
—Light and darkness—378.
*Live force*—See *Vis viva.*
*Logic*:
—Science of thought is a science of the historical development of human thought—58-59.
—Theory of the laws of thought is by no means an "eternal truth" established once and for all, as philistine reasoning imagines to be the case with the word "logic"—59.
—Pure theory of thought as content of philosophy—279.
—Formal logic—59, 296.
—Formal logic is not nonsense—319.
—Ordinary logic—295.
—Dialectical logic—296.
—Old and new logic on induction—301.
—All logic develops from progressing contradictions—271.
—Rigid categories represent as it were lower mathematics of logic, its everyday weapons—272-73.

M

*Magnetism*— 40, 44, 102, 104, 150, 155, 161, 162, 227, 264, 280, 283, 306, 307, 370, 371.
—Electricity and magnetism—a twin pair like heat and light—147.
See also *Electricity.*
*Magnetic poles*—96, 287-88, 384.
*Magnitude*:
—Mathematics as science of magnitudes—340.
—Variable magnitude, as the turning point in mathematics—341.
—Imaginary magnitudes—81.
—Prototypes of mathematical magnitudes in nature—352-60.
—Negative magnitudes of algebra are real only in so far as they are connected with positive magnitudes—348.
*Malthusianism*—403.
*Man*:
—as the sole animal capable of working his way out of the merely animal state—262.
—In man nature attains consciousness of itself—46.
—Man becomes distinct from the ape—47, 234.
—Part played by labour in the transition from ape to man—228-46.
—as the most social of all animals—231.
—Men make their history themselves—48.
—Man and mastery of nature—241-42.

—Unity of man and nature—242-43.

*Mass*:

—Mass consists solely of molecules, but it is something essentially different from the molecule—86.

—Mechanics of terrestrial masses—92.

—Terrestrial masses, bodies with which mechanics operates, consist of molecules—354.

—Ether atoms, chemical atoms, masses, heavenly bodies are discrete parts at various stages—386.

—Heavenly and terrestrial masses—86.

—Motion of masses—104, 132, 146, 338, 376.

*Materialism*:

—Materialist outlook on nature means nothing more than the simple conception of nature just as it is, without alien addition—266.

—Primitive spontaneous materialism of ancient Greeks—250-52, 266-67.

—French materialism of 18th century—30, 36, 270, 277, 290, 330, 336, 338, 352.

—Materialism of Owenites—70.

—Vulgar materialism of Büchner, Vogt and Moleschott—60, 61, 262, 270, 273.

—Feuerbach and materialism—263, 268.

—Hæckel and materialism—276-77.

—Materialists on God—268.

—Socialist materialists go further than natural scientists—64.

*Mathematics*:

—Origin out of practical needs—247.

—as science of magnitudes—340.

—as abstract science dealing with creations of thought which are reflections of reality—285.

—Lower and higher mathematics—271.

—Turning point in history of mathematics—341.

—Dialectics in mathematics—271-72, 285, 340-60.

—Axioms in mathematics—340, 353.

—Prototypes of mathematical infinite in the real world—352-60.

—Application of mathematics in other sciences—360.

*Matter*:

—Subject-matter of natural science is matter in motion—329.

—Matter and its inherent motion is *causa finalis*—322, 336.

—Matter is unthinkable without motion—93.

—Sense in which matter as such is an abstraction and sense

in which it is no abstraction —322, 337.
—Primordial matter—322.
—Transformations of motion are inherent in moving matter—52.
—Eternal cycle of matter in motion as the ultimate conclusion of science—40.
—Nothing is eternal but eternally changing, eternally moving matter and the laws according to which it moves and changes—54.
—Matter as unity of attraction and repulsion—95, 323, 324.
—Divisibility of matter—324.
—Discrete and continuous matter—360.
—Various qualitative forms of existence of matter in general—386.
—Matter is nothing but the totality of material things from which this concept is abstracted—312.
—Knowledge of matter as such —307, 312-13.
—Theory of absolute qualitative identity of matter—335.
—Notion of a chemically uniform matter—385.
—Matter divided up into a series of big groups—358.
—It is the nature of matter to advance to the evolution of thinking beings—54, 262, 278.
—Senseless idealistic idea of an absolute contradiction between mind and matter —243.

*Measure*:
—Hegel on measure—342.
—Two measures of motion—116-36.

*Mechanical motion*:
—The first, simplest form of motion is the mechanical form, pure change of place—329.
—All motion is bound up with some change of place; the higher the form of motion, the smaller this change of place; it in no way exhausts the nature of the motion concerned, but it is inseparable from the motion—93.
—Transformation of mechanical motion into heat and *vice versa*—145-50, 327, 338, 368.
—Two measures of mechanical motion—132-36.

*Mechanics*:
—as science of heavenly and terrestrial masses—86.
—as theory of simplest change of place—92.
—Terrestrial mechanics—28, 101, 314, 332.
—Terrestrial pure mechanics—99.
—Celestial mechanics—332.
—Celestial mechanics now resolved into a process—27.

—Mechanics of terrestrial and heavenly bodies as the most fundamental natural science—33.
—In mechanics no qualities occur—86.
—Mechanics knows only quantities—333-34.
—Origin and evolution of mechanics—92, 247.
—Mathematical mechanics—115, 119.
—Theoretical mechanics—136.

*Mechanism*:
—Mechanism applied to life is a helpless category—277.
—Mechanism does not get away from abstract necessity, and hence not from chance either—277-78.
—Mechanical determinism—292.
—Mechanical materialism—330, 336.
—In accordance with prevailing mechanical view, qualitative differences are explained only in so far as they can be reduced to quantitative differences—309.
—The craze to reduce everything to mechanical motion obliterates the specific character of the other forms of motion—328.
—Reduction of chemical processes to merely mechanical ones is inadmissible—333.
—"Mechanical" conception explains all change from change of place, all qualitative differences from quantitative ones—335.
—Untenability of "mechanical" conception of nature—332-38.
—Overcoming of mechanical one-sidedness of the 18th century—263.

*Mesmerism*—69.

*Metabolism*—396,397.

*Metaphysics*:
—as science of things, not of movements—274.
—as tendency in philosophy—270, 271.
—as mode of thought among natural scientists—97, 201, 271-72, 279, 284, 309-10.
—Newtonian attraction and centrifugal force—as example of metaphysical thinking—361.
—If in regard to the Greeks metaphysics was right in particulars, in regard to metaphysics the Greeks were right in general—62-63.
—Metaphysics of the 17th and 18th centuries—62.
—Metaphysical character of the materialism of the 18th century—352.
—Barrenness of thought of Wolffian metaphysics—292.
—Metaphysical categories retain their validity for everyday use—272-73, 282, 286.
—"Physics, beware of metaphysics!"—37, 279.

*Method*:
—Elementary methods recognized by ordinary logic—295.
—Comparative method—41, 43, 262.
—Dialectics as the sole method of thought appropriate in the highest degree to the present stage in the outlook on nature—282.
—Dialectical method—65.
—Old methods become a hindrance—385.
—Bacon's empirical, inductive method—68.
*Molecule*:
—as a combination of atoms —324.
—Molecule is qualitatively different from the mass of the body to which it belongs—86.
—We do not know whether physical and chemical molecules are identical or different —324.
—Molecule is decomposed into its separate atoms, which have quite different properties from those of the molecule —85-86.
—not observable under the microscope—272.
—Molecular motion is subject-matter of physics—146.
—Molecular theory marks new epoch in physics—385.
*Momentum*—See *Motion, quantity of*.
*Monera*—389, 396, 398.
*Monism*—277, 333.
*Motion*:
—as the mode of existence of matter—92, 325, 337.
—Motion as applied to matter, is change in general—328.
—Uncreatability and indestructibility of motion—93,325.
—Nothing remains as absolutely universally valid except motion—317.
—Motion and equilibrium—326-27.
—Attraction and repulsion as basic forms of motion—95-96, 104.
—Conversion of motion from one form into another—104, 263, 306-07, 327-30, 369.
—Indestructibility of motion cannot be merely quantitative, it must also be conceived qualitatively—51.
—Transference of motion—370, 373, 374.
—Forms of motion and classification of sciences—330-35.
—Motion is not merely change of place, in fields higher than mechanics it is also change of quality—334.
—Higher, main, and subsidiary forms of motion—328.
—Investigation of the nature of motion had to start from its lowest, simplest forms—92.

—Motion as such is nothing but the totality of all sensuously perceptible forms of motion—312.

—One-sided conception of motion among natural scientists—328.

See also *Mechanical motion.*

*Motion*, amount of (in the sense of energy) (Bewegungsmenge)—85, 95, 99, 105, 122, 128, 227.

*Motion*, quantity of (in the sense of momentum) (Bewegungsgrösse)—117, 120-23.

*Multiplicity of worlds*—53.

*Mutability*:

—Theory of mutability of species—39.

N

*Natural philosophy*—See *Philosophy of nature.*

*Natural science*:

—Natural science revolutionary at the outset, and the later conception of an out-and-out conservative nature—35, 261.

—Transformation from an empirical into a theoretical science—263.

—Theoretical natural science as far as possible builds up its outlook on nature into a harmonious whole—50.

—History of natural science—29-43, 247-68.

—Natural science and philosophy—58-82, 270-79.

—Natural science and the socialist organization of society—49.

—In natural science inter-connections are to be discovered in facts—64-65.

*Natural selection*—69, 80, 336-37, 403.

*Nature*:

—Unity of nature and mind—294.

—Anti-natural idea of a contradiction between man and nature—243.

—Nature as historical process—314.

—moving in eternal flux and cyclical course—43.

—Dialectics prevails throughout nature—280.

—Whole of nature accessible to us forms a system, an interconnected totality of bodies—93.

—as a system of inter-connections and processes—266.

—In nature nothing takes place in isolation—239.

—Not only nature reacts on man, man also reacts on nature, changing it and creating new conditions of existence for himself—306.

—Animal merely uses external nature, man masters it—241.

—All our mastery of nature consists in the fact that we are able to know and correctly apply its laws—242.

*Nebulæ*—38, 44, 54, 97-98, 113-14, 316, 322, 365-67.

*Necessity*:
- —Empiricism of observation alone can never prove necessity—304.
- —Mechanism does not get away from abstract necessity, and hence not from chance either—277-78.
- —Two metaphysical conceptions about mutual relation of necessity and chance—288-92.
- —Hegel on necessity and chance—292.
- —Inner necessity—293.
- —Inner connection between necessity and chance—402.
- —Necessity is also inherent in chance—52.

*Negation*—294, 347, 387.
- —Progress in history makes its appearance as negation of existing state of things—281.

See also *Law of negation of negation*.

*Neo-Kantianism*—61, 63, 109.

*Nervous system*—46, 240, 302, 406.

*Nodal points* (where quantitative change is transformed into qualitative)—87, 376, 386.

*Nothing*—294, 346.

*Number*—340-48, 354.
- —Pythagoras on number—252, 338.

O

*Old and new*—286.
- —Old traditions as a hindrance for science—39, 185-86, 214.

*Optics*:
- —Its exceptional progress due to practical needs of astronomy—33.

*Opposites*:
- —Mutual penetration of polar opposites and transformation into each other when driven to extremes—27.
- —Motion through opposites—280.
- —Conflict of opposites—280.
- —Character of mutual opposites belonging to theoretical development—377.
- —All logic develops only from progressing contradictions—271.
- —Character of mutual opposites belonging to the thought determinations of reason—283.
- —Dialectics reconciles the opposites—282.
- —Dialectical nature of polar opposites—97.
- —Qualitative opposition in mathematics—342.

See also *Law of mutual penetration of opposites, Polarity, Pole*.

*Organic nature*:
—No unbridgeable gulf between inorganic and organic nature—41, 42.
—History of the earth as a pre-condition for organic nature—330.
—Part and whole are categories inadequate in organic nature—283.
—Abstract identity inapplicable in organic nature—284.
—Category of force is completely inadequate in organic nature—372.
—Whole of organic nature is one continuous proof of identity or inseparability of form and content—401.
*Organism*:
—as higher unity of mechanics, physics, and chemistry—331, 332.
—Form of motion in the organic body is different from mechanical, physical, or chemical form, and contains them all sublated in itself—372.
—Organism is neither simple nor compound, however complex it may be—284.
—Organic body cannot be treated as something simply identical with itself—284.
—Organic body has an independent power of reaction—387.
—Formless, undifferentiated organisms—397.
—Lower organisms—*Protista, Fungi, Infusoria*—388.
—Organisms of which it is not possible to say whether they belong to the plant or animal kingdom—42.
—Organisms as living unity of motion and equilibrium—327.
—All multi-cellular organisms grow out of a single cell—265.
—Theory of descent of organisms—42.
—Organic forms corresponding to the various geological periods—402.
—Unicellular organisms—389, 398, 400, 407.

P

*Palæontology*—34, 41, 249, 261, 263, 274, 293, 295.
*Part*—See *Whole*.
*Particular, particularity*—275, 296-300, 310.
*Periodic system of elements*—90-91, 335.
*Philosophy*:
—takes its revenge posthumously on natural science for the latter having deserted it—273.
—Natural scientists are semi-initiates in the sphere of theory, in the sphere of what hitherto was called philosophy—58.

—Study of philosophy necessary for developing capacity for theoretical thinking—58.
—Theoreticians in the field of natural science must acquaint themselves with dialectical philosophy in its historically existing forms—62.
—Two philosophical tendencies—271.
—Successes achieved by philosophy in natural science—273.
—The philosopher has been confirmed by the natural scientist—325.
—Nonsense arisen from dualism between natural science and philosophy—275.
—Those who abuse philosophy are slaves to the worst vulgarized relics of the worst philosophies—279.
—Natural scientists may adopt whatever attitude they please, they are still under the domination of philosophy—279.
—Only when natural and historical science has become imbued with dialectics will all philosophical rubbish—other than the pure theory of thought—be superfluous—279.
—Vulgar philosophy—335.

*Philosophy of nature*—37, 64, 65, 68, 80, 152-53, 276, 359, 363.
—Brilliant natural-philosophical intuitions of antiquity—29.

*Phlogiston*—phlogistic theory —33-34, 66-67.

*Physics*:
—as mechanics of molecules—86, 92, 146, 333, 338, 384.
—Physical forms of motion—45.
—Geocentric character of our physics—314-17.
—Separation of physics from chemistry—249.
—Mighty advances in physics summed up in 1842 by Mayer, Joule and Grove—40.
—New epoch in physics—385.
—Physics and metaphysics—37, 279.

*Physiology*:
—Physiology is physics and especially chemistry of living bodies but with that it ceases to be specially chemistry—339.
—The further physiology develops, the more important for it becomes consideration of difference within identity—284.
—Physiology considers death as an essential element of life —387.

*Plant*:
—Origin of first plants—46, 399.
—Unicellular plants—400.
—Changed by the hand of man —239-40.

*Polarity, polarization*—102, 208, 277, 280, 283, 287, 288, 300-01.
—Dialectical nature of polar opposites—96-97.

*Pole*—96, 102, 271, 286, 287.
—All polar opposites are determined by mutual reaction of two opposite poles—96.
See also *Magnetic poles.*
*Political economy (economics)*—28, 136, 407, 408.
—Classical political economy as social science of the bourgeoisie—245.
*Positive and negative*—106, 280, 283, 287, 295, 323.
—Transformation of positive into negative—287-88.
*Practice, practical activity of man*—33, 149, 247-49, 256-57, 305-06.
*Production*:
—Production raised men from the animal to the human state, it forms material foundation of all their other activities—48.
—Production among animals—47, 406.
—Natural and social consequences of productive activities of men—241-46.
—Only conscious organization of social production can lift mankind above the rest of the animal world as regards the social aspect, as production in general has done this for mankind in the specifically biological aspect—49.
—Advances in natural science and production—242-43.
—Origin and development of sciences determined by production—247-49.
—Production and struggle for existence—405.
*Protein*:
—Protein, the exclusive independent bearer of life, arises under definite conditions determined by the whole inter-connection of nature, but arises precisely as the product of a chemical process—267-68.
—As soon as the composition of the protein bodies becomes known, chemistry will be able to set about the preparation of living protein—266.
—as the most essential vehicle of cell-formation—389.
—as the most unstable carbon compound known to us—394-95.
—Conditions for the existence of protein are infinitely more complicated than those of any other known carbon compound—395.
—Formation of the cell nucleus as a polarization of the living protein material—280.
—Completely structureless protein exercises all essential functions of life—46, 389.
—If chemistry succeeds in preparing protein, the dialectical transition will have been proved in reality—339.

*Protista*—43, 46, 388, 392, 398-401.
*Protoplasm*—42, 45, 265, 275, 339.
*Purpose*:
—Purpose and result of human activities—48, 49, 241.
—Inner purpose in Kant and Hegel—277.
—Inner purpose is itself an ideological determination—278.
See also *Causae finales* and *Teleology*.
*Pythagoreans*—252, 253.

Q

*Quality*:
—Qualities do not exist but only things with qualities—308.
—Various qualitative modes of existence of matter in general—386.
—Every quality has infinitely many quantitative gradations—308.
—For a metaphysician quality and quantity are absolutely distinct categories—309-10.
—No qualities in mechanics—86.
—Qualitative changes whose dependence on quantitative change is not proved—334.
—Relation of quality and quantity is reciprocal—335.
—Indestructibility of motion cannot be merely quantitative, it must also be conceived qualitatively—51.
See also *Law of transformation of quantity into quality and vice versa.*
*Quantity*:
—Even such simple relations as those of mere abstract quantity assumed a completely dialectical form—271-72.
—Number is the purest quantitative determination but it is chock-full of qualitative differences—342.
See also *Law of transformation of quantity into quality and vice versa.*

R

*Reason*:
—Reason cannot be contrary to nature—294.
—In the measure that man has learned to change nature his intelligence has increased—306.
See also *Understanding*.
*Reciprocal action, Interaction*:
—as the first thing that we encounter when we consider matter in motion as a whole—306.
—Mutual interaction of the motion of the universe—239, 337.
—Mutual reaction of bodies constitutes motion—93.
—Interaction of bodies in non-living nature and interaction of living bodies—404.

—Reciprocal action of quantity and quality—335.
—Interaction of attraction and repulsion—95-100.
—Interaction between chemism and electricity—224.
—Reciprocal action excludes any absolute primary or absolute secondary—224.
—Interaction between identity and difference—286.
—Reciprocal action, according to Hegel—307, 322, 406.
*Reduction*:
—Impossible to reduce everything to mechanical motion —328.
—Reduction of chemical processes to merely mechanical ones unduly restricts the field of chemistry—333.
*Reflection*:
—Sciences as reflection of various forms of motion—331.
—Dialectics of the mind is only reflection of the forms of motion of the real world, both of nature and history—271.
—Subjective dialectics is only the reflex of the motion through opposites which asserts itself everywhere in nature—280.
—Mathematical abstractions as reflections of reality—285.
—Prototypes of mathematical concepts in the real world—352-59.
See also *Religion*.
*Religion*:
—as a fantastic reflection of human things in the human mind—238.
—Natural scientists and religion—32-33, 260, 268-69.
See also *Reflection*.
*Repulsion*:
—Attraction and repulsion as basic forms of motion—95-114.
—Attraction and repulsion as essence of matter—323.
—Repulsive motion or so-called energy—114.
—Attraction and repulsion not to be regarded as "forces"—95.
—Category of repulsion as applied in physics—372.
—as the active aspect of motion—376.
—Mechanical repulsion—327.
—Repulsion of masses transformed into molecular repulsion—102.
—Chemical repulsion—280.
—Electro-dynamic repulsion—161-62.
—Heat as a form of repulsion—101.
—Transformation of attraction into repulsion and *vice versa*—323.
*Rest* (relative)—326-27.
*Revolution*:
—of 1848—60, 263.
—inevitability of socialist revolution—49, 244, 405.

—revolution in the epoch of Renaissance—29-30, 259-60.
—Bourgeois religious revolution—256-57.
*Rotation*:
—Simple rotation—362.
—Rotation necessary for all bodies suspended in universal space—362.
—Hypotheses of origin of rotation—97-98.
—Earth s rotation and tidal friction—38, 137-44, 367.

S

*Scepticism*: 305, 320.
—Sceptical attitude of one-sided empiricism towards results of contemporary thought—186.
*Science*:
—Just as one form of motion develops out of another, so their reflections, the various sciences, must arise necessarily out of one another—331.
—Every science is historical science—58-59.
—Science and production—247-49.
See also *Classification of sciences*.
*Simple and compound*—283-84.
*Socialism*—273.
—Socialist revolution—244,405.
—Socialist organization of society—49.
*Society*:
—Labour marks characteristic difference between band of monkeys and human society—235.
—Impermissibility of transferring laws of life of animal societies to human society—404-05.
*Space*:
—as form of existence of matter—312.
—Infinity of space—314, 354.
—Notion of the absolutely empty universal space—377.
—"Fourth dimension" of space—78-80.
*Species in biology*—284, 286, 289, 293, 302, 388.
—of plants and animals, according to Linnaeus—34-35.
—C. F. Wolff launched the first attack on the fixity of species—42.
*Spiritualism*—68-82.
*Spontaneous generation* (*generatio aequivoca*)—388-89.
*Steam-engine*—47, 130, 148-49, 164, 206-07, 226, 244, 303-04, 408.
*Straight and curved*—350-51.
*Struggle for existence*—49, 273, 402-05.
*Substance*—295, 307.
*Synthesis*:
—Analysis and synthesis—295, 302.
—Synthesis among animals—295.

T

*Teleology*—36, 262, 277, 278, 336.
*Theology*—32, 35, 185, 186, 290.
*Theory*:
—Theory and empiricism—276.
—Contempt of theory is the most certain way to think incorrectly—81.
—Natural scientists today are semi-initiates in the sphere of theory—58.
—A nation that wants to climb the pinnacles of science cannot possibly manage without theoretical thought—60-61.
—Harmfulness of false theories—150, 304.
*Thing-in-itself*—61, 319, 320.
*Thinking, thought*:
—as form of motion—92.
—as reflex of nature—280.
—Problem of "reducing" thought to molecular and chemical motions in the brain—328.
—Thinking and being—352, 360.
—Laws of thought and laws of nature—83, 297, 299, 352, 353.
—In every epoch, theoretical thought is a historical product, which at different times assumes very different forms and, therewith, very different contents—58.
—Analogy between evolution of concepts in the history of thought and their evolution in the mind of the individual dialectician—295.
—Pre-history of human thought—265.
—Thought among men and animals—295-96.
—Dialectical thought only possible for man—296.
—Alteration of nature by men, activity of human beings, is the most essential and immediate basis of human thought—306.
—Infinity of thought which knows the absolute is composed of an infinite number of finite human minds—311.
—Repugnance to thinking among natural scientists—37.
—Natural-scientific thought—275.
—Shallowness of thought—307-08.
—Forms of motion of thought—296-97.
—Investigation of forms of thought is a very profitable and necessary task—318.
—Men became accustomed to explain their actions from their thoughts, instead of from their needs—238.
—Just as electricity, magnetism, etc., become polarized and move in opposites, so do thoughts—283.

*Tidal friction*—28, 38, 63-64, 137-44, 367.

*Time*:

—as form of existence of matter—312.

Filled time—314.

*Tool*:

—implies specific human activity—47.

—Labour begins with the making of tools—236.

—Hunting and fishing implements as most ancient tools—236.

—Invention of tools—147.

—Tools among animals—406.

*Trigonometry*—348, 351.

U

*Understanding*:

—Understanding and reason—295.

—Thought determinations of reason—283.

*Unicellular organisms* — See *Organisms*.

*Unity*:

—Unity of thought and being—352.

—Unity of nature and mind—294.

*Unity* (quantitative)—343-45, 348.

—Unity and plurality—343.

*Universality*:

—Form of universality is the form of self-completeness, hence of infinity—310.

—Form of universality in nature is law—310.

—Individual, particular, universal—296-300, 301, 310.

*Universe*—314, 325, 337.

V

*Vertebrates*—46, 301, 302-03, 397, 401, 406.

*Vis viva*—105, 117, 119, 120, 122-24, 126-28, 130, 134, 135-36, 183-84, 185.

*Vital force*—372, 391.

*Vortex motion*—159.

W

*Whole*:

—Progress from an understanding of the part to an understanding of the whole—62.

—Among the Greeks, nature was viewed as a whole—62.

—Whole and part—283.

*Work*:

—as change of form of motion regarded in its quantitative aspect—132.

—Inadmissibility of application of "work" in the physical sense to economic conditions of labour—136.

—Physiological work—407-08.

Z

*Zero*—345-47.

—Zero powers—347-48.

*Zoology*—34, 42, 247, 248, 249, 293.

# ERRATA

| | Reads: | Should read: |
|---|---|---|
| p. 124<br>line 7<br>from top | $\frac{mv^2}{2} = a$ | $\frac{mv^2}{2} - a$ |
| p. 249<br>line 1<br>from bottom | an the element | an element |
| p. 329<br>line 2<br>from bottom | simpele | simple |
| p. 358<br>line 5<br>from top | $dx$ | $d^4x$ |
| p. 393<br>line 13<br>from top | Quenstadt | Quenstedt |

Зак. 1256

MAHATMA GANDHI MEMORIAL LIBRARY
5, Kumara Park (East), Bangalore-1

DATE LABLE

CL. No. A N54 Accn. No. 000866

This book ought to be returned on or before the date last marked below, or fines will be incurred.

| Due Date | Ticket No. | Inls. | Due Date | Ticket No. | Inls. |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| | | | | | |
| | | | | | |
| | | | | | |
| | | | | | |
| | | | | | |
| | | | | | |
| | | | | | |
| | | | | | |
| | | | | | |
| | | | | | |
| | | | | | |
| | | | | | |
| | | | | | |

GANDHI SMARAKA GRANTHALAYA
DATE........................
ACC. No........................
CALL No........................
BANGALORE-1.

A
N54
000866